



# Forever & Always

## PROLOGUE

### At The Hospital

Theresa placed her small hand on her father's as he looked at her with tears in his eyes.

He ran his knuckles on her cheek and wiped a lone tear that fell down her cheek.

Theresa let out a sad smile with the oxygen tube connected to her nose.

A nurse walked inside the room with her tray.

Nurse:Morning Tessa.

Theresa:Morning.

With her usual preppy voice and the kind nurse smiled. They didn't know how long they were going to keep her here in the pediatric ward.

Ra Theresa: Still nothing?

Nurse: There is still nothing, for now the machines will sustain her.

He sighed and held Tessa's hands, rubbing it in a calm motion, soothing her feelings and his unawares.

Theresa's mother walked in holding the toddler's hand. At first they did the IVF for a baby to be a match so that Tessa can live but slowly they grew attached to the baby and they could tell Tessa adored her little sister so they couldn't just kill another child to save another, their morals also wouldn't allow that to happen

Little Tia let go of her mother's hand and half ran to Tessa's bedside.

Tia:Tessa..

Tessa giggled as she tried to sit upright.

Theresa:Hey Tia. Mom how is the dog?

Ma Theresa:It lives outside now(laughing)

Tessa pouted while Tia tried to climb the bed and sit next to her sister.

Ma Theresa:How are you feeling today?

Theresa:Mom I'm tired.

Ma Theresa:We all are. You are on the list and hopefully I hope a miracle happens.

Theresa:I hope so too..

The nurse did the usual routine, it always touched her heart to see how supportive

Tessa's family was. They were always here for her and she was just a ten year old suffering from a heart disease she had no control over but she always managed to smile regardless of how hopeless her situation was.

Nurse:I'm done, I didn't make you uncomfortable right?

Theresa:You never make me uncomfortable. I didn't even feel a thing!

Ra Tessa chuckled as the nurse said her goodbyes and walked out of the room.

Theresa:So mommy what are we doing for my 11th birthday?

She asked innocently looking at both of her parents. She wasn't sure she was going to hold till she was eleven but it was worth a try. She

always prayed before sleeping and in the morning so she was sure God will grant her an extra year. The children's Bible always said that Jesus loves children..

She grinned.

Theresa:Mooom!

Ma Theresa:Don't worry about it.

Tessa felt the underlying fear in her voice and her father was silent. She didn't want them to worry. Tia just touched Tessa's cheeks and Tessa held her hands.

Theresa:Bathong Tia!

And just like that their normal routine had started. In and out of the hospital everyday.

Meanwhile Dr Reginah was making her rounds and she checked the time.

Dr Reginah:Flip!

Her pink stilettos clicked along the hall to her office as she picked her bag and car keys. She didn't have to do this but they lived in the same neighborhood and she was sure he bunked school.

She shook her head, such a problem child. Even his mother was at her wits end and to believe she moved in 3 months ago.

Somewhere along the road

Hayden released the smoke in the air as Justin Bieber's Lonely blasted in his headphones. He checked the time, he was sure he was going to ace that test. Or not.

He took another deep puff and kept on walking letting the music hit places he normally didn't acknowledge existed as the smoke escaped through his nostrils.

What if you had it all  
But nobody to call  
Maybe then you'd know me  
Cause I've had everything  
But nobody's listening  
But that's so fuckin lonely



I'm so lonely

With his head down and hands deep in the pockets he walked next to the road.

A car stopped by the road and he looked up, pausing his music and taking the headphones off letting them hang around his neck.

Reginah rolled down her windows.

Reginah: Get in.

Hayden: Pretty doctor..

He had a deep voice for a boy his age.

Reginah: Akere you're heading home?

He chuckled and threw the stub on the ground crushing it with the sole of his school shoe.

Reginah shook her head. She still didn't understand this kid.

Reginah:Hop in...

Hayden:I'm not going home..

Reginah:Who said anything about going home?

He shrugged and made his way to the car. The strong smell of weed hit Reginah right in the face as Hayden got inside the car.

She just couldn't understand why he was destroying his future like this. He literally had everything other kids dreamed of and he was wasting it.

Hayden:Don't ask.

She raised her hands in surrender.

Reginah:I never said anything..

Hayden:Just not home..

Reginah:Waitse wa ntlwaela Hayden..

He leaned back and bit his lower lip and removed his hoodie.

Hayden:You offered pretty doctor.

Reginah:I have a name..

Hayden:Which I don't like using. Don't tell my mother or else she'll be on my case.

Reginah:She cares.

He tsked and Reginah joined the main road. She rolled down the windows to let the fresh air inside the car, the smell of weed was suffocating her.

Regianh:You're trying to kill yourself with this much weed?

Hayden:Want me to roll you a blunt sugar?

Reginah didn't want to smile but she did and Hayden looked out the window.

Reginah:You still haven't decided on what you'll do after your IGCSE exams?

Hayden:I live in the now..

Reginah:You're one of a kind..

Hayden:I know buttercup.

He smirked as she tried to hide her blush. He liked her even though she was older, when have stereotypes stopped him before?

Reginah:Stop it Hayden..

Hayden:Stop what? Keep your eyes on the road, don't kill us not that I wouldn't mind going to hell with you..

Reginah:Me? Hell? Never.

Hayden:We're all sinners sugar, keep telling

yourself that.

Reginah:Whatever you believe in Hayden..

She silently drove around, she adjusted the mirror while stealing looks at Hayden whose mind was aloof. He looked like he was fighting inner demons and maybe that drew her to him.

Hayden licked his lips and glanced to his side catching Reginah off guard.

Reginah:I'm like a sister to you..

Hayden:Do you want me to hit on you pretty doctor? Cause I'm game..

Reginah:What? Stop it!

Hayden guffawed in turn making Reginah smile.

Hayden:I like you a lot.

Reginah:As a sister.

Hayden raised his eyebrow.

Hayden:You like me don't you?

Reginah:Fotshek Hayden...

Hayden:Calm down little miss..

Reginah:I'm older than you kana..

Hayden:Who said anything about age?(laughing)

Reginah shook her head yet again as she finally stopped the car and parked at an isolated area.

Hayden stepped out of the car leaving Reginah in the car. He started rolling a blunt before he searched his grey slacks for a lighter.

Reginah silently watched him smoke and she had more questions than answers. She didn't

understand who Hayden Smith was but she was yet to find out.

SHARE, COMMENT AND TAG EVERYONE YOU KNOW.

Make sure the bus doesn't leave without you, see you on Friday.

Forever&Always

\*01\*

At the isolated location

Hayden puffed one last time before thrwoing the blunt on the gravel road and stepping on it.

He let out a naughty smile when he noticed that Reginah was looking at him. She liked him too, he could tell.

Hayden:I'm done smoking..

Reginah:You'll die young..

Hayden:I still don't have a problem with that...

Reginah sighed. He gave zero fucks about everything and still she wondered what happened for him to be that way.

She stepped out of the car and made her way to him. Hayden quietly observed her, looking at her long legs in that tight pencil skirt and those pink heels. She had beautiful legs and if he could hit it only once or twice maybe thrice he would be satisfied.

Reginah blushed under his scrupulous gaze and



he chuckled to himself. She was beautiful, he had to admit that.

Reginah stood next to him as he balanced himself with the car bonnet.

Reginah:Can you drive?

Hayden:Yes pretty lady.

Reginah:Stop it..

Hayden:I didn't do anything sugar...

Reginah tucked her hair behind her ear exposing her double ear piercing. Hayden noticed the piercing and frowned before smiling.

Hayden:You grew some balls..

She hit his chest.

Reginah:Wa ntlwaela Hayden wa itse..

Hayden:What's next? A nipple piercing? I would

love to see that..

Reginah:Mxm..you should be studying for your exams right now.

Hayden:Are we still talking about me?

Reginah:When are you ever going to be serious?

He chuckled and stuffed his hands in his hoodie pockets.

Hayden:The day I believe Jesus is going to come for his people.

Reginah:That will be the end..

Hayden:Can't believe you believe in that but yet again we believe hell exists so why not believe in heaven?

Reginah:True.

Hayden:But what if..what if souls don't actually go to either but wonder the earth?

Reginah:Never looked at it that way because it's either heaven or hell..

Hayden:Still waiting for one person to prove that neither exists and you can live however you want without feeling guilty that this will take my soul to the devil or to "God"

Reginah:Not very religious are you?

Hayden:Nope.

Reginah:Your mother has her hands full..

Hayden:Do you have family?

Reginah:I wouldn't exactly say that, I was raised by my grandmother who is late.

Hayden:My condolences.

Reginah:It's fine, I'm okay.

Hayden:I can tell from your tone that you loved her.

Reginah:Don't you love your mother?

Hayden:Let's not talk about me. We're talking about you here.

Reginah:Why do you always have to shift the focus?

Hayden:Why are you denying your feelings for me?

Reginah:What feelings?(innocently)

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:We still have time..

Reginah:Time for what?

Hayden:I don't have to spell it out for you, as you always say "o motona mo go nna"(you're older than me)

Reginah rolled her eyes. His sarcasm.

Hayden:Are you rolling your eyes at me?

Reginah:This child...

Hayden laughed.

Hayden:Okay. Okay. (Raising his hands in surrender)do you pretty lady.

Reginah looked down for a few minutes before lifting her head to find Hayden still looking at her. She knew that look and as much as she had tried to make boundaries he didn't care.

Reginah:Ng ng...Hayden...

Hayden:You're beautiful you know that.

Reginah:Hayden!

Hayden:Just saying.

Reginah:I'm supposed to be like a sister to you. An older sister as a matter of fact.

Hayden:Are you trying to convince me or yourself because I'm definitely not convinced.

Reginah:this is wrong on so many levels.

Hayden:Ah. You see...

Reginah:What are you playing at?

Hayden:Nothing pretty doctor...

He slid his phone out and checked the time. He still had more than five hours to go. He put it back.

Hayden:So?

Reginah:So nothing Hayden. You should be at school studying for your exams. You're not even done..

Hayden shrugged and looked at Reginah smirking.

Hayden:Anyway it's your choice.

Reginah sucked in a deep breath and looked at him.

Reginah:I think we should go, I need to rest before my late night shift.

Hayden:Sure doc...

He moved away from the car but he paused.

Hayden:Borrow me your car keys.

Reginah:You're not driving my car.

Hayden:Trust me I won't cause an accident.

She reluctantly took out her car keys and gave them to him.

Reginah:Be careful...it's my first car.

Hayden:Got it.

He unlocked the car and opened the door for her.

Hayden:After you buttercup..

Reginah:Thanks.

He walked to the driver's seat and got inside.  
He fixed the rearview mirror before starting the  
car...

Reginah:Wait...

He turned to look at her.

Reginah:You're high, you just smoked weed.

Hayden:I'm not high at least not yet...

He took out his cellphone and connected it to  
the car wifi.

Reginah rolled her eyes with a smile. This was  
wrong on so many levels, she shut her eyes  
trying not to think about it.



Hayden just played Pop Smoke's Element as he buckled up and joined the main road.

## At The Hospital

The nurse walked inside Tessa's room. Tessa looked up as she closed her Nancy Drew novel.

Tessa:Another check?

She asked with a sunny smile that made the nurse smile.

Nurse:Yes.

Tessa:Okay.

She opened the book and resumed her reading. She paused and looked at the nurse.

Tessa:Can I ask a question?

Nurse:Of course.

Tessa:How does it feel to have a new heart?

Nurse:I wasn't expecting that question.

Tessa just smiled placing her hands on her lap.

Nurse:There are not a lot of heart transplants that go on but some people say different.

Tessa:oh! Is the list for the heart transplants that long?

Nurse:You know a lot of things for a girl your age.

Tessa:I just observe and listen attentively that's all.

Nurse:You're a smart young girl. What do you want to be when you grow up?

Tessa:I want to be a writer..

She placed her finger on her chin.

Tessa: If that fails which I'm sure it won't though I want to be a...uh..what is it again? Uhm I'll think of something.

Nurse: I'm sure you will (laughing) I'm done.

Tessa: Thank you.

Nurse: Welcome. Do you want food?

Tessa: Yes please!

On the road

Hayden stole a glance at Reginah before he swerved the car. She had her eyes closed. He had a lot of time on his hands too.

Reginah opened her eyes when she could feel that the car was no longer moving. Her tongue darted out to moisten her slightly dry lips.

She turned to look at Hayden.

Reginah:Where are we?

Hayden:I don't know..

She cocked an eyebrow.

Reginah:You know. Bring the keys, nna ke go sia gone ha o tla ipona.(I'm leaving you here, you'll see what to do)

Hayden:You're angry?

Reginah:I need to rest I have a late night shift motho ke wena..

Hayden:And I have a math exam tomorrow.

Reginah rolled her eyea.

Reginah:As if you care about you exams.

Hayden:You are right though, I don't care.

Reginah:So start the car or bring the car keys.

Hayden just put the car keys in his hoodie pockets.

Reginah sighed.

Reginah:What are to trying to do mr?

Hayden shrugged as he removed his seatbelt.  
Reginah looked at him and he was so nonchalant.

30 minutes of silence passed and Reginah sighed. She turned to look at Hayden.

Reginah:Whatever game you're playing it's not funny.

Hayden:I'm not the one to play games  
buttercup..

She ran her hand through her hair and looked at

Hayden. She didn't even know where they were because she didn't know Francistown that well, she literally moved here three months ago and has known Hayden for two since they were neighbours.

She licked her lips again and leaned back. She opened her bag and took out her lipgloss to at least add moisture to her lips, the licking was just drying them out more.

Hayden silently watched her and how her lips looked much more fuller.

Hayden:Let me try something.

Reginah:What?

He turned to her and held her chin.

Reginah:Ng ng...

She said looking into his eyes. Somehow she

could read him before he sealed that and she just saw what he wanted her to see.

He brought his mouth to her and kissed her softly with his almost pinkish lips.

Reginah tried to break the kiss, regardless of how good it was but he he used his other hand to hold the back of her neck deepening the kiss.

.

.

\*

\*

LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT PLEASE!!

Forever&Always

\*02\*

At the isolated area

The kiss got more intense as Hayden used his other hand to unbutton her blouse. That was when it clicked to Reginah. She broke the kiss and moved away from him.

She licked her kiss swollen lips looking at him as he looked at her. Hayden winked and she smiled and touched her lipw with her fingers.

Reginah:We shouldn't. This is wrong.

Hayden:Is it?

Reginah:It is. On so many levels.

Hayden:No it's not. You like me, I like you or am I wrong pretty lady?

Reginah's mouth dropped. He was so casual about it.



Reginah:You're a teenager Hayden...

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:So? Doc I may be a lot of things but immature is not one of them.

Reginah:No. No. You're not convincing me to do this..

Hayden:Do what now?(chuckling)You're going to be miserable if you keep denying your feelings. Who said we have to label this?

Reginah:Uh ng ng. This is wrong. I'm six years older than you, you're just 18...

Hayden shrugged.

Hayden:And what are those?

Reginah:Wh-what do you mean?

Hayden:You just gave me numbers. Nothing but numbers..

Reginah:They matter.

Hayden:No they don't...

Reginah sighed looking down before running her hands through her hair.

Hayden:Societal expectations are still going to make a lot of you miserable.

Reginah:What will your mom say? What will people say? Oh God!

Hayden:You're living for yourself and not the people. Leave mom out of this..

Reginah:She will be disappointed. To her I'm like supposed to be like a sister...

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:You've been hiding the feelings pretty lady but I saw right through you.

He slid his phone out and handed it to her.

Hayden:Your digits...

Reginah:Wa peka wa itse?

Hayden:I know what I want and I want you...

Reginah punched in her number and gave him back his phone. This felt wrong and right. She was perplexed about this. He was young, how was it going to work?

Hayden saw the wheels turning in her head as he saved her number.

Reginah sighed again and looked at Hayden.

Reginah:What wi-

Hayden:Think about it.

Reginah:I thought you were a jerk...

Hayden:I still am.

Reginah:What do you see in me? I'm older than

you and yo-you're ju-

Hayden:Just a teen? I will surprise you doc...

Reginah:I'll think about it..

Hayden took out the car keys and started the car.

Reginah sighed and leaned back.

## At The Office

Ms Smith looked at the receiver as the call from the school ended. She rubbed her temples in a circular motion.

This boy was going to give her grey hairs before her time and she was at her wits end with him. She didn't honestly did not know where she

went wrong.

Her PA walked inside the office.

PA:Afternoon mam, the meeting will be beginning in an hour.

Ms Smith:Reschedule it.

PA:Bu-but..

Ms Smith:I need to go.

Ms Smith started to put her files back in her bag, she will wrap up at home. She was just so stressed about him that she doubted she would be able to concentrate.

When she was done she picked her handbag and the other bag.

Ms Smith:See you tomorrow.

She stepped out of her office and made her way to the lift. Ms Smith impatiently tapped the tip of her high heel on the floor.

Ms Smith: Why isn't it fast now? (impatiently)

The lift finally opened and the occupants stepped out while she got inside. She quickly pressed the buttons and it closed. She sucked in a deep breath wondering how she was going to approach this.

When the lift opened she hurriedly made her way to the parking lot where she got inside her car and without looking back started it and drove off in a hurry even though she knew she was hurrying for nothing.

Meanwhile Reginah stepped out of the car to go open the gate. Hayden drove slowly into the yard and parked her car under the shade.

The car engine stopped and he got out of the car holding her bag and coat.

He handed them to her and she checked for her house keys in the bag.

She unlocked the door and Hayden followed her inside. He was too close.

She created space between them and she placed her stuff on the couch before turning and looking at him.

Reginah:uhm thank you for driving me here..

Hayden chuckled as he made his way to her and she moved back till she was against a wall, his height also and muscle didn't make it easier for her to escape.

Hayden:I mean you can't be scared of just me can you pretty lady?

Her breath caught in her throat as she looked up at him. He tipped her head upwards and planted a kiss on her lips. It was supposed to be a subtle baby kiss but he kissed her again till it became a full blown kiss. He held her wrists with only one hand as she kissed him back with the same energy he was projecting unto her.

Hayden broke the kiss and breathed against her lips as his weedy breath hit her nostrils.

Hayden:Fuck! I knew you wanted me too..



He kissed her again and she responded and moaned into the kiss. He closed the distance between them as their garments touched and he made sure to make her feel his hard on. Reginah gasped but his lips were already on hers.

He broke it again and looked at her as she breathed hard.

He chuckled and kissed her neck softly. The age difference didn't bother him that much and he wasn't intimidated by her being older than him.

Hayden: I need to give you time to think right?

He said huskily against her ear and her breath hitched.

He kissed her lips one last time before he placed some distance between them and looked at her. He licked his lips before he flashed a smile her way and Reginah paused.

His smile was wow!

Hayden:I'll call...

Just like that he walked out leaving Reginah still leaning against the wall.

The moment Hayden opened the gate, he saw his mother's car by their gate. His mother paused to look at him before shaking her head in disappointment and driving inside the yard the moment the gate opened automatically.

Hayden silently followed the car inside the yard.

When his mother parked the car he just headed to the house as the gate closed.

He made his way to his room as soon as he stepped foot inside the house.

Hayden immediately got rid of his hoodie and started unbuttoning the long sleeved shirt. He threw it on the bed revealing the tattoos along his arms.

He counted the seconds before his mother burst inside his room without knocking.

Ms Smith:Why?

He turned to face his mother, running his hand through his fade cut.

Hayden:Let me guess, the school called.

Ms Smith:It's exam time. Your final exams and yo-you're sti-still playing.

Hayden:A wise choice of words.

Ms Smith:When are you going to let it go, it's enough Hayden.

Hayden chuckled. Ms Smith could see how Hayden was his father's son through and through. Surely he moved past it all..

Hayden:let me go take a shower...

Just like that Hayden walked away leaving his mother standing there.

She blinked tears away. She had done what she had done for their own good, why couldn't he just move past it?

She patted her cheeks and walked out of his room.

Meanwhile Hayden stood under the shower and closed his eyes. When he wasn't high or even drunk that was when it all hit him all at once.

He shifted his thinking to the pretty doctor and he found himself smiling. If he could get between those legs of hers....

Ms Smith sat down on the couch and picked her phone up. She paused.

Maybe she was jumping into conclusions but she knew Hayden wasn't going to say anything. She dialed her number. Maybe what she was thinking wasn't it and she was trying to play the

role of protective mother unnecessarily.

At Reginah's house

She removed the bra as her phone rang. She placed the bra down and looked at the caller id. Why was Hayden's mother calling?

She answered the phone.

Reginah:Hello..

Ms Smith:Hello. Can you come over? I want to ask you something..

Reginah was lost but she agreed anyway.

She placed the phone on her lap and sighed. She didn't know whether to explore these feelings or not.

He was younger than her and although people might not see the difference to her it was weird. She had workmates who were approximately her age and here she was debating whether to date an 18 year old.

Reginah:Urg! He just messed up my thinking and he is good kisser.

She touched her lips again as today's kiss from earlier on played in her mind.

She just laid on the bed. She didn't know now.

.

.

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*03\*

At Ms smith's place

Reginah stood outside her neighbor's gate and pressed the intercom.

A voice came through.

Ms Smith:Who is it?

Reginah:Reginah.

Ms Smith:Okay.

The gate slid open and she stepped inside the yard and she looked around. She didn't understand why Hayden was so rebellious when they literally had everything.



His mother provided well for him and she was always concerned about him and what he was doing. He was attending a private school but he seemed directionless.

If they do date, what will she tell people?

She asked herself as she walked to the door. She knocked for a few seconds before Ms Smith opened the door.

Ms Smith:Hello Regie..

She smiled. She had shortened her name saying it's too long for her.

Ms Smith:Step inside..

She walked inside and looked around.

Ms Smith:You can sit down.

Reginah sat down and placed her hands on her thighs. She smiled as Ms smith sat down. She wondered if Hayden was home or out.

He pretty much did anything he wanted. Rebel much.

Ms Smith sucked in a breath and looked at Regie.

Ms Smith:This is about Hayden...

Reginah's heart skipped a beat and she just looked at Ms Smith with a blank face.

Ms Smith:I just wanted to ask...(pausing)I saw him leaving your house when I came here.

Reginah:Well after my shift I passed him by the road and I stopped to give him a ride.

Ms Smith didn't want it to show that she suspected otherwise.

Ms Smith:Okay. He is just a teenager who is going through a rebel stage. He claims to know a lot of things when in actual fact he doesn't.

Reginah kept quiet. Was Ms smith telling her to stay away from Hayden subtly?

Ms Smith:I mean he needs to understand and grow, now he is just not fine.

Reginah:I understand that.

Ms Smith:Glad you do. Thank you for bringing him home.

Hayden stood by the passage shaking his head. He did not need any babying and he was going to have Reginah whether his mother liked it or

not.

Very strategically he walked into the lounge in grey sweatpants and a white vest.

Reginah's mouth made an 'o' shape as soon as she set her eyes on him. He didn't look an ounce like the teenager in uniform at the moment.

She tried to hide her evident shock and looked at her hands on her lap. She could see it through the sweat pants. Wow!

Hayden:Hello doc..

She looked up not sure how to respond to that.

Reginah:H-hi..

He chuckled and headed to the kitchen for a glass of water.

Ms Smith pretended like she didn't even notice what happened.

Reginah:Well I have to go and ke utlule. Have a good day.

She stood up and made her way to the door. She opened it and stepped outside the house.

She leaned against it and breathed in the fresh air. Yah neh.

She was like that for a few seconds before ahe finally walked away.

Hayden's mother made her way to the kitchen.

Ms Smith:Hayden can you for once focus on

what's important?

Hayden:Mother you're a fine one to talk.

Ms Smith:I'm your mother.

Hayden chuckled placing the glass down.

Hayden:Father?

Ms Smith paused and looked at him.

Ms Smith:I did what I had to do.

Hayden:You are selfish and you did what was best for you.

He walked out of the kitchen making his way to the lounge. He paused at the door deciding whether or not to go to Reginah's place.

The latter thought won and he walked out. Ms Smith just sighed. He will forgive her after some

time.

At Reginah's house

Reginah was now in a towel in the bedroom. Now she needed to shower and relax before her shift. Maybe the more distance she puts between her and Hayden will make him stay away.

That could work. She just tied her hair and made her way to the shower.

She paused whilst in the shower before she could even open the water.

That sounded like a door knock. Reginah walked out still with the towel wrapped around her body.

Reginah:Coming!

She made her way to the main door and unlocked it. Before she could say anything, Hayden smashed his lips on hers and held her neck as he kissed her.

She moaned into the kiss before breaking it.

Reginah:You shouldn't be here..

Hayden:I want to be here...shut up!

He moved his lips to hers and skillfully ravished her soft moist lips, biting her lower lip in between the kiss. He closed the door with his foot as he pushed her backwards still kissing her.



Lost in the kiss, Reginah wrapped her arms around his neck as he deepened the kiss, with his skillful tongue tasting her lips fully.

He held the back of her head sinking into her sweet lips.

Reginah moaned into the kiss now with him trapping her against the wall.

He broke the kiss and bit her lower lip looking into her eyes. Her eyelids fluttered and he baby kissed her lips. She looked up at him as he lifted her chin up and rubbed it.

Hayden slowly pressed himself against her and that snapped Reginah out of her temporary reverie.

Reginah:B-but you're ju-just...

He chuckled and kissed her lips again.

Hayden:Hey, I said my age doesn't matter...

She breathed softly as her breath hit the corner of his lips.

Hayden:You were about to take a shower?

Reginah:huh? Uhm..yes..

He couldn't get enough of her lips. He kissed her lips again and she stood on her toes to try and reach his height..

Hayden:I assume we're an item?

He asked. She looked at him confused.

Reginah:I-I...

Hayden:Great..

He kissed her lips again and rubbed her chin.

Hayden:Go take your shower(laughing)I won't bite..

Reginah stood there a bit confused. What just happened?

Hayden:Or...

He held her cheeks in his hand and brought his lips to hers.

She broke the kiss and looked into his eyes.

Hayden:I'll be in the lounge okay?

She nodded and he stepped back away from her.

He nonchalantly walked to the couch and she sucked in a deep breath making her way to her bedroom.

When she got there she closed the door and leaned against it. She was confused as hell now but she should probably take a shower. She still has a few hours left till her shift began so she needed to be fresh.

Meanwhile Hayden looked at the ceiling as a million thoughts ran in his mind. He wished he could escape the thoughts and weed did that temporarily.

He sucked in a deep breath. He always lived in now because he knew the future was not guaranteed. He learnt that in the most painful way.

Half an hour later Reginah walked out in gown

and sat next to him.

Reginah:I-I...

She looked at him and wondered how he could be so calm all the time.

Reginah:how is this-us, if there is an us, how is it going to work? Kana your mom was indirectly telling me to stay away from you.

Hayden:Oh I know..(chuckling)

Reginah:What are people going to say? Kana ke motona mo go wena..

Hayden:And I said age doesn't matter to me, I've never been a person who has time for people's opinions.

Reginah:Wena Mr Rebel..

He smirked.

Hayden:So?

Reginah sighed and looked into his eyes. This was risky and very abnormal according to society's standards. She didn't even think about it for too long. He just came here and started kissing her then boom a whole relationship.

Reginah:Okay.

Hayden:Is that a yes?

Reginah:Yeah..

He lifted her head and softly kissed her lips.

Hayden:Thank you.

.

.

.

\*

\*

THREE MONTHS LATER

Forever&Always

\*05\*

## At The Hospital

Reginah and all the other doctors gathered around Tessa. She had read the file briefly and was saddened by the fact that she needed a heart transplant but there were no donors.

One of the doctors flashed a light on her eyelids. They had stabilized and they were sure she was breathing, her heart was still beating although it was malfunctioning. She needed a donor soon or else she wasn't going to survive.

They waited for half an hour still looking at her.

Reginah checked her watch, she was exhausted and needed to sleep but she can't leave without making sure that the little girl was okay.

Tessa opened her eyes slowly and they breathed in a sigh of relief.

Reginah:Hey angel, how are you feeling?

Tessa felt heavy and looked around. It seemed as if there were more machines. She just looked at the pretty doctor who was by her side before she closed her eyes.

She coughed and they waited to see if she will cough up blood, she looked at her hand and it was fine, no blood spots.

Reginah:Theresa, your family is on the way okay? Hang in there angel.



She said as she pushed Tessa's hair back.  
Tessa nodded as the doctor's dispersed.

Reginah looked at Tessa one last time, she  
needed to rest.

Reginah:rest. I'll pass by tomorrow..

Tessa nodded as the pretty doctor stepped out  
of her room.

Reginah sighed and made her way to her office.  
She took her stuff and checked her phone for  
messages on her way to the car. She saw the  
missed call from Hayden's mother. Strange.

She frowned when she scrolled through  
Facebook as there were a lot of posts about the  
results being out. For private school kids  
anyway.

She dialed Hayden's number. It took her to voicemail. She shook her head and she opened the car, placing her stuff inside.

She started the car and reversed out of the hospital parking lot.

At Ms Smith's house

Hayden walked out of the shower with a towel wrapped around his waist. He went through the clothes in his closet and picked out some black jeans and a white hoodie.

After getting dressed that was when he finally checked his phone. He found his mother's missed call and Reginah's missed calls.

He checked himself out in the mirror before he walked out with his wallet, car keys and phone in hand dialing Reginah.

She answered on the third ring.

Hayden: Sugar...

Reginah: Hey, why were you not answering your phone?

Hayden: Are we insecure now babe?

Reginah: N-no...

Hayden: Good, I'll call in an hour or so okay?

Reginah: okay(sighing)

Hayden: I love you..

Reginah: I love you too H..

He chuckled before hanging up.

Hayden just took a screenshot of his results and sent them to his mom before he opened the door and stepped out of the house.

At the mall

Hayden stepped into Game Stores and picked a trolley. He pushed the trolley heading to the wine section. He was not into wine but then he wasn't doing this for him. Okay, maybe he had his motives but whatever it took to get what he wanted.

In the same store Letso stepped in and looked at the list her father had sent her. It wasn't much and she will be done in most probably a few minutes.

She grabbed a basket and went through the aisles searching for what she was sent to buy.

She paused as she recognized the guy from earlier on, the one with the tattoos and abs.

He was taking something from the shelf and she paused looking at him. He pushed his trolley forward and she looked down.

Today's earlier incident was so embarrassing she wouldn't want him to recognize her.

She walked past him in a haste catching a whiff of his strong cologne. She frowned. She thoughty he was poor and the cologne smelled expensive.

She looked down at his feet and noticed he was wearing Jordans. Maybe she judged him too early or maybe he was one of those that claimed to live expensive lives yet they can't afford them. She knew such kids from school and she would always roll her eyes as she knew how most of their parents struggled to make ends meet.

She moved to another aisle and checked her list before taking a few things from the shelves.

Meanwhile Hayden looked at his trolley making sure he got what he thought he needed. Was this what women did when they were grocery shopping? It was exhausting yet he wasn't even doing any grocery shopping.

He slid his phone out and checked the time. He

still had time, he guessed as he joined the till queue.

Letso stood behind him as she took in his height and intoxicating cologne. She sucked in a breath. She just hoped he won't notice her at all.

The line moved forward and she just looked down holding her basket.

Hayden moved forward and paid for his things.

The cashier avoided eye contact with him as she scanned his goods.

Cashier:Plastic?

Hayden:Yes.

Yep! That was the exact same voice from earlier on. He handed the cashier his card and she swiped it.

After he was done, he picked the plastics and walked out while Letso paid.

Once Letso was done, she walked out and paused when she saw the guy from the construction site placing his plastics in the car before he jogged to the driver's seat.

Letso:Ooh!

She certainly misjudged him.

At Reginah's house



Reginah wore one of of his t-shirts that he just left here one of those days. She sat crosslegged on the couch as she connected her phone to the sound system.

She laid down on the couch and closed her eyes, relaxing. She will check on the little girl tomorrow during her afternoon shift, she will talk to Hayden later.

Thirty minutes later Hayden parked his car inside the yard. He checked the basket to make sure if they did put the stuff nicely. He left the basket in the car and stepped out holding his phone and the keys that had Regie's house keys.

He walked to the door and he almost knocked

when he heard the music. He decided on using his key and he slowly unlocked the door.

He opened it slowly and stepped inside. He smiled seeing her in his t-shirt on the couch. He bit his lower lip as the song played in the background.

He made his way to the couch and bent his head over hers.

He softly kissed her lips and she stirred without responding to the kiss.

Her hands moved to his face attempting to push him away but he held her hands kissing her some more.

She turned her head before opening her eyes.

Hayden:Hey you..

She closed her eyes and opened them again.

Reginah sat upright and Hayden stood upright.

She yawned and stretched her body as the t-shirt slid up revealing her thong and Hayden licked his lips before she pulled down the t-shirt.

Reginah:Hii..(yawning)when did you come back?

Hayden:Want to sleep?

She yawned.

Reginah:No, I'm good.

Hayden:And here I was trying to be romantic..

Reginah smiled.

Reginah:What were you planning?

Hayden:It was supposed to be a surprise and I'm not telling you.

He sat down next to her and held her waist pulling her to him.

Reginah:You smell good..

Hayden:I know..

Reginah rolled her eyes.

Reginah:Jerk...

Hayden:And you love this jerk, come here..

He pulled her to him and kissed her lips. He wanted more but he broke it and looked at her rubbing her lower lip.

Hayden:Babe?

Reginah:Hmm..

Hayden:Never mind..sit here..

She slowly sat on his lap and he held her waist as the t-shirt slid up again. She tried to pull it down but he held her hands.

Hayden:I love the view babe, let it be..

She placed her hands on his chest.

Reginah:So?

Hayden:Woman, don't stress about that...

Reginah shrugged.

Reginah:I have to ask Hayden.

Hayden:Le lapisa gore..(you're tiring)

Reginah:Nna le mang?

Hayden:You and my mother...

Reginah:We just want to know..

He gave her his phone with a blank stare. She placed her fingerprint on the phone to unlock it since he also saved her fingerprint as his

password.

Reginah:Bua..candidate number and the centre number.

He held her thighs pushing towards him.

Reginah:Hayden!!(laughing)Bua kwa..

He gave her the numbers as she typed them on his phone. He just kissed her neck slowly sliding his hands under the t-shirt.

She moaned.

Reginah:Ng ng H. I wan-want to see-see(moaning)

He squeezed her breast and she threw her head back.

Reginah:Hay-aah..ng ng tlherra wena..

Hayden just ignored her as he sucked on her neck keeping both his hands on her breasts.

She looked at the phone screen for a few seconds before he made her moan again.

Reginah:Aah..A few minutes H.

Hayden:I can do a lot in a few minutes sugar..

Reginah:I want to see ee...

He ignored that and removed his t-shirt from her body.

After he got rid of the t-shirt he whistled.

Hayden:Fuck the romantic surprise..

Reginah moved her head away to look at the phone screen.

Reginah:Ema pele..

Hayden:O mpolaisa nopa kana..

She laughed looking at the phone then her smile faded as her eyes widened in shock.

Reginah checked the name again and looked at the grades. She looked at the phone screen then at him.

Hayden:Happy?

Reginah hit his chest with the phone. When she tried to hit him again he held her wrists in his hand.

Hayden:Wa itena yaanong?(you're making yourself angry?)

Reginah:And you didn't tell me?

Hayden:Tell you what?

Reginah:Mxm!

Hayden just looked at her.



Reginah:You made me believe..mxm!

He shook his head.

Hayden:ntle ke tswelele o sale o mpolaisitse nopa o re 90 day rule shit and stuff(let me continue, I've been thirsty but you had restricted me with the 90 day rule shit)

Reginah:Ng, wait. Why did you make me believe you are directionless when you know you're smart and you know what the hell you're doing?

Hayden:You believed that on your own...

Reginah:Mxm go tswa hoo o tswa ka 45 points nxla!(And then you get 45 points nxla!)

Hayden:So you're angry I passed? What do you want kante?

Reginah:You made me believe a lie..

Hayden:Are you PMS'ng?

Reginah:No I'm not, I-urg don't change the topic.

Hayden:So you're angry?

Reginah:Koore..mxm! Wa tena!(You're annoying)

Hayden:Reginah?

She paused. He has never called her by her full name before.

Reginah:hmm?

Hayden:Reginah?

Reginah:Rra...

Hayden:Kana taa ga o ntena..(You're about to make me angry)

She has never heard the full effect of his voice but she knew he had that natural dominance that came with him, even though she was older than him but sometimes when he talked to her, she just had to obey. It was strange to her

somehow.

Hayden:So what's the problem?

Reginah:Nothing.

Hayden:I thought so.

Reginah:You're still a jerk.

Hayden:Don't push it sugar. Just don't.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*06\*

At Reginah's House

She looked at him and he sighed and laid his head between her boobs. She sighed.

Reginah:What now? Stop it..

He chuckled as he kissed her between her boobs and she sighed contentedly.

Hayden:We'll see..

Reginah:Uh Hayden..

His large hands held her close and she threw her head back looking at him.

Reginah:I don't know why you make me feel like this.

Hayden:Like what?

Reginah:All giddy and stuff..

He pecked her lips softly and just held her. She

responded to the kiss wrapping her hands around his neck. He deepened the kiss placing both of his hands on her cheeks..

Reginah felt his hard on from underneath her and she moved away but he held her steadily as he moved his lips against hers.

They continued sharing that heated kiss till he decided to break it. He rubbed her lower lip.

Hayden: Get dressed babe...

Reginah: Where are we going?

Hayden: Just get dressed hmm..

He pecked her lips again.

Reginah: Okay.

He passed her the t-shirt and she wore it before she got off him.

Hayden:Make it fast.

Reginah:Yes sir.

At The Hospital

Tessa let out a fade smile as she looked at her parents who were worried to the bone.

Ma Tessa:Are you sure you're okay baby?

She nodded.

Tessa:Where is Tia?

Ra Tessa:At home..this is...

Her father just touched her cheek gently looking at her with glossy eyes.

Tessa:I-I'll be fine dad. I promise.

She could see that they had lost all hope but she didn't want to lose hope. She wanted to be a writer and she didn't want to give up.

Her mother just walked out of the room with tears in her eyes. She couldn't bear seeing her baby fight for her life yet there was no hope, no sign from God or even a single donor for her. The list wasn't long but the past few months she hadn't found a match and she knew that no one would willingly give their heart away.

Ma Tessa:God why her?

She said as she placed her head on her lap.

Meanwhile in the hospital room Tessa looked at her father. They had added more machines but

the important thing was that she was still alive.  
That was all that mattered.

Tessa:Daddy I'm still going to be a writer.

Her father tried to smile but it hurt knowing that  
you are powerless to save your own daughter.

The bright 11 year old has never hurt anyone so  
why her?

At Ms Smith's house

She looked at Hayden's results once more and  
she was proud even though he was a handful.  
She sighed thoughtfully as she switched off the  
lights.

She knew he would most probably hate her for



the rest of his life for what happened to his father and looking at it, she was selfish but it was for a good reason.

He never had a male figure show him the way and she felt that he blamed her for that too. She took his father away from him. Literally.

Some things might take time. Maybe, just maybe he might forgive her. It didn't hurt to have hope.

.

.

\*

\*

Half loaf is better than nothing family, le tla nkinela diatla metsing Rest! Rest! Rest bafethu!

## Forever&Always

\*07\*

At Reginah's house

Reginah walked out of her room in a maxi dress with her hair tied in a cute ponytail. Sue found Hayden on her phone and she just walked to him.

Reginah:Done..

Hayden:Turn around..

Reginah:No..

Hayden:Turn around..

She reluctantly turned around and he laughed.

Hayden:Let's go.

He stood up and held both their phones in his hand, along with the car keys.

He held her waist leading her to the door.

Reginah:What are you planning?

Hayden:Don't worry about that..let's go pretty lady.

Reginah:Let's not forget I have to rest, I have work tomorrow.

Hayden:Who doesn't? You talk too much(smirking)

Reginah:I don't trust your plans.

Hayden:Okay. Let's just go babe.

He locked the house door and slid the keys in

the back pocket of his jeans.

Hayden unlocked the car and opened the door for her.

Reginah:Now you're opening doors for me.

Hayden:Always suspicious of everything.

She got inside and he closed the door before he jogged to his side.

He got inside and started the car. Reginah buckled up and sat still watching him as he reversed out of her place. He had one hand on the steering wheel and he always made a face when he was driving. It was still sexy, the way his veins were visible on his hand and she knew what was underneath that hoodie.

She looked down, she couldn't believe she fell for a teenager and in some sense he was mature and not mature. She wasn't sure that made sense though.

Hayden looked at her with the corner of his eye. That was the thing, he was serious about and most people would think it was eccentric for a guy his age to love a woman when his agemates literally threw themselves at him.

Reginah smiled as he drove through the traffic lights in the dark, being guided by only the headlights.

Reginah:where are we going mme?

Hayden:Patience sugar.

In less than 30 minutes they had arrived and

Reginah looked around in the darkness.

Reginah:I still don't know some parts of the city.

Hayden:Allow me to teach you.

With no warning he kissed her and she responded. He broke the kiss and rubbed her lips.

Hayden: Tempting sugar..

She just looked at him, he stepped out of the car, walked to her side and opened the door for her.

Reginah:Such a gentleman.

Hayden:Not for long.

He took her hand and helped her step out of the car. She was hit by the cold breeze and she rubbed her arms a bit. The fresh breeze

surrounded the area and she could feel the grass from underneath the sole of her sandals.

Hayden just moved his hand to her hair and released it from the tight bun letting it spill free and it covered her clavicle.

Hayden:Beautiful.(under his breath)

The breeze blew her hair back making it look like she was in a professional photoshoot with the wind blowing her hair like the models in adverts always look.

Hayden smiled and he couldn't help himself but to pull her closer to him with her hair.

Hayden:You're fucking beautiful.

Reginah:Thank you.

Hayden:I didn't mean it as a compliment. Your beauty is effortless and it stuns me everytime. Every fucking time how you never even try and you still appealing to me...

She blushed looking down and he lifted her face up as her eyes reflected the full moon, making them sparkle in the night under the constellation.

Hayden:Fuck!

Her eyelids fluttered and he held her cheek as she opened her eyes and their gazes locked for what seemed like hours as time stood still and her hair brushed her cheeks.

Hayden:Saying I love you would be an understatement.



He rubbed her chin before softly pecking her lips.

He smiled and kissed her forehead before he stepped away from her and went to the boot of the car to take out the goodies he bought. It took Reginah a few minutes to get back to earth and by the time she was turning Hayden was already placing the basket on top of the blanket. She grinned.

Reginah:A picnic..

Hayden:A late night one..

Reginah:This is so sweet. Thank you.

He just walked to her and held her waist.

Reginah:It's so peaceful.

Hayden:You are peaceful.

Reginah rolled her eyes laughing.

Reginah:Mxm!

He led her to the blanket and they sat down with her sitting in between his legs with her shoes off. Well the both of them had their shoes off.

Reginah looked at his size 8 Jordans before looking at her size three feet. Hayden opened the basket and took out the finger food and two wine glasses.

She turned to look at him.

Reginah:You drink wine?

He raised an eyebrow.

Hayden:You know that I am not into wine, if it

was not for you I wouldn't have bought wine.

Reginah:You know it makes me drunk kana..

Hayden:Three glasses...le weak. Weak weak babe. Very weak.

Reginah:Tsamaela koo...

Hayden:Weak. But I wouldn't mind seeing a drunk you, I mean the way you grinded on me the last time you were drunk was such a fucking turn on. Do it again.

She punched his chest and he laughed. He was a gentleman in more ways than he admitted. He didn't take advantage of her and instead let her sleep it off and made fun of her the whole week about her drunk state.

Hayden poured the wine into the glasses and handed her a glass.

Reginah:A toast to...uhm the future..the future.

They clinked their glasses and he took a sip before placing it down.

Reginah:You're not drinking anything strong besides you're driving.

Hayden:I wasn't going to take anything strong...

She sipped on her wine as they talked about a lot of topics. They never ran out of things to talk about really.

He handed her the plate as she nibbled on what was on the plate listening to him, well not exactly listening but looking at the shape of his lips as he spoke.

Hayden paused noticing that she wasn't listening to him but was instead looking at his

lips.

Hayden:Buttercup? Babe?

He snapped his fingers before she moved her face back blinking a couple of times and trying to remember what they were talking about.

Reginah:You were saying..uh..

Hayden:You weren't even listening.

She shook her head.

Reginah:The wine.

Hayden:Lies..

Hayden effortlessly picked her up and placed her on his lap as she looked at the sky.

Reginah:Do you think we'll last?

Hayden:I have no idea. What do you think?

Reginah:The future is never known, anything can happen.

Hayden:Even if we do not last, we once made each other happy.

Reginah:You're happy?

Hayden:Content with you.

Reginah:Hey now!

He chuckled and started kissing her neck, leaving butterfly kisses there that made her tummy somersault.

She held his jaw with his hands angling her neck to give him better access to it.

Hayden just slid his hand underneath her dress and held the elastic of her thong and dragged it down her legs.

His lips moved to hers as her breathing got heavier, she could feel his cold fingers along her pelvis. Strategically trying to not touch her and heightening the anticipation.

She put her hands to good use and helped him get rid of the hoodie, the minute the warm piece of clothing was off his body he was already lifting her dress off. She raised her hands and he threw it to the other side of the blanket and sat on haunches.

Hayden: Fuck!

She looked angelic on the blanket, naked and hair all over the place with the moonlight spilling over her features, enhancing her already beautiful form.

Hayden got on top of her and kissed her lips with expert delicacy changing the pace at which this started on.

She followed suit and placed her hands in his hair as he kissed her as if she was the most important thing in the world.

The kiss went on for a while as her heart exploded into a million pieces. She felt every emotion in that kiss, emotions she knew he would never speak of on any given day and she welcomed them.

Hayden's lips moved from her lips as he bit her earlobe with a naughty smile while his hand circled her navel. She moaned softly and he chuckled. This was so fucking beautiful. He licked her neck as she laughed moving away



and he sucked on it, not letting her escape his grasp.

Reginah closed her eyes as he #EXPLICIT

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*08\*

At the place

Hayden pulled her hair backwards as tears

flowed down her cheeks.

Hayden chuckled as he held her body in his arms. She was small in his arms and he wouldn't change what happened. Not a single thing.

Hayden:Serious wa Ila?(You're seriously crying?)

Reginah used her shakey hands to wipe her tears as he placed her head on his buff chest.

Hayden kissed the top of her head and stared up at the stars, her soft breathing tickling his heart. Would he change for the better because of this woman?

Reginah closed her eyes. She hadn't been expecting this, not at all.

Hayden:Good?

She nodded, she didn't even trust her voice at

this point in time.

Hayden went quiet and she lifted her head to look at the 19 year old who just rocked her whole world and she wasn't sure if she had known what she had been missing in her life but somehow he completed that unknown missing part.

Hayden:what's going on in that beautiful head of yours?

Reginah:This was so beautiful..

Hayden:Ok sugar..(smiling)

They star gazed completely naked on the blanket, with his arms around her waist.

Reginah:Why were you such a problem child?

Hayden:You don't like peace do you?

Reginah:I just want to know..

Hayden:I grew up without a father.

She shrugged.

Reginah:I didn't have both parents.

Hayden:That's the thing, yours died at a young age. That mother you keep in asking me to respect is the reason.

Reginah:what did she do?(frowning)

Hayden sighed as the flashbacks came back. He closed his eyes for a few seconds before opening his and looking at her.

Reginah:Safe place?

Hayden:Not a lot of people know this...

Her curiosity was piqued. What was it now?

Hayden:There was once a notorious drug dealer and gangster..

Reginah:Is this a story?

Hayden:Just listen.

He said as his finger circled her navel sending shivers down her spine.

Hayden:Uhm does the name Kennedy Smith ring a bell?

Reginah tried to juggle her memory before he eyes widened and she looked at Hayden. She tried to put two and two together while looking at Hayden.

Reginah:He was your father?

Hayden:Still is..

Reginah:H-how?

Hayden sighed.

Hayden:My mother sold him out to ma DIS and well her identity was kept secret even mine, his name is not even on my documents. The company she is running? From the drug money...

Reginah:That's why you hate your mother?

Hayden:She was selfish, so selfish not everything was about her and guess what? My father was a known criminal and after three years in jail the state killed him. Of course they masked it as something caused by an illness but they killed him. I hate her for selling him out, he would be here. He was not a saint but a good father he was.

Something got stuck in his throat as the emotion clouded his eyes and he closed his

eyes. Reginah rubbed his chest in slow calming motions.

Hayden: And I was not even allowed to visit him but he had connections and I saw him a week before he was murdered.

His voice cracked.

Hayden: I've had everything but no one could fucking see I lost a piece that completed me. Life became useless and so fucking lonely.

Reginah: You were heading towards self destruction.

Hayden: I hate her for taking my hero. It's her fault that they got to him. I lost someone a younger me needed.

Reginah: It's okay.

She didn't know if it was. She had heard it in the

news even his court case was so publicized that it was difficult not to know him. They knew he was fucking rich and it was an achievement that the state had managed to catch Kennedy. Not knowing that on the other side, a young child's heart was broken by the fact that he lost a father, someone he had banked on being there forever.

She didn't know how she missed the similar features or was it the fact that she hadn't even thought that far.

Hayden closed his eyes. He didn't want to think about it all, some things to him were unforgivable and his mother expected him to smile as if everything was okay when it was her fault. Her damn fault. Selling out the man she claimed to love, such betrayal, dishonesty and



disloyalty from someone who you thought had your back at all costs only to turn around and be your downfall.

Reginah:Are you a gangster?

Hayden:Let's say I dodged the law once or twice.

Reginah:You're being vague now..

Hayden chckled before looking at her.

Reginah:I wishe we can stay here longer, it's peaceful.

Hayden:Really peaceful but we should get going.

Reginah:a few minutes then..

Hayden:Let me make the time go faster..

He held the back of her head kissing her, she felt his dick against her thigh and she broke the kiss.

Reginah:I think we should go..

Hayden:A few minutes...

He held her hands above her head as he supported his own weight not crushing her.

His lips covered hers and she kissed him back before breaking it.

Reginah:I'm still sore...

Hayden:I know. Shut up! erect cock found her slit and he moistened it with her juices, the friction elicited soft moans from her lips and he silenced her with kisses.

His head found it's way inside the narrow slit and she arched her back moaning as he slid it all in.

Hayden:Fuck!

He started pumping in and out of her as she moaned his name. She wrapped her hands around his neck still moaning his name, her breasts slapping against his chest. Hayden groaned and sucked on her neck before he pushed forwards with so much force that shocked her.

Reginah:Aaaah...uh...(moaning)

In a few minutes she came around his dick, he pussy spasming around it and tightening it's hold around his dick. Hayden came shortly after filling her with his warm semen.

He breathed heavily against her neck as his hand rubbed her boob amd she moaned.

At Letso's house

Letso sat in front of the study desk with the lamp on and she looked at her notes. The mole concept was nothing so she just closed the chemistry notebook and sighed.

Her mind wandered to the guy from the construction site. She couldn't help but wonder about how he got the car and how he smelled expensive.

She was obviously not allowed to date but she could fantasize.

She looked at her phone and shook her head. Masa was probably going to think she likes that guy.

The moment was embarrassing but he was good looking. So good looking.

The door opened slightly and she turned her head to face her mother.

Ma Letso: Hello, do you need anything?

Letso: I'm done studying for the day mama. Thank you.

Ma Letso: Alright. Goodnight.

Letso: Night.

Her mother closed the door and Letso stood up and removed her slippers heading to the bed.

She turned the blankets and slid inside cuddling her favourite teddy bear and closing her eyes.

At Reginah's place

Hayden parked the car outside her house and stepped out of the car to go unlock the door first.

She sat in the passenger seat wearing his hoodie and waited for him to come back to the car.

A few minutes later, Hayden picked her up and she wrapped her hands around his neck yawning.

Hayden: You look tired, sleep.

She placed her head on his shoulder and he closed the door with foot heading to the bedroom.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*09\*

The following morning

At Reginah's house

With her head on the pillow and ass up he drilled her from behind with her hands held tightly.

Hayden:Fuuuck!(groaning)

She tried to move away but he held her in place.

Reginah:Hay....uh...uhm(moaning)

He pulled her by her hair kissing her neck.

Hayden:What?

Reginah:Uh...aaah..

He kept on drilling her fast and hard as she screamed.

Hayden:Ma?

Reginah:Emis-aaah...uh!

Hayden:I can't hear you love...



He said as he kissed her neck and giving her one final stroke before she orgasmed and he finished it off by spilling his semen deep inside of her.

He kissed her neck again still plugged inside of her and she held onto the pillows wanting to escape his grasp. He slid out of her and turned her to kiss her lips.

Hayden:Good morning.

She just looked at him and closed her eyea for a few seconds before opening them again.

Hayden:And you look flushed.

He said blowing the hair away from her eyes while chuckling.

He laid on the bed and pulled her now sweaty

body to him, he ran his finger along her round arse and moved it up along her spine, sending shivers down her spine.

She turned to look at him as the sun rays spilled into the room, illuminating it with it's magnificent orange glow.

She parted her pink lips and he just placed his thumb in between her lips.

Hayden:Don't look so cute and innocent, it turns me on.

Silence filled the room till she could be able to form coherent sentences.

Reginah:Mo-morning..

Hayden:How are you?

Reginah:I don't know.

She said slowly. The atmosphere was so calm and it sent her heart racing. It all seemed too good and she knew that nothing lasted forever.

She looked at Hayden again, he was so tall, handsome as hell and she knew he was a bad one but he did it so well, would she be too pessimistic if she said she could see the end already?

Hayden could see that she was in deep thought.

Hayden:What's wrong?

Reginah:What if it ends?

Hayden:Then the memories will be what we have. Don't overanalyze everything or else you're going to be stressed out doc, you of all people should know that stress is bad for you.

She breathed softly against his chest.

Reginah:I guess you're right.

Hayden:I'm always right.

Reginah:Jerk!

Hayden:Say that one more time..

She kept quiet and he kissed her forehead.

Hayden:I have work in two hours.

Reginah:by the time you knock off I'll probably be at the hospital.

Hayden:Can I pick you up after work?

Reginah:You want to?

Hayden:I'm offering aren't I?

Reginah:I'll send a message.

Hayden:Cool..

He got out of bed stark naked and headed to the bathroom. He peeked and looked at her.

Hayden:Want to join me?

She shook her head as fast she could and he chuckled.

Hayden:Okay. Suit yourself.

At Ms Smith's house

Ms Smith looked at the watch and sighed as she sat down waiting for Hayden before going to work.

She had made breakfast for two but she was sure he might've went out with her but she

couldn't confront him about it. He told her to specifically stay out of his relationships and that she was not a fine example of relationships. She couldn't even threaten to take away the money because his father had his name under each and everything much to her dismay, only this house was in her name, the rest of his accumulated wealth was under his son's name making things complicated. She could only manage it as long as Hayden permitted.

The door opened as Hayden walked in smelling fresh. She sucked in a breath and swallowed her pride.

Ms Smith: You're from Reginah's place?

Hayden paused. He had wanted to give a really rude answer but he composed himself.

Hayden: Yes. Do you want me to pass on a

message?

Her heart stopped. Her suspicions had been on point.

Ms Smith: Hayden she's older than you, it's not like you need a sugar mommy..

Hayden quirked an eyebrow and in that instance he looked more like his father in more ways than one.

Hayden: Who said anything about money? Not everything revolves around money..

With that he walked away with his hands in his jean pockets.

Ms Smith: Congr-atulations on your results(low voice)

He will never forgive her. She sighed and picked her car keys walking out of the house in a slower pace and a burdened heart.

In the bedroom Hayden got rid of his tee and threw it on the bed making his way to the wardrobe for clean clothes and a much more cleaner overall.

He slid his phone out and dialed his boss.

Boss:Young man.

Hayden:Morning, I'll be running late. Most probably two or three hours late. I have a few things to get done.

Boss:Okay. Make sure you are at work before noon.

Hayden:Okay. Thanks.



He hung up and finished changing clothes. He didn't bother spraying his cologne. Once he was in his overalls and vest he took his car keys and phone before walking out of the house.

At Reginah's house

Hayden walked inside the bedroom and he found her sleeping peacefully with the sheet covering her breasts but revealing her gorgeous legs. He smiled.

Hayden:Babe?

She turned and faced the other way. He checked his watch. He still had time he guessed.

He just kissed her forehead and walked out of the bedroom.

An hour later Reginah turned to face the other way then the other side again before she opened her eyes. She was sore down there. She laid on her back closing her eyes. She badly wanted to call in sick but she couldn't.

She got out of bed and slowly made her way to the bathroom. She stared at the mirror and angled her head finding hickeys along her neck and chest. What the hell was she supposed to cover up her neck with now? With the added heat it was going to be impossible.

She sighed and bent down to brush her teeth and wash her face. The peeing process was not nice at all for her. What the hell?

She closed her eyes as the burning liquid escaped. Fuck Hayden! He is not touching her at all. Fuck him!

With slow caution she proceeded to the shower for a shower. She was sure going to be late today for her rounds that's for sure.

Meanwhile in the lounge Hayden checked his watch. Was she still sleeping?

He stood up and headed to the bedroom where he opened the slightly closed door.

He found her getting dressed and he shook his head.

Hayden:When did you wake up?

Reginah:Almost 30 minutes ago.

Hayden:You're going to be late.

Reginah:Is it my fault?

Hayden:O nale kgang?

Reginah:Whoa, I'm not picking up a fight. I'll get ready just give me a few minutes..

Hayden:Okay. Food is in the microwave.

Reginah:You cooked?

Hayden:Just get dressed.

Reginah:Yes sir..

At Letso's school

Letso sat next to Masa as they waited for their Maths teacher to arrive in class.

Masa:Pity we didn't get that guy's name..

Letso:I saw him yesterday.

She blurtes out and Masa laughed.

Masa:of course dummy. I was with you when we saw him.

Letso:I mean after that embarrassing encounter, ke mmone ko Game.

Masa:Hee banna!

Letso:Mmh...he looked all expensive.

Masa:These guys tend to live beyond their means don't be fooled..

Letso:He had a car too..

Masa:okay. But he is hot, nna I need a singlw night with him.

Letso:You saw he didn't entertain us.

Masa:Let's pass by the construction site again today.

Letso:Uniform.

Masa waved her off.

Masa:Uhm we are knocking off early today?

Letso:I think so..

Masa:We can go change..most probably guy ga  
a batle a defilement case as you were saying.

Letso thought about it. She hadn't stopped  
thinking about him the whole night. There was  
something. Just something about him.

.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*10\*

At Reginah's house

In her royal blue scrubs she made the way to Hayden's car and got in the front seat.

Hayden:You're full?

She nodded as he fixed the rearview mirror and she took out her small mirror from thw bag looking at her neck. It was impossible to hide those hickeys, she can't exactly put concealer on it because it will stain her coat.

Hayden noticed her looking at the hickeys kn her neck and chuckled.

Reginah:How long do they last? Look at how

they look.

Hayden:It depends..

He said as he reversed out of her yard.

Hayden:The house is locked?

Reginah:Mhm. Thank you for breakfast and the ride you didn't have to.

Hayden:You're still too tired to drive.

Reginah:And I wonder why

He just drove without giving her the reaction she wanted from him. In twenty minutes he parked in the parking lot and lifted her chin up.

Hayden:What time should I pick you up?

Reginah:I'm tired, I might knock off earlier today.

Hayden:Time doc.



Reginah:Most probably before 4pm.

Hayden:Okay.

He kissed her lips softly.

Hayden:I love you.

Reginah:I love you more and bye.

She got her bag that had he stuff and stepped out of the car. Hayden watched her make her way inside the hospital before driving off.

Reginah greeted the receptionist with her head down to try and make sure that she doesn't notice the hickeys. She quickly made her way to her office where she wore her coat and there was still not difference.

A knock sounded on the door and she sighed as she brought her hair down to at least cover her neck.

Reginah:Come in.

The door opened and in walked one of her coworkers.

Him:Morning doc.

Reginah:Morning.

She just sat in front of her desk as he sat on a chair.

Him:Would you like to go out for lunch with me?

Reginah:Unfortunately I can't do that.

Him:It's just lunch.

Reginah:Is it?

He laughed.

Him:It isn't, I like you and would like to know you better.

Reginah:That sounds like a nice offer but I'm still going to say no.

She uncsciously tucked her hair behind her ear like she always does and the colleague saw a hickey on her neck.

Him:I understand.

She smiled.

Reginah:Great. I hope this doesn't affect our working relationship Scott.

Scott:Not at all.

Reginah:Awesome. Have a nice day.

She said before she opened the file on her desk. He looked at her then sighed standing up and walking to the door. He paused as she paged through the file and walked out.

He made his way to his office and sat down. Scott dialed his brother's number and it went through.

Scott:Hello and she said no..

Him:The new doctor you were telling me about?

Scott:Yah, that one.

Him:Ke life.

Scott:Maybe I was too slow man, I've had my eyes on her ever since she started working here...

Him:Maybe you would've got the same reply.

Scott:Maybe but haish...

Him: There will be other girls bro, she is not the only woman in this world.

Scott: I guess you are right.

He hung up and swung around in his office chair.

Meanwhile Reginah closed the file and checked the time. She did say she wanted to check on that young girl. Theresa.

She stood up, placing her stethoscope around her neck and made her way to the door

In Tessa's room

Tia sat next to Tessa as Tessa's parenta talked

to her.

Tessa:What about a pacemaker?

Her father's eyes widened. They had once considered that but the doctors said it won't work.

Ra Tessa:The doctors said you need a new heart baby.

Ma Tessa:What do you want to eat?

Tessa:Chicken mama..

Tia:Bur-burger...

Tessa smiled looking at her little sister then she grinned looking at her mother.

Ma Tessa:Alright. I'm going to buy that.

She squeezed her husband's shoulder before walking out of the room.

Ma Tessa passed Reginah who greeted her with

a smile and walked inside Tessa's room.

Reginah:Goodmorning.

Ra Tessa:Hello doctor.

Reginah:Hi, you must be her father, I recently read her case file.

Ra Tessa:Of course doc.

Tessa grinned looking at the pretty doctor.

Reginah:Hi Theresa..

Tessa grinned somemore. The way she said her full name with an accent was lovely plus she was lovely too.

Tessa:Hiii...

Reginah smiled. She had this calm energy and aura around her it was hard to be sad.

Reginah:How are you today?

Tessa:Good.

Reginah started checking the machines.

Reginah:I'm not making you uncomfortable am I?

She shook her head slowly.

Reginah:It won't take much of your time.

Tessa:Okay.

## At The Construction Site

Hayden drank the water before squashing the water bottle and sucking in a deep breath.

He tied his overall tighter and resumed with laying the bricks down. He paused and checked his watch. It was way past lunchtime and since he was late he didn't go for lunch.

His phone vibrated in his pocket and he wiped



his hands on the overalls.

The sun glimmered on his shiny wet chest as he typed in his password to check the message.

Sweet stuff:I cut my shift short cause I'm tired,  
wa re where is the Construction site?

Hayden:You're coming here?

He sent the message and saw her typing. He waited for her response.

Sweet stuff: Ee.

Hayden:Bring lunch.

Reginah:Yes sir. The directions please, ke batla go palama taxi..

He quickly sent her the directions and put his phone back in his pocket.

## At the Hospital

Reginah stepped out of the hospital premises and stood by the road waiting for a taxi. Scott's car passed by and he stopped.

Scott:Are you heading home?

Reginah:No..

Scott:I can take you where you're heading.

She shook her head.

Reginah:No, it's fine. I'll catch a taxi. Thanks for the offer.

She stopped the taxi that was heading her way behind his car.

Reginah:Thank you for the offer though.

Scott sighed and he drove off as Reginah got inside the taxi.

## At The Construction Site

Masa pulled her high waisted jeans up so that her figure could be revealed as Letso just walked closely behind her in a short summer dress.

Masa:Let's look around for him.

Their eyes scanned the area.

Masa:You're wearing glasses Letso. Can you spot him?

Letso looked around carefully.

Letso:I think I can, he is topless again.

Masa:Bathong!(fanning herself)kana o hoto gore.

Letso:Don't we all know that.

Masa:Let's go say hi again.

Masa was about to go when Letso held her hand.

Letso:Wait...

Masa looked in her direction as they saw a lady in scrubs make her way towards him.

Letso:Is she a doctor?

Masa shrugged and watched the interaction.

Hayden smiled as Reginah made her way towards him.

He bit his lower lip.

Hayden:Lunch e kae?

Reginah:I'll buy it. Hiii...

He just pulled her towards his sweaty body.

Reginah:You're all sweaty and stuff..

Hayden:And you're not supposed to care...

He rubbed her chin and kissed her lips. She responded and wrapped her arms around his neck as people paused to watch them.

He broke the kiss and kissed the corner of her lips.

Reginah:Why are you half naked?

Hayden:Jealous sugar?

Reginah:What? No!! I can never be jealous.

Hayden:Don't worry, I'm only fucking you pretty doctor.

Reginah:Not so loud..

Hayden:I fuck you only sugar..

Reginah:Can I have the car keys so I can buy lunch?

He searched his back pocket and gave it to her.

Reginah:Give me thirty minutes.

She kissed his cheek before she wiped her lips.

Reginah:Sweaty..haish..

He let go of her waist as she walked away and Hayden watched her walk away. He smirked.

Letso just looked at Masa. He was with a whole doctor, no one could miss that PDA.

Letso:Let's go.

Masa:We are still going to greet him, the girlfriend is gone moss..

Letso:Masa!!

Masa:stay then...

Masa made her way to Hayden and Letso reluctantly followed her.

They stood in front of Hayden and he frowned.

Masa:Hi again. We passed by yesterday.

Hayden:Okay.

Masa:Can we have your name please?

He chuckled. Such overambitious youngsters.

Hayden:Didn't your parents warn you to stay away from boys?

Masa pretended to be thinking then shook her head.

Letso:Sir, it's okay even if you don't give us your name.

Masa:Don't encourage him.

Letso:We should be going, sorry for wasting your time.

Letso pulled Masa away and then Masa pulled her hand away.

Masa:He won't tell us his name, let's ask his co-workers re lese go nna slow...let's go.

Letso:Masa...

Masa:Nna mma I want him. He can sleep with me even if I'm not his girl....

Letso sighed amd followed Masa.

.

.

\*

\*



\*

Forever&Always

\*11\*

At The Construction Site

After Masa had asked for that guy's name they walked away.

Masa took out her phone and searched him on Facebook.

Masa:I found him. They said Hayden Smith right?

Letso:Yeah...

Masa:ke yoo...

She showed her the phone and it was him alright.

Masa:I'm sending a friend request.

Letso:Bathong Masa!

Masa:I know what I want moss...

They walked away from the site.

Meanwhile Reginah sat in his car and buckled up before starting it. She reversed from where he had parked it and joined the main road. She was going to get lunch for both of them.

## At The Mall

Reginah joined the queue so that she can place her order.

Whilst she was in line Hayden's mother walked inside and she faced the other way so that she couldn't see her.

Ms Smith spotted Reginah in line and she sat down on one of the tables and waited patiently. She wanted to ask her a few questions.

Once Regie had placed her order she found an empty table then sat down pressing her phone.

Ms Smith made her way to her table to make sure she won't dodge her.

She pulled a chair and sat down, startling Reginah who looked up from her phone.

Reginan flashed an uneasy smile as Ms smith looked at her with a serious face.

Reginah:Hi, wonderful day isn't it?

Ms Smith:after I warned you to stay away from my son.

Reginah sucked in a breath and looked down. She looked at her short nails for a few seconds before she lifted her head.

Reginah:With all due respect, I didn't choose to have these feelings for your son.

Ms Smith:He is a young boy going through a phase and discovering himself.

Reginah kept quiet.

Ms Smith:There are men your age, o batla eng mo mgwaneng? O utlwetse eng ka ene?(what do you want from the child? What have you heard about him?)

Reginah just looked at her.

Ms Smith:He is just a boy and he doesn't have money if that's what you're after.

Reginah didn't want to offend her by saying anything but not everything was about money.

Ms Smith:Wa ntidimalelela?(You are going to go quiet on me?)

Reginah:I don't want to sound disrespectful.

Ms Smith:End that disgusting relationship you have with my son o akanye jaaka motho yo motona.(and think like an adult)

With that Ms Smith took her bag and walked out of the food place while Reginah remained seated and thoughtfully looked around before closing her eyes for a few seconds.

A lone tear fell down her cheek and she quickly wiped it away. She didn't have to be rude to make her point across and if Ms Smith feels so strongly about this relationship what will other people say?

Her order number was called and she stood up and went to the counter to get her order.

Reginah walked out of the restaurant with her head down and made her way to the car where she placed the food on the passenger seat and placed her head on the steering wheel as she bursted into tears.

At the construction site

Hayden poured water on his head to cool

himself down before he used his vest to wipe the liquid away.

His phone beeped and it was a message from Reginah.

Sweet stuff:Your food is in the car.

Hayden:I'm coming...

He looked around before he made his way to where they normally parked their cars.

He got to his car and opened the door. He sat in the passenger seat as she looked out the window.

Hayden:Hey what's wrong?

Reginah:Nothing. Eat your food.(low voice)

Hayden sighed and leaned back.

Hayden: Sugar?

She kept quiet.

Hayden: Reginah ke bua le wena. (Reginah I'm talking to you)

Reginah: Hmm...

He sighed.

Hayden: What's wrong? Leba kwano..

She sighed and still stared out the window.

Hayden just placed his large hand on her jaw and forced her to look at him.

Hayden: What's wrong? You were crying.

Reginah: I'm fine. Just something got in my eye.

Hayden: Come up with a better excuse.

Reginah forced a smile.

Reginah: I'm okay.



Hayden:Do I have the word fool plastered on my forehead?

Reginah:No..

Hayden:Then talk. You were fine an hour ago and now your eyes are red..

Reginah sighed.

Reginah:Let's break up.

Hayden laughed and looked at her. She was serious but he laughed some more.

Hayden:Sugar, you don't break up with me..

Reginah:I don't se-

Hayden:Ssh..we'll talk about this when I knock off.

She sighed and nodded. He removed his phone and gave it to her.

Hayden: Two hours max.

He got out of the car and she leaned back.

She just put her fingerprint on his phone and it unlocked.

She went to his Facebook and searched her favourite Facebook diary The Devil's Angel.

She read the latest episode. She rolled her eyes as she read. Leone's mother annoyed the hell out of her and she wished that if Anna was to meet her again, she should just slap that bitter old witch. Anna did nothing to her and she hates her just because it's not Marcella.

Hayden's messenger beeped and she opened it. She read the name. Masa?

It was just a hi accompanied by heart emojis. She didn't know whether to reply to his dms or not.

She just ignored it and searched yet another one of her diaries. Another message beeped and she checked it. It was still the same Masa.

Masa:Hi. Again I'm that girl from earlier.

Reginah paused as the girl typed and she went to her profile. It was still writted confirm friend request.

She went back to the message.

Masa:The one who said you are hot the day before and I passed by today with my friend.

Reginah paused and read the message again. She had nothing better to do at the moment.

She replied.

Hayden:I think I remember.

The message request was accepted and at the other end of the line Masa jumped for joy.

Obviously he was going to reply her.

Masa:That's great

Hayden:Yeah.

Masa sat on her bed and and went through her nude pictures and paused. Maybe it will be too early but then she knew what she wanted.

She typed a message.

Masa:App?

Reginah paused. No. She replied as Hayden

Hayden:Unfortunately I kind of deleted it.

Masa:Lies        You have a girlfriend and ypu don't want her to know.

Hayden:I do.

Masa:It's okay. I don't mind.

Hayden:What are we talking about again?

Masa laughed alone. It was easy to talk to him and she could imagine him saying that with that deep voice of his.

Masa:I think you know. I like you..

Hayden:You do?

Masa:Yeah. Let me send something.

Hayden:    okay.

She picked out three of her best photos. She made sure they looked good and she sent them to him.

Reginah's eyes widened as she saw the nude pictures. She went to Masa's profile again and she saw a picture of her in a school uniform. What the hell?

She just closed his messenger and placed his phone down.

Masa frowned when he went offline after she sent the pictures. Maybe he is busy, most probably will look at them clearly when he is at home. Yeah.

Hours later

Hayden made his way to the car and found her sleeping with his phone on her lap. He just took his phone and went through his messages and

socials.

He frowned when he saw the Facebook conversation that ended with a girl sending nudes. He just blocked the person and placed his phone back on her lap.

Hayden: Sugar?

She stirred and he called her name again. She turned her head.

Hayden: Babe?

She finally opened her eyes a bit disoriented and he kissed her lips whilst she was that confused.

Hayden: Wake up.

She yawned and stretched before she yawned

again.

Reginah:Hii..

He smiled.

Hayden:Hello pretty doctor..

She smiled and he held her cheek.

Hayden:What nonsense were you spurring earlier on?

Reginah:Nothing..

Hayden:Bua.

His tone had an underlying threat and she sighed.

Reginah:Your mom just said I should stay away from you.

Hayden chuckled shaking his head.



Hayden:And that's why you were crying?

Reginah:She was rude about it but she mentioned money, why is she so focused on money?

Hayden:She is selfish like that.

Reginah:I think you should forgive her..

Hayden:She made you cry and she has robbed me of a father and you say I must forgive her?

Reginah sighed.

Reginah:At the moment she is your only family and you should also try to ask her why she did what she did. Maybe it was not intentional.

Hayden:You're too good for me.

Reginah:Am I?

Hayden:Mhmm...I'll think about it. Come here..

He held the back of her neck pulling her in for a

kiss.

Reginah indulged him before she broke it and held his cheek.

Hayden:And by the way we're not breaking up.

Reginah:Okay.

Hayden:we're clear on that?

She nodded.

Hayden:Good.

Later that evening

Hayden walked inside his mother's house and found her on the couch.

He thought about what Reginah said but then

she didn't know half of the stuff he knew so she wouldn't exactly understand.

Hayden:I would like us to talk.

He said as he slipped his hands into his overall pockets. His mother sighed and followed him as he headed to the dining room.

She sat down and he sat down opposite her.

Hayden:I know what you did.

Ms Smith:I d-

He raised an eyebrow. He had no idea how much of his father's son he was.

Hayden:Stay out of my relationships.

Ms Smith:You can't expe-

Hayden:And I haven't forgot what you did to dad, robbing me of my father.

Ms Smith:I had to.

Hayden:Had to?

Ms Smith:It was either I hand him over or the state was going to take all of us to prison.

Hayden:That was not enough reason.

Ms Smith:And they place you under foster care.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:You know as well as I do that the state didn't have enough evidence to put him behind bars, so you can't say they tricked you into handing him over because then they would've taken even his wealth and possessions but surprisingly they didn't even though they are in my name.

His mother kept quiet.

Hayden:What was it? Some revenge plot against him? Leaving me in the crossfire? He told me everything before he was killed. Mother you can't fool me...

Ms Smith:Your father was bad news.

Hayden:Why marry him if he was bad news? He was my father, bad or not and I was told to forgive you because you're my mother but I'm failing to do so. I am really failing to let go of that.

Ms Smith frowned. He was told to forgive her?

Hayden:But you're still lying to my face regardless of the fact that I know the truth just goes to show that I will never trust you nor forgive you. I'm not a saint too but some things aren't as forgivable as you think they are.

He stood up but paused while at the door.

Hayden:And make my girlfriend cry one more time you'll know why I'm Kennedy Smith's son.

His voice sent cold shivers down his mother's spine and she swallowed as he walked away. She couldn't believe that her teenage son detested her to such an extent and could even threaten her.

.

.

\*

\*

SIX MONTHS LATER

NB. This is not a bonus insert, just the insert I was owing you guys. Keep on following the profile to get your bonus insert later.

Forever&Always

\*12\*

At The Hospital

Reginah fixed her blouse making sure it was loose enough before she left her office picking up the coat and placing the stethoscope around her neck.

She bumped into Scott who carefully looked at her.

Scott:Hi doc.

Reginah:Hii...

She said in passing heading to Tessa's room. Scott stopped to look at her. There was

something different about her but he couldn't pinpoint what. He sighed and made his way to his office.

Reginah lightly knocked on Tessa's door before opening the door. She had grown fond of the little girl these past months and she was refreshing to be around plus she wanted to get used to being around kids.

Tessa's face lit up when the doctor stepped inside the room. She was by far her most favorite and she liked talking to her and just looking at how pretty she was.

Tessa:Hiii...

Reginah:Hey Tessa. How are you my love?

Tessa:I'm feeling better today.



She sat down next to her bed as Tessa went on to tell her about the ideas she had.

Reginah:So basically this book is about you?

Tessa:Yes. Not every little girl has a heart disease that needs a heart transplant.

Reginah:True.

Tessa turned to her side.

Tessa:I had scribbled a few ideas. Can I also put you in the book?

Reginah:Do you want to?

She nodded.

Reginah:Then do what makes you happy angel. Now let me see the book you are talking about.

Reginah stood up and picked up her little

notebook and smiled reading the little scribbles in pencil and crayon.

Tessa:I miss school..

Reginah:I know you do honey, homeschooling will work for now.

Tessa:That's what mommy and daddy said.

Reginah:They are right honey. What should I ask the nurse to bring for you?

Tessa:Anything is okay. Is it safe to say I love you?

Reginah laughed and held her small hand.

Reginah:I love you too.

Tessa:When I get out of the hospital I still want to talk to you.

Reginah:I'll talk to your parents about that sweetheart.

Tessa:They will agree.

Reginah:Okay angel. Let me go talk to the nurse for you.

She yawned and stretched her body and the blouse moved up revealing her tummy.

Tessa's eyes widened and she chuckled pulling her blouse down.

Reginah:It's a secret for now love.

Tessa:Wow..

Reginah:I'll be back okay?

She nodded as Reginah walked out of her room.

At Botswana University of Science and Technology

Hayden parked his car where the students

parked their cars and he stepped out of the car, making sure to lock it.

His mind was not really in school today. He had done a lot of thinking the past few months and he was sure he knew what he wanted to do but then there was a certain Miss who was going to give him a problem.

He made his way to class, making sure not to bump into anyone.

He had a hectic day ahead and he hated that he was going to attend each and every class.

Later that day

Hayden sat down by the chairs and took out his phone.

Voice:Hello.

Hayden:Smith here..

Voice:Mr Smith..

Hayden:I wanted to see how far with everything?

Vocie:Everything is coming along sir.

Hayden checked his watch.

Hayden:I'll be there over the weekend so thay the paperwork can be processed.

Voice:Yes sir.

Hayden:Good. See you then.

He hung up and placed his phone down. Kind of funny how Reginah slowly made him minimize his smoking. She kept on saying it was not good for her to take in his secondary smoke

and that bred the habit of smoking sometimes, mostly when he is stressed and never around her.

He sat there thoughtfully looking around. A girl made her way to where he was and sat down.

Her:Hi.

He just ignored her and took his stuff.

Her:Mr I was talking to you..

Hayden:Did I say I want to hear you talk?

Her:fuck!(muttering)

His voice had a bit of danger that came with it and that rendered her speechless as he walked away. Hayden knew those type of girls and he was not in the mood to entertain any of those. It

felt good knowing what he wanted to do in life, in a way he had control and power.

He smiled. He had everything coming together.

He dialed Reginah's number. She answered immediately.

Reginah:Hey. How is school? I hope you are not bunking lessons kana BIUST go tsewa FD le gone

He chuckled.

Hayden:You don't trust me.

She sighed.

Reginah:I do. I do. I jusy want you to do well, that's all.

Hayden:I understand. How are you?

Reginah:I'm good. Life moves on.

Hayden:Sure you're good?

Reginah:Yes. Please study tlherra.

Hayden:Of course Dr Smith.

Reginah:Wa swaba Hayden.

Hayden:It doesn't hurt to dream  
babe(chuckling)Sure you're good baby girl?

Reginah:Yes. Stop worrying tlherra wena.

Hayden:I can't stop worrying about you love. I'll  
call later my love.

Reginah:Okay. I love you.

Hayden:I love you Dr Smith.

Reginah:Bye.

He hung and smiled. She had no idea how  
happy she made him. She had no fucking idea  
how.

.



.

\*

\*

The target was not reached but I'm a good person as everyone knows. This is where the journey begins and gets bumpy, fasten your seatbelts and share, like, comment and tag others to join the journey.

Forever&Always

\*13\*

At the hospital

Reginah rushed to the bathroom as the food she just ate came back.

She bent besides the toilet bowl as she vomited

the food she just ate.

Tears escaped her eyes as she threw up. She held onto the edge of the bowl as she stood up and used the back of her hand to wipe her mouth.

She flushed the toilet and stood still for a few minutes to stop the world from spinning around her. She made her way to the sink where she gurgled the water to eliminate the foul smell of vomit. This was what she hated the most.

She washed her hands before splashing water on her face and tying her weave back. She sighed and looked at her reflection in the mirror. She was okay. She breathed in before stepping out of the bathroom. One of her colleagues gave her a weird look and she ignored it as she

made her way to the office.

She entered the office and locked the door. Reginah sat down on her chair and placed her head on the cold desk. She slowly closed her eyes feeling herself relax and drift off to a peaceful sleep.

At Ms Smith's house

Ms Smith went over the documents. Well copies of the documents her husband had left and let her keep. Apparently she wasn't supposed to have the original documents according to the lawyer. The rightful heir which was Hayden was allowed that.

She read through most of them for the

hundredth time in years and he hadn't left her a single cent except for the house of course.

Everything was in Hayden's name and knowing that her son was a ticking time bomb he can choose to have her removed from the board and then there was money she couldn't touch.

She sighed frustrated.

Ms Smith:Damn you Smith! Damn you!

She said pushing the documentation back and ran her hands through her hair. She decided to dial her lawyer's number. Her lawyer answered immediately.

Her>Hello...

Ms Smith:Hi. I went through the documents again and there is no way I can access anything?

Her:(sighing)Lettie I thought we talked about this. The documents have no loopholes. Your

husband made sure, why didn't you think of that when you betrayed him?

She sighed pinching her nose bridge.

Ms Smith:I didn't think.

Her:Then there is nothing that can be done. He left his son a whole legacy worth a lot of money that you cannot touch.

Ms Smith:I know(frustrated)I'll talk to you later, I think I need a walk.

Her:Okay.

She hung up and covered her face with her hands.

At Reginah's place

Reginah stepped out of the car to go open the

gate. She yawned and rubbed her eyes just as Ms Smith got out of her yard.

Ms Smith looked at Reginah once then faced the other way. She turned and looked at her yet again.

It couldn't be? Could it? She just looked at her while she walked to the car looking all tired and sleepy. She was sure her eyes weren't deceiving her at all. Reginah was too tired to notice that someone was looking at her as she drove into the yard. She parked her car and stopped the engine of the car.

She got her bag and got out of the car heading to her house to unlock the door.

She just needed sleep. Nothing but sleep.

Once Reginah was in the house she threw the bag on the couch and she started removing her blouse while making her way to the bedroom.

She got rid of the pants and threw herself on the bed with only her bra and panties. She closed her eyes falling into yet another bout of peaceful sleep.

At Letso's house

Letso closed her books and sighed. Her exams were only 2 months away and she had done what was necessary to try to swerve away from distractions.

That had included her kind of cutting Masa from her life. That on its own had become an

issue on its own as Masa was not used to being cut off.

She leaned back against the chair and envisioned herself as the advocate she had always dreamed of becoming. She just needed to work extra hard and maybe she will get a scholarship to go study at Harvard University. Well she had options. She could go to UB too but there was still nothing wrong with dreaming of going to Stellenbosch or even Oxford even Cambridge University. She just had to focus and at this point she had already got rid of distractions.

Her mother peeked and she smiled. She always wanted her girl to be the best and although she had never voiced it out loud she was quite happy she ended her friendship with that vile



Masa girl. She was a bad influence on her child, she just wanted her child to pass and go pursue medicine. She would be the first doctor in the family if she would be able to do that.

She walked away. Letso switched off the study lamp.

Letso:Letso no boys! Just focus, we are just almost near the finish line.

She said to herself over and over as she made her way to her bed. She got undercovers and laid on her back. If she worked hard, extra hard she would get a scholarship abroad and maybe get to meet a white husband. Not that Hayden that Masa was after. She would find much more handsome men and she will get married. Live happily ever after? Maybe but as long as she had her dream career she was going to be fine

at this point. It all required focus.

## At Masa's House

Masa had locked herself in the bathroom as her parents argued back and forth about her. Tears blinded her eyes as she looked down at her thighs. She had gotten yet another beating and her mother was trying to stand up for her even though she knew that Masa was the one in the wrong.

What was she going to do now? She didn't even know who got her pregnant and the test kit showed that she was just two months pregnant. Was an abortion possible in this instance?

She had her final exams in two months and she

couldn't afford to fail. She was a trouble child but failing would add to her parents' disappointment in her.

More tears streamed down her cheeks as she covered her face with her hands crying in the locked bathroom.

.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*14\*

At Masa's house

When the arguing finally simmered down she wiped her tears and stood up from the toilet seat. She splashed water on her face then unlocked the door.

She quietly made her way to her bedroom and sat on the bed. More tears filled her eyes and she bit her lower lip to stop herself from sobbing.

Her bedroom door opened and her mother walked in. She looked up and she didn't need a microscopic lens to see the disappointment on her face. It was the way her eyes looked at her and she knew she had really blundered and messed up.

Masa's mother sat on the bed and looked at Masa. She didn't know where they went wrong and as much as she loved her daughter she knew she had really messed up. Not just a little but a lot.

Ma Masa: I think you don't need to hear me say that I'm disappointed.

Masa looked down at her hands, she played with her fingers silently.

Ma Masa: I don't know where we went wrong with you. Maybe I was the wrong one for defending you saying your father is too harsh to you, mpolelele ngwanaka where did we go wrong?

Masa just looked at her hands with tears in her

eyes. The tears dropped to her thighs and her mother sighed.

Ma Masa:Now there is no use crying over spilt milk.

Masa nodded with tears running down your cheeks.

Ma Masa:Setse ba go robetse yaanong o ithwele(they already slept with you now you are pregnant)Who is the father?

Masa's heart beat erratically in her chest.

Ma Masa:Ke mang?(who is it?)

Masa's lower lips trembled as she wondered how she was going to tell her mother that she didn't even know who got her pregnant.

Ma Masa:Masa?

Masa:M-mma?

Ma Masa:ke mang mong wa mpa ye?(who impregnated you?)

Masa:I-I don-don't know.

Ma Masa's jaw dropped as she shook her head yet disappointed.

Ma Masa:You'll tell your father such.

And her mother just stood up leaving Masa alone in the bedroom. She burst into tears yet again.

At Reginah's place

The door knock woke her from her peaceful slumber. Reginah stretched her half naked body and she circled her finger around her navel with

a small smile before getting out of bed.

The knocking persisted and she just wore anything she could get her hands on. By the time she was done, she was in Hayden's sweats and t-shirt.

She made her way to the lounge where she opened the door.

The moment she opened the door she was met with a slap that resonated in her left ear.

She held her cheek in astonishment and she looked at Hayden's mother.

Reginah rubbed her burning cheek with tears in her eyes.



Ms Smith:I warned you to stay away from Hayden..

Reginah just looked at her. She closed her eyes for a few seconds whilst rubbing her cheek.

Reginah:Come in please.

Ms Smith walked inside her house and sat down on the couch as Reginah stood by the door using her hands to wipe her tears before heading to the couch.

She sat opposite Hayden's mother and placed her hands on her thighs.

Reginah:With all due respect Ms Smith what did I do to you?

Ms Smith:I can't believe a woman as old as you is still running after a teenager.

Reginah sucked in a breath.

Reginah:The heart wants what it wants.

Ms Smith:You are nothing but an opportunistic.  
What is a grown woman wanting from a  
teenager that she can't get from a man her age?  
A bo o itiseletsa o ima ngwana wa ngwana.

Reginah looked up holding back tears. No  
wonder he hated his mother with passion.

Reginah:Ga e le gore o tlile go nkgoba ka dipuo  
ke kopa o ntswele ka ntlo.(If you're here to  
insult me, please leave my house)

She started to wonder why she even let her  
inside. Maybe she was stupid for expecting a  
peaceful talk with her but then she disapproved  
her relationship with her son but she didn't  
know she was pushing Hayden away.

She was not even a threat to the woman. Or she thought so.

Ms Smith: Mxm! Ga kena go amogela serathana sa gago ke re ke ngwana ngwanake. O tseela gore o bothale akere. (I will never accept your child as my grandchild. You think you're smart)

Reginah: Go ntse ga gona bothata. (It's still okay) [humbly]

Ms Smith had expected Reginah to act out and start fighting but she looked at her with moist eyes expecting her to walk out of her house. She didn't even fight back when she slapped her and she didn't insult her back.

But nevertheless she didn't approve of the

relationship and it was disgusting that she was pregnant with her son's child. Hayden is only a child himself and she had let herself fall pregnant.

A whole grown woman. It infuriated her plus what if she was after the money. Obviously. Hayden is a child so obviously she was after money.

Ms Smith stood up and walked out of the house. Reginah followed silently behind and locked the door.

She leaned against it and slid down against the door with tears in her eyes.

She covered her mouth with one hand as she burst into tears. She felt the emotions ten times

more because of the hormones and it was not a good feeling.

At Palapye

Hayden laid on his bed. He didn't want to live on campus when his father had secured property all over the country. Besides living on campus was going to be a big disadvantage especially if he was going to have Reginah over.

Speaking of her....

He took his phone from the stand and dialed her number. It rang unanswered five times. He frowned. She wasn't at work was she?

He called again and this time she answered.

She cleared her throat and forced a smile as she talked to the phone.

Reginah:Hey..

Hayden:Are you okay?

Reginah:of course I'm fine..why wouldn't I be?

Hayden sighed. She sounded different.

Hayden:Ke dira video call..

Reginah:There is no need. I'm just about to sleep.

Hayden:I wasn't even asking you. Ka dropa call.

He immediately hung up and called again.

Meanwhile Reginah patted her cheeks and

rubbed her eyes as the phone rang. She watched it ring then he ended the call.

Hayden called again and she still ignored it. He hung up and a few seconds later she sent a message.

Sweet Stuff: Goodnight I love you.

Hayden: Araba phone

Sweet stuff: Ka robala, I have a slight headache.

Talk tomorrow

Hayden: Fine! Goodnight. † ♂ I love you too.

Reginah read the message and sighed. She placed the phone on the stand and got undercovers.

Meanwhile Hayden sat upright and checked his

schedule on his phone.

He didn't even have any lessons on Friday and from Palapye to Francistown was two hours so if he can start his journey now, he will be there around 1am.

He quickly got out of bed and wore his jeans, picking out his tee.

He picked his car keys, phone and wallet and left the room.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always



\*15\*

At Reginah's house

Hayden opened the gate before jogging to his car.

He drove inside the yard and parked his car. It was a little bit after 1am, at least he didn't encounter any problems on the way.

He stepped out of the car and locked the door. He made his way to the door and unlocked the house with his spare key. He silently stepped inside the house and locked the door, taking caution not to make any noise that might wake her up.

Hayden walked through the dark to the bedroom and even there he didn't switch on the lights. He got rid of his clothes and got undercovers. He just spooned her, resting his hand on her stomach.

He frowned at the feel of what seemed like a bump but he didn't have the energy to wake her up and ask her.

She just cuddled into him and he sighed running his hand along her arm. He kissed her neck and smiled. Maybe he should tell her about his plans before he even goes to that meeting.

She usually dishes out sound advice but he will see all of that when she wakes up in the morning. Hayden took in her scent, he missed this. Holding her just for the fun of it.

He closed his eyes and let sleep evade him.

## In The Morning

Reginah woke up feeling hands around her. She slowly turned only to be met by Hayden who was fast asleep. She gasped softly. When and how?

She looked at him once again and looked down where his hands were around her tummy. He shifted still keeping his hands around her. She sighed and patted her eyelids.

They felt so heavy, she just slowly removed his hands and made her way to the bathroom to relieve herself.

While in the bathroom, she splashed her face with water and faced the mirror. She still had eyebags and it was going to be odd wearing makeup to work since she rarely wore it really.

She sighed and made her way to the bedroom still half naked as she debated to herself whether or not to go to work.

When she turned after closing the bathroom door, she found Hayden awake.

She tucked her messy hair behind her ear.

Reginah:M-Morning.

Hayden:Hey, come sit here.

She walked to the bed and sat by the edge of

the bed looking at him. She wanted to ask when he arrived and whether he bunked school to be here.

Hayden assessed her. It was so obvious but then why was she silent? Her eyes were that of a person who had been crying almost the whole night. He rubbed his chin tilting his head upwards.

Hayden:Ga nkake ka go betsa, ka re ha.(I won't beat you, I said here)

She sighed and climbed the bed, sitting next to him.

He just pulled her to him till she was between his legs.

Hayden:Is there anything you feel I should know?

Her heart skipped a beat. She knew it was obvious but the words failed to come out of her mouth.

Hayden: Sugar?

She looked up at him.

Hayden: I'm talking to you.

She sighed and looked at her bare thighs.

Hayden: Kana ga ke omane autwe? (kissing her neck)

She kept quiet and he just kept kissing her neck.

Hayden: Babe? Kana ke bua le wena tlhemma.

Reginah: Rra?

Hayden: Is there something you feel I should know?

Reginah: uhm..yes...no...

Hayden:Which is which?

Reginah:Yes.

Hayden stopped kissing her neck and placed his arms on her shoulders.

Hayden:Talk.

Reginah:Don't freak out..

He chuckled.

Hayden:At this point nothing freaks me out..

Reginah:I honestly thought the pill was working well, kao bolella.

She said crossing her fingers.

Reginah:Out of the blue weight gain and feeling nauseous.

Hayden thought back to that time before he left when he commented on her weight gain and she said contraceptives have different side

effects, she went on with her medical terminologies convincing him.

Hayden:Ne go sa twe ke prevention?

Reginah:Thought so at first but after you left I just decided to check.

Hayden:And?

She sucked in a deep breath.

Reginah:I kind of ended up with a baby..well not a baby exactly..

Hayden chuckled before he frowned.

Hayden:Was that so hard to say?

Reginah:I thought you'll say it's too early for kids. You just started school, you need to establish yourself unlike me. I'm ahead-

Hayden:Wait. Wait. What do you mean not a baby exactly.

Reginah:My tummy is visible isn't it?



Hayden:Pretty obvious.

Reginah:I think it's almost 3 and a half months...uhm...so like...I had a sonogram and it kind of revealed....well you know I'm a doctor and these things are obvious...

Hayden:Yoh! Not the medical terminology again. Put it in layman's terms.

Reginah:The scan revealed that I'm kind of carrying twins.

He paused and looked at her. She looked at him expecting an answer. This was too much for him. She knew that.

Hayden:Wow!(shocked)

Reginah:Yeah...

His mind tried to fathom it all but he just looked at her.

Hayden:Okay. Pause for a moment. We are having twins?

Her eyes moistened with tears. He said we? He literally said 'we' instead of 'you'?

Hayden:Now you're crying..wait speaking of crying, let's talk about last night.

Reginah:What about it?

Hayden:Why were you crying?

Reginah used her hand to pat her eyes.

Reginah:I wasn't crying, I had a slight headache and a hectic day.

Hayden:That leaves your eyes puffy? I see..

Reginah:I'm not lying.

Hayden:Hmm..You do know that I know you. Your eyes say it all, so I need the truth. Let's

start again shall we?

He smiled and she wasn't even smiling now, she hated it when he spoke like this.

Reginah:Your mother.

Hayden:What did she say?

She narrated the whole scene to him as he clenched his jaw listening to her. When she was done she finally looked at him as his nose flared, his fists balled and the fury that swirled in his orbs.

Reginah:Don't do anything haste. She is still your mother.

Hayden:Whom I told to stay the fuck away from you.(angry)

Reginah:Calm down H. Breath.

Hayden:Don't give me that bull.

Reginah:O omany nna yaanong?

He sighed and kissed her cheek.

Hayden:I'm sorry okay. I shouldn't even stress you, I'm sorry.

Reginah:Cool down and think.

Hayden:Okay.

He rubbed her arms.

Hayden:Shouldn't you be getting ready for work?

Reginah:I was thinking of calling in sick..

Hayden:You look fine.

Reginah: i don't want to get weird stares, look at my eyes plus these days I can't actually keep food down.

Hayden:How many people know?

Reginah:I couldn't let people know when you didn't know, I guess your mother noticed. I didn't tell her.

Hayden:Okay...we should get up, you're going to work sugar. I'll drop you off.

Reginah:I wanted to lounge and sleep all day(whining)

Hayden:Well if you aren't going to work, then tag along then.

Reginah:Where?

Hayden:You'll see. Let's get up.

Reginah:Let me make a phone call then...

She got her phone from the stand and called the supervisor, explaining thag she isn't feeling well.

Once the phonecall ended she looked at him and he helped her up leading her to the bathroom. He had his arms wrapped around her waist.

Hayden:How is it?

Reginah:How is what?

Hayden:The pregnancy...

Reginah:kind of weird that I'm carrying two foetuses.

Hayden:The doctor in you had to say that..

She shrugged.

He closed the bathroom door as she headed to the shower. Reginah opened the tap letting the water sprinkle all over. She felt the temperature of the water, adjusting it accordingly to her liking.

She tied her hair up though it was a bit messy. She got rid of her panties and stepped inside as fog filled the space. She closed her eyes as the warm water hit her skin, taking away her aches.

Hayden stepped inside and wrapped his strong arms around her waist. She felt his hard on and tried not to think about it. Hayden just kissed her back and she smiled.

Hayden:So I made two kids.

Reginah:ga se poko(laughing)

Hayden:Still...two...

Reginah:You don't seem worried about providing not that you have to.

Hayden:I have plans. Don't worry about it.

Reginah:I worry.

Hayden:Then don't(kissing and sucking on her neck)Kana o nale go lebala gore kana o monate.

Reginah:Wa nthoga kana.

Hayden:O e tsenya eng? Sukiri? Cause it's sweet as fuck babe. So motherfucking sweet no wonder my pull out game was so weak.

His husky voice sent shivers all over her body as his hand gently moved down feeling the coils covering her apex.

Hayden:I should take my time with you this weekend.

Reginah:Huh...

Hayden:Never mind.

He let go and just held her hands.

Reginah:What are you doing?

Hayden just placed her hands on the wall. She let go of the wall and turned to look at him. She



knew what he was thinking of and she didn't have the energy for it. She blinked her eyelashes at him.

He just whispered in her ear while holding her hands.

Hayden:Don't be stubborn, I'm just warming up and you know you can't run...

Reginah:Smith!

Hayden:Ma?

He said chuckling as he held her hands intertwining them with his.

Hayden:I won't be long...

He pinned her against the mirror wall and  
#EXPLICIT

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*17\*

At the mall

Hayden held her hand as they walked down the aisle, with his other hand holding the food basket.

Hayden:What else?

Reginah:Let's keep moving, I'll show you.

Hayden:Okay...

They walked down the chocolate and sweets aisle and he turned.

Hayden:That's too much sugar babe. Ae tla re bowe.

Reginah:You asked me what I wanted.

Hayden:That's too much sugar...

Reginah:Please, pretty please..Mr just a few chocolates kana.

Hayden:You can have food. Proper food.

Reginah:Ke tlo di kgwa akere..(I will vomit it out though)

Hayden:Still,haish...

Reginah:Tlogela. I will pay for it myself...

Hayden:Regardless. Too much sugar isn't good for you. I'd understand if you wanted burgers and shit but this amount of sugar? You know better...

Her eyes got teary as she looked at him.

Hayden:I'm sure the tears won't work on me.  
We are just getting a single slab of chocolate.

Reginah:It's not enough(low voice)

Hayden:You'll have to deal with it...

She sighed as he just took one. True to his word.

Hayden:Anything else?

Reginah:Wa gana. Sure Mr.

He laughed and held her waist, heading to the counter.

Hayden:You'll be fine.

At Ms Smith's office

She received a call from her lawyer and she answered immediately.

Ms Smith:Hello.

Her:Letty something happened today...

Ms Smith:What?

Her:I heard from the grapevine that your son signed the papers.

Ms Smith's heart skipped a beat.

Ms Smith:What papers?

Her:He took control over everything his father left him, from the money to the houses to the different companies. Even that one.

Ms Smith:Who gave him the papers?

Her:(laughing) you should know that he is smart as hell by now. Seems like he has been keeping communication with his father's lawyer.

Ms Smith:He is just a child. How will he manage all that?

Her:Are you saying that to stay in control or you actually believe that?

Ms Smith went quiet.

Her:I don't know what's going down in your son's head but I have a feeling some massive stuff is going to go down.

Ms Smith:I'll talk to him.

Her:Okay.

Her lawyer hung up and she bit her lower lip.  
Her phone rang and it was an unsaved number.

Ms Smith>Hello.

Voice:Checkmate!

Ms Smith:Who am I talking to?

Voice:You thought Smith had taken this lying

down?

Ms Smith:Who are you?

Voice:Well you'll find out soon. Enjoy it while it lasts..

The person cut the call as her heart raced. She placed her hand on her chest breathing hard.

At School

Letso bumped into Masa who kept her head down. Masa didn't even lift her eyes up and kept on walking.

Letso:Masa....

Masa quickened her pace. She didn't want to talk to people. Maybe they see right through her

because she saw right through herself.

Letso ran to her.

Letso:Masa!!

Masa looked at her and Letso noticed the eye bags around her eyes.

Letso:Are you okay?

Masa:I'm fine. Bye.

Masa walked away and Letso sighed. Maybe she was still angry that she cut her off. It was necessary, Masa was a bad influence.

Masa just kept on walking till she got inside the girls' toilets. She locked herself inside and burst into tears. Everything was a mess. So messy and she didn't know where to start fixing her life



at this point. She covered her face with her hands and burst into tears.

Later that day

Hayden closed the bedroom door once Reginah had fallen asleep. He slipped his phone out as he walked away, making sure she won't hear him talking to the phone.

Hayden:Hi..I was thinking of starting in a month's time.

Voice:Sure you're taking on everything?

Hayden:I'm sure.

Voice:You're a teenager.

Hayden:(chuckled) There is a lot I can do. At the moment I'll just take it on from the sidelines still

making the major decisions. Still on that I also want documentation drawn up.

Voice:In regards to?

Hayden:well...

He walked out of the house with his hand in his pocket as he explained everything, going into detail. The man on the other side of the line paused.

Voice:Wow!

Hayden:I need it drawn in a week or so, all the legal processes bypassed if necessary.

Voice:I'll start working on it. And Smith?

Hayden:Yeah?

Voice:Congratulations.

Hayden:Thank you.

He hung up and slipped his phone in his pocket. He thoughtfully looked around before he closed the door and walked out of the gate. He had to sort a few things out.

At Ms Smith's House

He used his spare keys to unlock the gate and closed it before he walked inside the house startling Ms Smith.

Ms Smith: Hayden! You scared me. When do you come back? How is school?

She said but he didn't seem to be interested in any chit chat.

He sat on the couch and tsked.

Hayden:How can I put this? Stay away from Reginah.

Ms Smith:She is nothing but a gold digging whore, what does she want from a teenager?

Hayden cocked an eyebrow.

Hayden:Are we talking about you?

She paused and looked at Hayden.

Ms Smith:Wh-what do you mean?

Hayden:Since we are on the subject of gold diggers I was asking if we are referring to you because if we are then we are a 100% accurate.

Ms Smith held her chest.

Ms Smith:How dare you call me that. Your mother that...

Hayden:Then how dare you call the mother of my children a gold digging whore?

Ms Smith: You can't talk to me like that, I'm your mother. You should respect and listen to me.

Hayden: I think that boat long sailed.

Ms Smith: That woman is no good for you. What does she want from a child? Who lives under his mother's roof.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden: If I wanted to, I would've long moved out.

Ms Smith: You are still dependent on me. I provide for you.

Hayden: I don't think for too long anyway. I was told to be calm in approaching this matter but I'm saying this one last time. Stay the hell away from Reginah.

Ms Smith: I never even talk to the slut..

Hayden gave her a sharp look as she swallowed her words.

Hayden:Really? I'm nobody's fool and second if all you're lying through your teeth.

Ms Smith:So you would rather believe someone you haven't known for long over your mother?

Hayden:Believe who? Who said anything about anyone telling me anything?

She realised how she ousted herself in that instant.

Hayden:Stay away from her. I don't trust you and I never will.

He stood up and walked to the door. He turned and looked at his mother one more time.

Hayden:And the clock is ticking. Enjoy it while it lasts.

With that he closed the door and walked out leaving his mother confused as hell. She didn't know what he meant by that.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

3 Months later

Forever&Always

\*18\*

At Reginah's house

Reginah awkwardly walked to the kitchen with a heavy stomach as Sbahle's Emlanjeni softly played in the background.

She opened the fridge and took out food. She had to make something to eat but she didn't know what and she was too tired to be standing in front of the stove for more than ten minutes.

She placed the veggies back in the fridge and walked back to the couch where she sat on the couch and placed her feet on the table, closing her eyes listening to the soft beat of the current song playing. She was honestly excited about her pregnancy. She couldn't wait to meet her children.

She rubbed her tummy affectionately with a small smile on her lips.



Reginah:I already love you two...(chuckling)Be good for me till you arrive and I'll take care of you guys.

Her phone rang and she frowned seeing Scott's name. She just answered.

Reginah:Hello...

Scott:Hello, how are you?

Reginah:Fine and you?

Scott:Okay. I was just checking on you, ask if you're feeling fine or you need anything.

Reginah was confused.

Reginah:I'm fine, thank you for the concern. Bye.

She hung up and closed her eyes with a small smile singing along.

Sotholana emlanjeni

As'dibane emlanjeni

As'hlangane emlanjeni my love

As'hlangane emlanjeni my love

Hau isoka lami lingithumele umlayezo

As'hlangane emlanjeni my love

Sotholane emlanjeni my love

As'dibane emlanjeni my love

Hau isoka lami lingithumele umlayezo

As'hlangane emlanjeni my love

U chocolate hau izint' ezimnandi

Unemenay'di oh s'thamel umthunzi welanga

Uthando lwethu olwamzukwana

Impilo yami ngeke ibe lutho phandle kwakho

Ngicela ungibambe my love ngibambe

S'vele sambe my love asambe

Inhliziyo yami eyakho uthando lwami

lungangolwandlee

Meanwhile Hayden's car parked inside the yard. He walked to the door and paused listening to the soft music she was playing. He smiled.

He unlocked the door with his key and opened the door. Reginah opened one eye then she smiled widely seeing it was him.

Reginah:Hey..

Hayden:Baby mama...

He walked to the couch and kissed her soft lips. He bit her lower lip and placed his hands on her tummy. She smiled looking into his eyes.

Hayden:Have you eaten?

Reginah:Not yet. I was lazy to cook.

Hayden:They make you so tired.

Reginah:I can't wait to give birth honestly.

He smiled and kissed her cheek. He helped her stand.

Reginah:What?

Hayden:Let's go make something to eat first sugar..

He led her to the kitchen holding her waist.

Reginah:Semester break e hela leng?

Hayden:In a week. I want to spend time with my woman, ska mpotsa ka sekolo..

Reginah:Okay...

He picked her up and placed her on the counter.

Hayden:What do you want to eat Dr Smith?

Reginah:Uhm...anything..

Hayden:You're picky, you won't eat anything. I know you...

Reginah:Those chicken wings you usually make, go easy on the spices mme.

Hayden:On it mam..

He placed his hands against her sides and kissed her again, more deeply this time. He broke it.

Hayden:I love you okay?

She nodded

Reginah:I love you more. Can you get me my phone?

Hayden:Sure...

He went to the lounge and picked up her phone. Once he was back in the kitchen he handed it back to her.

Reginah:Thank you..

She moved her legs up and down, pressing her phone as Hayden got busy with taking out the meat and the marinate.

Hayden:Chicken wings and?

She looked up and paused.

Reginah:Uhm...spaghetti and a salad.

Hayden:Sure?

Reginah:Grate loads of cheese into the salad. Uhm urg le...oh yeah icecream. I can get started on the icecream now, while waiting for you.

She flashed her pretty eyes at him as he opened the freezer taking out the tub.

Reginah:The whole tub is fine.

Hayden:As if I'll let you..

He took out the bowl and scooping spoon. He accurately put in three full scoops and Reginah wasn't smiling.

Reginah:At least five ee...

Hayden:Are you taking it or leaving it?

She pouted.

Reginah:Fine.

He placed a teaspoon inside and handed her the bowl.

Reginah:Thanks.

She got started on eating her dessert while Hayden defrosted the wings.

At Ms Smith's house

She tried accessing the company accounts but she couldn't. She has been trying to get access to them since yesterday and she had been failing dismally.

She dialed the financial manager's number and he answered immediately.

Him:Ms Smith how can I be of assistance?

Ms Smith:Hi, I've been trying to get access to the company accounts but it keep in saying I don't have permission to do so.



The man sighed.

Him: You have been blocked from accessing the accounts.

Ms Smith: What? Why?

Him: That was a request from the owner of the company and there is nothing I can do. Have a good day.

Ms Smith: Wh-

The phone line went dead and she frusttatedly stood up running her hands through her hair. What the hell was happening? She was the one running the company, she didn't understand.

That was the only place where she could take money freely since Kennedy decided to leave everything in Hayden's name. Stupid if you ask

her. He knew nothing and she was sure she didn't know his father left things in his name and she hoped it would stay that way.

There was no use calling her lawyer. Only this house was in her name, nothing more nothing less and she hated Kennedy for that. She really did.

She paced up and down biting her nails wondering how the hell she was supposed to get access to the money now?

At Reginah's house

Reginah sipped on juice while scrolling through facebook when she paused. She looked at the picture he posted and he had his chin on her

hair hiding her eyes with a sexy smile on his lips. She reacted on the picture after reading the caption, " Sugar"

She smiled and shared the picture on her Facebook wall and placed the phone down as he dished up for the both of them.

Hayden finally looked up once he was done.

Hayden:Thank you for your patience.

He helped her off the counter and led her to the lounge.

Hayden:Sit down. I'll be back with the food.

Reginah:Okay.

He came back minutes later holding two plates.

Hayden:One for you..

She looked at the plate then at him.

Hayden:What?

Reginah:More meat, at least three more pieces.

Hayden:Wa lapisa.

Reginah:Is the meat finished?

Hayden:I...know what, take my meat.

She smiled.

Reginah:Thank you.

She started with his meat literally taking all the pieces before she focused on her plate of food.

Hayden wanted to be angry but he found it cute. Really cute besides she had to feed herself and two more people.

He placed his plate down and watched her.  
Maybe now might be the perfect time to tell her?

Reginah innocently looked up with sauces on her lips, she used her thumb to try and wipe them off.

Reginah: Is there something wrong? Ga ke je sentle?

Hayden: No, eat..

Reginah: Why are you looking at me like that?

Hayden: Like what?

Reginah: I don't know. Is it because ke go jetse nama?

He laughed.

Hayden: No...

Reginah: Okay...

She continued eating her meal with a smile on her face till she was done. She licked her lips, tasting the sauces from the wings then smiled looking at him.

Reginah:All done.

Hayden:Let me put these in the sink and wait for me in the bedroom. I want to do something.

Reginah:Something like?

Hayden:Just go..

He helped her stand on her feet and watched her disappear to the bedroom while he went to put the plates in the sink. He leaned against the counter and sighed.

Her opinion mattered a whole lot and he didn't know how she was going to take it. He just

hoped she wasn't going to blow a fuse or something, he already had a lot to deal with in regards to everything he has been doing the past 3 months.

Hayden made his way to the bedroom and headed to the bathroom where he got a small washing basin then filled it with water, a towel and opened the cabinet to get the razor.

Reginah looked up from her phone.

Reginah:What are you doing?

Hayden:Lie down...

She raised her eyebrows to look at him.

Hayden:I won't be long..

He said as he placed the stuff on the bed and

she just looked at him.

Hayden:Can you touch your toes?

Reginah:Unfortunately no, will be able to do that three months later..

Hayden:Then lie down Dr Smith. Please.

She reluctantly laid down and lifted her head to look at him.

He just got between her legs and she frowned.

Reginah:Kante mme o dirang?

Hayden:You'll see..

He opened her legs and removed her panties.

He dipped the shaving razor in the water before wiping it with the towel.



Hayden: Sit still, I don't want to cut you.

Reginah: You don't have to do that..

Hayden: Who got you pregnant?

She sighed.

Reginah: You did.

Hayden: Exactly. Sit still, I won't take long.

He started shaving off her pubic hair, being gentle as he possibly can with the razor. Once he was done he dipped towel in the water and wiped her clean. He got hard looking at her clean shaven pussy and he had to hold back.

He was going to tire her out.

Hayden: I'm done sugar.

Reginah: Thank you..

He just placed his hands between her thighs and looked up at her.

Hayden: There is something I need to tell you....

.

.

\*

\*

\*

To 21K page likes and followers

Forever&Always

\*20\*

At Reginah's House

Reginah got out of the shower and wrapped her body with a towel.

She sighed. Maybe she overreacted and didn't quite hear what he wanted to say to her.

She walked to the bedroom and sat on the bed. Her phone wasn't even here in the bedroom maybe she should call him. He did say he is going out he will back so she will wait.

She checked the time. What can she do in the meantime?

She sat down thinking, she didn't want to think deeply about Hayden and what he said, she will wait for him to explain further since it seems as if he had a lot to say.

Reginah:Tessa.

Checking on Tessa would be a good idea. She won't take long, she will be back before Hayden comes back.

At Doll's place

Hayden parked his car and made his way to the door, passing the puppies that had already got used to his presence.

He knocked on the door two times before she opened the door. Her marble brown eyes that were covered with soft long eyelashes lit up when she saw him.

Her: You were serious?

Hayden: I was, can I come in?

Her:Of course...

He walked inside and they shared a hug before he let her go.

Her:You seem to grow everyday...

Hayden:Unlike some people, I'm not stuck in the same place.

Her:Whatever Hayden. I made food, do you want to eat?

Hayden:I ate already...

They headed to the lounge area where she had papers spread out on the floor.

Hayden:Someone has been busy planning.

Her:And you might blow it idiot...what did you say to her kante?

Hayden:Just the leaving school part...

Her:She must be really sensitive...

Hayden smiled.

Hayden:You'll meet her Blair.

Blair:Finally he calls me by name..mxm..look at these pictures, which one is the right venue?

He looked at all of the pictures,picking the first one.

Hayden:What's the name of this place?

Blair:Pick Hayden.

He looked at all the pictures once again. Trying to make sure it was something Reginah would love.

Hayden:This one...

He picked up the photograph that had a garden

of roses.

Blair:Perfect, uhm...theme..urg since it's roses make her wear a pink dress...

Hayden:Okay.

Blair:And before that make sure you introduce us..you're keeping her in the dark.

Hayden:You don't know her, o pelwana thata and some things you need to approach them with caution around her.

Blair:Now o ngadisitse ngwetsi ya rona..mxm.

Hayden:She will be fine.

The door opened and a man who looked like Hayden's father stepped in. Blaire smiled. Finally her brother reunited them with their nephew. They knew Letty was evil but to keep an innocent boy from his father's family was also too low for her but it didn't matter now at

this point.

Hayden:Cane...

Cane:Hey son..what are you guys doing?

Blair:Ijoo, let me excuse myself. Hi and bye bro...

She walked away. Hayden couldn't believe that him meeting his father's lawyer three months ago led him to reconnecting with his uncle and aunt once again. The day his father went to jail it was like they disappeared too and he had never seen them ever since.

To know that his aunt was almost his girlfriend's age was crazy on it's own but he knew they will get on well, the hard part was telling her. Cane sat down and looked at Hayden. Hayden was the true replica of his older brother and he would do all that was well



in his power to guide him and be there for his brother's son.

Cane:Kana you didn't say exactly what was happening?

Hayden laughed.

Hayden:Well she doesn't have family..

Cane:You should've introduced us a month ago...

Hayden rubbed his head.

Hayden:Soon in a week or so.

Cane:And from what you've told me, keep her away from your mother..

Hayden:Trust me. I'm doing my best to keep her away from her. I don't trust her around Reginah..

Cane:You are your father's son through and through.

Hayden chuckled and checked his watch.

Hayden:I think I need to go. Tell Blair that I said bye and I'll call you guys when I come here with her.

Cane:Alright. Drive safely.

Hayden stood up and walked out while Cane smiled. His father would be proud. He might be young but he had that determination and ambition in his eyes. That Construction company was going to be a success and he loved that he wanted to build his own legacy instead of living off his father's.

Speaking of his father's legacy, he still had to sort that vile woman Letty out. It was an added advantage that her own son detested her and

he had given him full control of his father's company. Of course Hayden was still the major shareholder and he could do that.

It was enough to show Letty that she had played dirty and they can also play dirty. Just to avenge Kennedy. It was her fault that he was gone.

Blair walked out and sat on the couch.

Blair:Seeing Hayden makes me miss Ken.

Cane:Me too. He has no idea he is his father's son.

Blair:The dominance he exudes is definitely Ken's. Re tla gomotsega akere?

Cane:Mhmm...as young as he is he is even expecting...(laughing)

Blair:You would swear he is not 19. He is so

mature about it.

Cane:I have a feeling we should thank his girlfriend for that.

Blair:(laughing)Yep. She's a doctor akere?

Cane:Yes. Ga a sele sele hela..

Blair:Ija...I searched her up on facebook ebile, o montle gore..

Cane:He always says that...

Blair:Their kids will be beautiful and I will be a..a great aunt right?

He nodded. Blair was not going to stop talking.

## At the Hospital

Reginah rubbed her tummy as she made her way to Tessa's hospital room.

Her heart broke into tiny pieces at the sight of the little girl. She had gotten so weak over the past two months and with no donors popping up, it was hard to keep her stable at times.

She sat next to her bed and held her hand.

Reginah:Hey Tess...

Tessa's eyelids fluttered weakly as a small smile crept up on her tiny face.

Tessa:H-hi..

Reginah rubbed her hand.

Reginah:Don't speak angel, I came to check up on you.

Tessa gave Reginah a grateful look. Tears filled Reginah's eyes, she couldn't even begin to imagine how her parents are feeling.

Reginah:Angel just hold on okay?

Tessa nodded weakly.

Reginah:His plans are not our plans. He has kept you this far angel, keep fighting. Something will come up soon. I promise okay?

Tessa nodded before she closed her eyes. A tear rolled down Reginah's cheek as she looked at Tessa's frail body.

She quickly wiped it away with her thumb and kissed her forehead.

Reginah:I'll come by tomorrow angel...

She let go of Tessa's hand and looked at her. She walked out and Tessa just laid on the bed.

Grateful for the visit from the pretty doctor. She didn't even ask about the babies but she was sure they were fine.

Tessa's parents walked in shortly. Her mother held back tears. This was no longer their Theresa. She had lost all faith and it was getting hard each and every day to see their daughter like this.

Ra Tessa just held his wife's hand without saying a word.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*21\*

At Reginah's house

Reginah parked her car as her heart skipped a beat.

She sucked in a deep breath and got out of the car, making sure to lock it.

Trepidation set in as she walked to the door, well aware that he was back and she wasn't really supposed to drive herself anywhere because he wanted her to be safe at all times.

She opened the door and found Hayden sitting on the couch.



Hayden:Hey, you're calm now?

She nodded.

Hayden:Come sit here...

She sat down on the carpet between his legs as he he undid her tight bun, running his hands through her hair. She closed her eyes relaxing.

He kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:Let's continue our earlier conversation okay sugar?

She nodded yet again.

Hayden:I know you value education buttercup and I'm not disputing it's importance but I was just going through school. I don't have the

passion for it...

Reginah:I hear you, how did you get the funding?

He sighed.

Hayden:Remember that day I asked you to accompany me?

Reginah:You left me in the car..

Hayden:I was meeting with my father's lawyer, I signed the papers accepting all that he left me.

She craned her head at an angle to look at him.

Reginah:Wait what?

Hayden:I'm the sole heir of everything my father once owned. Including the company my mother is trying to run to the ground.

Reginah:Balance me here, you're rich?

Hayden:Seems like it..

Reginah:So you left school just like that?

Hayden:Not yet but I'm planning to..

Reginah:How will this work?

He took his time to lay out his business plan to her and he saw a part of her agreeing but she didn't want to show it.

Reginah sucked in a deep breath.

Reginah:But since you're into construction your course is fine..

Hayden:Civil engineering?

Reginah:Ee...since you're mr smarty panta you can also take a part time business course or an online one...combine those skills. Ka nako ya di holidays and stuff you can oversee everything at the company and take trips...How is that?

Hayden:I'll think about it..

Reginah:You really don't have to leave school, I mean it also increases your credibility in terms of you knowing what you're doing. Having worked in a construction company, being a civil engineer and knowing what the hell is supposed to be done. Being able to go through the company books because you studied business management and finance...It's a win win...

Hayden:You're smart you know that?

Reginah:I hope these babies will be smarter.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:There is more..

Reginah:o-k(unsure)

Hayden:I also reconnected with my uncle and aunt.

Her face lit up.

Reginah:That's nice. I'm happy for you..

There was also an underlying sad tone in her voice.

Hayden:You took it better than I expected. I thought you'll flip saying I kept it from you.

Reginah:Maybe you needed time to be sure about them, family is important and I'm glad you reconnected with them and have people in your corner.

Hayden:I also have you..You and those twins are my family too.

She smiled.

Reginah:Seems like the only family I'll ever have.

Hayden:You'll ever need. Don't be sad. I'm here to stay mami, don't doubt my love for you..

Reginah:I'm not..

He kissed her neck.

Hayden:I want to introduce you guys.

Reginah:What will they say when they know I'm older than you?

Hayden:They are not bothered by that, relax...

Reginah:Okay.

Hayden:And we talked about you driving yourself angel...

Reginah:It was for a good cause, you remember the little girl I told you about?

Hayden:Yes?

Reginah:Her health is deteriorating so rapidly and she is such a bright child(with tears in her eyes)There are no donors, it's just sad.

Hayden:Try not to worry about it my love, she will be okay.

Reginah:It's been a year of hoping and...

Hayden:Don't stress yourself, you'll stress the babies too..

He massaged her shoulders trying to calm her down.

At Masa's home

Masa looked at her pregnant tummy. She was five months along and everyday at school she would hear the harsh whispers.

Even Letso had joined in on the gossip and at some point she felt like the walls were closing in on her. Her family had accepted it and the fact that her mother had blatantly refused for her to abort was also another issue.

She said she could've thought about pregnancy the moment she opened her legs for men so there was no child of hers who was doing an abortion.

She looked at her tablets and shook her head. At least she will give birth before the University opens right? That way she can be more serious with life and do what needs to be done.

The question was who was her baby daddy? She went to the calendar and checked the day of possible conception.

She went through her contact list and paused on the name. Maybe she was wrong. He was a dangerous man and...



She bit her lower lip and placed her phone away. She opened her biology notebook and studied for the following day's paper 3 biology exam.

Ra Masa stood by the door and he watched her studying. He was disappointed but he hoped she learn her lesson and that she will do well in her exams.

He opened the door wider and and Masa took off her reading glasses. The ones she never wore outside the confinements of their house because she didn't want people to think she was a nerd. To them she wanted to be 'that girl'

Ra Masa:Come sit here.

She stood up and sat next to her dad.

He hugged her and the tears flowed.

Masa:I swear dad, I will never repeat the same mistake.

Ra Masa:Just study okay?(sighing)I won't say you made a mistake because what you did was a conscious decision but you learn from your wrongs right?

She nodded.

Ra Masa:Don't stress and study, you are left with only a few weeks to be done with your BGCSE.

He held her in the quietness of the room.

At Letso's House

Letso went through her socials and paused when she saw Hayden's picture with a lady. She was wearing scrubs and he had hid her eyes with his hands.

She hated to admit that he was good looking but now she was focused on studying law and finding a white man abroad.

They seemed like they wouldn't stress her too much.

Out of curiosity since she was done studying she went through Masa's profile with her fake account. She hadn't posted anything in a while. Everyone in school knew she was pregnant and they called her a whore.

She smiled. Relieved that she had disconnected

herself from such negative energy. Imagine being associated with such at a crucial time.

She used to be lost shem. She tried to find the pictures Masa used to post of them together but there were none. It was just her profile picture and cover photo. She was really being scarce but that didn't change the fact that she was a whore..

She shook her head. She wasn't even sure if she was going to pass her exams. Pregnancy and school were never a good combination in most cases.

.

.

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*22\*

At Reginah's house

Reginah laughed holding onto Hayden's shoulders.

Reginah:You're too tall..

Hayden:Step on my feet.

Reginah:Be careful..

Hayden held her phone in one hand changing the current song playing as she held onto his torso for balance. He placed his chin on top of her head still scrolling through the playlist looking for a better song. He paused and

clicked on the song..

It started playing through the speakers and she smiled blushing

Reginah:Wow!

Hayden:You're not tired are you?(softly)

Reginah:Nope..

He wrapped his arms around her bulging waist as Tresor's Sondela played.

He lifted her head looking into her eyes.

Hayden:I love you okay?

He kissed her soft lips briefly as he moved holding her.

They danced with small intimate smiles in between and sweet kisses, maintaining eye

contact. Who would've thought this young man here would make her happy.

Hayden: I just wanted you to know my smile belongs to you

Sondela kumi

He sang along as she smiled...

They just connected with no words uttered. The song ended and Soa Matrix's Uthando played next.

She held him tightly and he smiled kissing her head.

Hayden:What are you going to name them?

Reginah:If we're having a girl and a boy...uhm you'll name the boy..The girl I would go with

Avery Cersise Smith.

Hayden: Cerise? Isn't that a colour?

Reginah: It is this nice shade of pink yeah..

Hayden: Weird..but what is she hates pink?

Reginah: She would have to love the colour..

Hayden: o tlo ntshwenyetsa bana wena (You're going to give my kids a hard time)

She laughed placing her head on his chest.

Reginah: If the other twin is a boy what are you naming him?

Hayden: Smith Hayden Jr..

Reginah: Ema pele...he is going to use your first name as his last?

Hayden: Both of them..

Reginah: Let me see if it's nice. Avery Cerise Hayden..(she paused) Avery Cerise Smith...



She looked at him.

Reginah:Nope...use Smith...Use Smith...your name is pretty but as a last name it doesn't cut it.

Hayden:We'll see who wins in the end.

Reginah:I'm the one carrying these two for nine months so you Mr Smith better listen to me.

Hayden:Whatever sugar. Did I tell you my aunt and uncle's names?

Reginah:You actually didn't.

Hayden:Cane and Blair Smith.

Reginah:Blair? It sounds familiar.

Hayden:Does it?

Reginah:Yeah..

The next morning

Reginah moaned softly as Hayden made slow love to her pregnant body. He was so gentle with her and made sure she enjoyed each and every stroke he gave her.

Reginah:I- aaah...mh...

He french kissed her as she became undone under him. He followed shortly before pulling out.

He bit her lower lip.

Hayden:Morning angel.

She blushed under his intense gaze.

Reginah:M-morning..

He rolled to the side before pulling her to him. He wasn't willing to lose her over anything and as odd as it may seem, he genuinely loved her. Heck, he was even ready to settle down with her.

At School

Masa pulled down her jersey as she sat down on the desk. She opened her biology notebook, spilling the revision papers in the middle onto the cold floor.

Flustered, she bent down to pick the papers and placed them back on the desk. She looked around and saw Letso with her study buddies looking at her and laughing out loud.

Tears blurred her vision and she looked down at the papers and dusted them. She opened the first page as the whispers got louder.

Girl 1: She doesn't know her baby daddy does she?

Letso: Nope. Jang tota? Ijoo let's read guys, biga e bonolo.

Girl 2:Must..

They went back to their whispering as a tear fell on Masa's paper. She used her hands to quickly wipe her tears away and sucked in a deep breath. Silently praying the paper won't be hard and she will be able to score good marks. A B would suffice at this point.

Meanwhile Letso stole a glance at Masa whose eyes were glued onto her book. She rolled her eyes as she discussed some practice questions with her study mates, cracking jokes here and there.

Later that day

Masa walked alone from the school tuckshop

with her head down when she bumped into Letso and her pie fell down.

Masa:Oh sorry...

Letso:Watch where you're going..

Masa:Er mma.

She walked away and paused looking at the pie on the ground. It was useless now, she sighed. She never knew a person could change this much. The Letso she knew was down to earth but this one was too prideful and she didn't have the energy to address it, they were no longer that close. Letso had made sure of that.

Girl:Sorry..excuse me..(running towards Masa)

Masa paused and looked at the girl, silently praying she wasn't one of those people who was going to humiliate her. It was bad she

disappointed her parents but now everyone was talking about her.

Girl:Hi, Tilly...

Masa:H-hi..I don't think I know you..

Tilly:You don't but full name is Matilda anyhow I saw what she did..

Masa:What who did?

Tilly:Letso..

Well everyone knew Letso, she was always in the top ten and was the best student in English Literature.

Masa:Probably exam stress..

Tilly rolled her eyes.

Tilly:Pie..let's go buy that pie hmm...

Masa:It's okay, I'm not that hungry.

Tilly:From now on we are friends hmm?

Masa:ijoo(laughing)You don't even know my name.

Tilly:O tla mpoella akere..

Masa:Masa.

Tilly:Okay, let's go mma. Tla ga o re swela o sa ja..(You might die on us if you don't eat)

Masa laughed following her back to the tuckshop, where Matilda purchased two pies and two juice cans. She gave Masa one of each and looked around for shade.

Tilly:There are chairs that side, Bio e kwalwa ka 2 akere?

Masa:Ee...

They headed in that direction and sat down.

Tilly:If I could make it past these exams hela..

Masa:Stress in top of stress...

Tilly:What course where you thinking of?

Masa sighed and leaned back, she was feeling hot but she would never remove the jersey. Everyone was going to look at her bump and it was surprising that Tilly didn't mention it.

Masa:Bachelor of Science in Financial Engineering..

Tilly:Yoh. Fancy course. Owai nna yoo, I was thinking of nursing(laughing)I love hospitals and I'm not that bright to study Pharmacy or even Medicine so yah..

Masa:I also thought I'm not bright but you can surprise yourself you know...

Tilly shrugged.

Tilly:Pure sciences are torture yoh.

Masa:Two weeks left..

Tilly:I like you.

Masa:I'm a bad influence..



Tilly:I'm a bad influence too(laughing)eat up  
mma...

Masa:Thank you.

Tilly:Everyone deserves a little bit of kindness...

Masa shook her head with a smile.

.

.

A few days later

Forever&Always

\*23\*

At School

Tilly took Masa's bag from her and walked out  
of the school with her.

Tilly:Your dad is coming to pick you up?

Masa:Mmhmm..let's wait by the gate and thank you.

Tilly:It's nothing. Maths was hard.

Masa:Not really.

Tilly:smarty pants.

Masa:Whatever..

A car stopped and Masa's dad rolled down the window.

Masa:Bye and see you tomorrow.

Tilly:Byyyyy!

Masa took her bag and walked to the car, opening the passenger door.

Masa:Dumelang!

Ra Masa:Hello, how was your day?

Masa:Good I guess...

Ra Mass:Maths?

Masa:It was okay. Maybe ke tla tswa ka sengwe..

Ra Masa:Okay..

He handed her chips and chicken and she smiled.

Masa:Thank you.

He nodded and drove off.

At Reginah's house

Hayden tied her hair then he let it fall down again.

Reginah:Stop it, let me do it..

She picked a ribbon and tied her hair into a puff, as her cat eye like eyes became more apparent. She wore her earrings and smiled.

Reginah:Done...I'm nervous.

Hayden:Don't be...There is still more family from my father's side but just get to know my aunt and uncle. As time goes on we will meet the other relatives.

Reginah:Batho I hope they don't judge me and say I'm after your money.

Hayden:They are not my mother. Babe you're a whole doctor, you work for your own money. Stand up and turn around..

He helped her stand on her feet and turned her around.

Hayden:I have a hot baby mama. Damn I'm lucky.

Reginah:Stop it..

He held her waist and kissed her lips.

Hayden:A quick one.

Reginah:Let's go, we might be late...

Hayden sighed and held her waist leading her out of the bedroom.

At the office

Letty looked at the computer scree and sighed. It was useless being here when she couldn't access the finances. At this point she knew Hayden was angry at her for what she did to Reginah but she still stood her ground. She

didn't want that woman for her son, Hayden would come around.

No one can be angry at their parents for this long, it was just a stage. He was eventually going to forgive her once he realized the truth himself.

The office door opened and her secretary walked in.

Ms Smith:What it is?

Her:Tomorrow morning there is an emergency shareholder meeting.

Ms Smith:What? Why am I knowing about it now? And who called th meeting without my permission?

Her:I just got the memo, apparently the shaereholders...

Ms Smith ran her hands through her hair in worry. She didn't know why the meeting was called and she was unprepared too.

Ms Smith: Thank you...

Her secretary walked out and she leaned back.

At Cane's house

Hayden parked his car and held Reginah's hand.

Hayden: Ready? Calm?

Reginah: Yes...

He got out of the car first and walked to her side opening the door for her. He was leaving in three days so he had to make sure she hot her

surprise too.

They held hands and he locked the door. The two walked to the door and Hayden knocked.

Blair opened the door with a huge ass smile.

Blair:Hiiii..(in a squeaky voice)

Reginah:Hello..

Hayden:Aren't you going to let us in Doll?

Blair rolled her eyes.

Blair:We have a guest. Don't mind him(to Reginah)

She just smiled.

Reginah:Already used to him.

They both walked inside and sat down next to each other.

Blair:uhm Cane will be here in a few hours, he is still sorting a few things out.



Hayden:Got it. Babe this is Blair, Blair this is....

He looked at her and smiled.

Hayden:My lifeline...

Blair smiled and Reginah blushed.

Reginah:You're being cheesy..

Blair:Nice to meet you lifeline...

Reginah:Mxm, the name is Reginah..(she looked at Hayden)

Blair:You're beautiful.

Reginah:Thank you.

Blair:Serious. You're not even trying..

Hayden:What do you want to eat?(whispering in her ear)

Reginah:Anything I guess...

Blair watched them for a few seconds. There

was nothing forced and of you didn't know their ages you would swear Hayden is the older one between the two. It was so open and transparent. She couldn't wait with the surprise he had asked her to plan.

Hayden walked out leaving the two ladies in the room.

Blair:So...I've heard you're a doctor.

Reginah wanted to tuck her hair behind her ear when she realised it was in a puff and she placed her hands down on her lap.

Reginah:I actually am..

Blair:And how did you end up with him?

Hayden stuck his head out from the kitchen.

Hayden:Don't tell her babe, dikgang tsa batho Blair..

Reginah:Let's say it's complicated. In a good

way though.

Blair:Now I won't get the juicy information because he said so..

Hayden:You're not squeezung information out of my girlfriend when I'm here(laughing)

Blair:Tsamaela koo. Are you expectkng a girl or a boy?

Reginah:We wanted the gender to be a surprise, so ga re itse tota.

The door opened and Cane stepped in. He paused, taking in the new pretty face. Wow. She was beautiful in person.

Blair looked at her brother as he sucked in a breath looking at Reginah.

Cane>Hello...(softly)

Reginah:Hi...

Hayden walked out of the kitchen just holding a bowl of icecream for her.

Regianh smiled taking the bowl from him looking into his eyes.

She looked down and moved the spoon in the bowl.

Hayden:Hello...babe this is my uncle Cane and Cane this is Reginah.

Cane:Nice to meet you.

Reginah:Likewise...

At Letso's house

Letso's finger hovered over Masa's number and she unblocked it. She decided to take a risk and

she called her.

The phone rang for a few minutes before she answered.

Masa:Hello?

Letso:Hi...

Masa:Ke bua le mang?(who am I talking to?)

Letso sighed. She deleted her number or was she playing dumb?

Letso:Ke Letso.

Masa:Hi Letso. I don't think you should be talking to me, I'm a bad influence over your life and I wouldn't want to taint your bright future. Just keep my number blocked like you have done over the past few months. No hard feelings right? Enjoy your life and all the best in your exams.

Before she could respond, Masa had already hung up. She tried her phone but it didn't go through this time.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

My apologies. I fell asleep. Rest bafethu! Rest!  
Rest!

Forever&Always

\*24\*

At Cane's house

Reginah laughed as they retold stories from when Hayden was younger with his father still present.

She pinched his cheek and he swatted her hand off.

Reginah: Bathong o setouto gore...

Blaire: Look at him now..

Reginah smiled. They were cool. Really cool. She noticed that Ms Smith wasn't mentioned and she didn't want to enquire about that and spoil the moment.

She placed both her hands on the couch and stood up.

Reginah:Where is the bathroom?

Blaire quickly stood up.

Blaire:Let me go show you..

Reginah:Thanks.

The two left and left the men in the room and Hayden leaned back looking at his uncle.

Cane:She is beautiful..

Hayden:She really is, I would kill for her.

Cane looked at Hayden again who wasn't smiling when he said that. He didn't have any doubt about that.

Cane:A-as you should.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:Yep. So about tomorrow's meeting...



Just like that the two men started talking about business and finance. He explained to his uncle that he is not about to freeze his sponsorship anytime soon even though the company will be running. His Construction Company wasn't known but he was giving it approximately five years to bag in deals worth over half a million. He knew what he was doing and the mere fact that he had secured office space, started to reconstruct that office space to fit his liking.

At Masa's place

She closed her accounting exercise book and went to Facebook. She blocked Letso from viewing her profile so she wasn't going to see anything.

When a person shows you their true colours, you should best believe them and run if they aren't the colour you expect.

She paused and went to the search bar searching up her possible baby daddies. The fact that she wasn't even sure who impregnated her was frustrating.

She tried to jog her memory. Three different men in a span of a week. After this she is staying away from men, she was stupid and  
urg....

She picked up the scan and started counting days looking at her calendar.

She stopped at a particular date, paused then

stood up to go look for her diary in the wardrobe.

She picked the diary and went to the date on her diary. There was a possibility of it not being accurate but she must just trust her gut feeling. She read the entry on that exact date.

'Dear Masa's Diary

Today was one wild day. I was out with this guy, apparently he is dangerous and all but he liked me. He resembled my then crush and well I thought my eyes were deceiving me..'

She stopped reading and sucked in a deep breath. The past three months have been peaceful but she hoped they won't flip this time. She crossed her fingers and closed her books.

She walked out of the room and went to the lounge where her parents were sitting. She sat down and her mother looked at her.

Ma Masa: You're done studying? You want food?

She shook her head.

Ma Masa: Talk to us then or you also want to watch tv?

She smiled a bit. They have been nothing but supportive and she didn't want to have to disappoint them the second time around.

Masa: I think I know who impregnated me.

Her father squinted his eyes looking at her as

her mother raised a perfect eyebrow.

At Cane's place

Hayden: Thank you guys for having us, I think we should get going.

Blair: Please do come again.

Reginah: I'll try.

Cane: Have a safe journey.

Hayden: Sure will, bye.

He fist bumped with his uncle and hugged Blair.

Blair hugged Reginah.

Blair: I'm coming over for lunch (whispering)

Reginah chuckled with a little smile on her face.

Reginah: Of course, I'll send the

address(whispering back)

Hayden looked at the two ladies whispering back and forth.

Hayden:Yoh, Blair...

Blair:Possessive much..

Blair let go of Reginah and smiled.

Cane:Don't forget and don't let him be late(looking at Reginah)

She blinked in confusion but nodded.

Reginah:Okay. Go siame bathong.

Hayden held her waist and they stepped out of the house heading to the car.

Reginah:Your family is nice gore.

Hayden:You three deserve family hmm..(kissing her cheek)

Reginah:Thank you.

Hayden:I need a proper thank you(holding her hand and placing it over his boner)

She quickly removed her hand giggling.

Reginah:Mxm. Ija!

Hayden:So pretty lady you're gonna have to do much better than a simple thank you.

Reginah:You're always horny..

Hayden:Who wouldn't be? I mean look at you(softly kissing her lips)

Reginah:Mxm. I love you okay?(placing her hand on his cheek)

Hayden smirked.

Hayden:O ratwa ke nna. My very own Dr Smith..  
She just shook her head.

Reginah:Let's go, I want to lie down but before  
that I want a full body massage.

Hayden:You like demanding for stuff mme o  
gana ka ditsame..

Reginah:A ko o nne o itshwara.

Hayden:Let's go Dr Smith..

He held her waist leading her to the car.

At Masa's home

Her parents silently listened to Masa as she  
told them what she suspected. They were way  
past the being angry stage and at this point  
they weren't shook.



Masa stopped talking and looked at her parents who were silently looking back at her. Her father had a blank expression and her mother's eyes showed disappointment but she had relented and by the looks of things she wasn't sure about their response.

Ra Masa:O sure?

She nodded with a pounding heart. Her father sighed.

Ra Masa:I need a stiff drink.

Her mother quickly stood up and headed to the kitchen where she opened the cabinet and the freezer. She took out a glass, whiskey and ice.

She prepared his drink and went back to the lounge, handing it to him.

He drank the whole glass in seconds and placed it on the table.

Ra Masa:We'll send a letter then...

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*25\*

At The Hospital

Tessa laid on her back as she gasped for breath. At that exact that moment she saw her life flashing before her eyes. There was no one in the dark hospital room and she swore she was about to take her last breath.

She gurgled on blood as it leaked from her mouth. She knew her heart had holes and blood couldn't circulate well. At this point she was about to close her eyes when the door opened abruptly. She tried to keep her teary eyes open and the nurse rushed to the bed as the machines beeped loudly. She took her last breath, saying a silent prayer of thanks.

"Tessa! Tessa!"

She opened her eyes as her parents shook her. It was all just a dream. All just a dream. She blinked and her mother wiped her tears away.

Ma Tessa:How are you baby?(panicked)

Tessa breathed heavily through the machines looking at her mother. That dream was scary and the thought of dying hurt her. She coughed as her mother helped her sit upright.

Ra Tessa at this point didn't know how to react. They took each day as it came.

Tessa held the sheets tightly, still startled by her very terrible nightmare. It seemed as if death was looming in the shadows. It wasn't as bright as it used to be, her faith was slowly running out if faith could run out.

More tears ran down her cheeks as she weakly placed her hand over her malfunctioning heart. Ma Tessa's lips quivered as she saw the hopelessness in Tessa's big eyes. They were no longer that bright and she couldn't bear to see her daughter in that condition.

How can they be strong? She was tired of being strong. She couldn't be strong. She silently walked out with her hand over her mouth and as soon as she walked out of the hospital room, she broke down into tears.

Ra Tessa just held his older daughter's hand without saying a thing. They had run out of reassuring words to say and it was just going to look deceitful if they said all will be well when clearly the odds were against them.

The following morning

At Letso's house

Letso grabbed an apple as she walked out of the house with her backpack. She was going to catch a taxi to school and study.

They had an early group study session and she was sure she was going to ace that test. She made her way to the taxi stop and waited. More than ten minutes passed with no taxi in sight.

Meanwhile Masa sat next to her dad in the car. He has been silent ever since she told him last night. She had expected him to call her a disappointment, a solid reaction but she got nothing.

They passed by the stop and she saw Letso.  
Her father looked at her.

Ra Masa:Is that Letso?

Masa:Yes(low voice)

He reversed his car.

Ra Masa:She's your friend right?

Masa:Not anymore...

He looked at her.

Masa:It's a long story. You can pick her up,  
most probably ga gona di taxi and she might be  
late. Wouldn't want the bright child to fail her  
exams would we?

Her father could hear the sarcasm and he

parked by the side of the road. He rolled down the window and looked at Letso.

Letso:Dumelang(respectfully)

Ra Masa:Hello my child, get in..

Letso:Thank you..

Letso got inside and sat next to Masa who moved to the window and stared outside.

Letso:Hi.

Masa ignored her as her father silently drove them to school. Once they arrived Letso thanked Masa's dad once again as she stepped out.

Masa:Bye dad and have a nice day.

Masa finally said as she stepped out holding



her bag. It was a bit heavy but she was a student first before she got herself in this predicament.

Letso waited for Masa.

Letso:We can walk together to class...

Masa sighed.

Masa:We are no longer friends Letso. Stay away from me...

And just like that Masa walked away, dragging her swollen feet to the school gate where their bags were searched before they could head to their classes.

Somehow it felt weird when Masa gave her the cold shoulder. Letso shrugged. Besides it's not like she is that smart. Most probably because

she cut her off first and now she wants to seem better than her.

Masa arrived in class and immediately Tilly dragged her chair to her desk.

Tilly:Hello you..

Masa:Hey..How was your night?

Tilly:Ngi me stress(holding her head in her hand)

Masa:You and me both..

Tilly:Stress is not good for the baby...(raising an eyebrow)can I feel the baby kick?

Masa laughed covering her mouth.

Masa:She kicks sometimes..

Tilly:It's a she(clapping her hands)Congratulations sis...So I'm going to be a godmother..Uh..just like makgoa gotwe my

godson my goddaughter..

Masa:wa peka waitse..

Tilly:Did you eat?

Masa:Mhmm...mom sometimes forces food down my throat kana..Anyhow let's study...

Theu got busy before Letso and her study buddies walked in class. Letso stole a glance at Masa who was tapping the pencil on the paper with a smile as Tilly said something. She replaced her like that? What a friend she was...

At Reginah's place

Reginah stretched her body as she yawned. Her muscles were less tense and she was revitalized. Hayden's hands did their job and he had to sex her. He just had to.

Hayden walked out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his torso. She looked at his tattoos.

Reginah:Why tattoos?

Hayden:Morning sugar..

Reginah:Morning(softly)

Hayden:How was your sleep? I hope they weren't troubling you sweetness...

Reginah:Not at all. Thank you..

He made his way to the bed and french kissed her lips, tilting her head forward.

He slightly bent over the bed kissing her much more deeply. He broke the kiss and looked into her eyes with a small smile.

Hayden:Have I told you that I love you?

She nodded and he pecked her lips, straightening up.

He watched her walk away to the wardrobe where he went through the clothes there.

Hayden:Babe?

Reginah placed her hands over her tummy.

Reginah:Hmm?

Hayden:Are all the clothes here ironed?

Reginah:Yes..Are you looking for anything? I can help you look for it..

He looked at her with a smile. She was literally everything and more. Who would've guessed...

Reginah:Wa kae?

Hayden:A certain meeting my love..

Reginah:You could've told me and I would've made breakfast for you..

Hayden:You don't have to. Just rest, I'll be back in two hours..

Reginah:All the best Mr Smith..

Hayden:Thank you Dr Smith..

She watched him get dressed as he casually wore those black pants and a white shiry. He tucked it in lightly and he didn't even button it up.

Reginah:You look hot..

He chuckled.

Hayden:If my lady says I'm hot then I must be hella fine..(smirking)

He combed his hair and sprayed his cologne sparingly letting the strong masculine scent linger in the air.

He made his way to the bed where she was still laying down.

Hayden:I love you guys okay?

He rubbed her tummy and kissed her neck, she inhaled his scent.

Hayden:When I come back, you should be out of bed and you should've taken a bath babe. I'm not debating..

Reginah:I'm tired...

Hayden:It's not healthy to be in bed the whole day sugar...(kissing her cheek)ok?

Reginah:Haydenn!

Hayden:I wasn't discussing it sweetness..

Reginah:Smith!!

Hayden:Don't Smith me Dr Smith. You should've taken a bath by the time I come back..

Reginah:Fine..

Hayden:You like being a big baby..I love you.

Reginah:I love you...

He french kissed her lips one more time before he straightened up and made his way to the door.

The minute he walked out Reginah closed her eyes and fell into another bout of sleep.

.

.

\*



\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*27\*

At Reginah's house

She walked out of the bathroom and found a dress on the bed.

Reginah:Oh..

It was kind of cute but what was the occasion?

Hayden stepped in the room and smiled.

Hayden:Get dressed. I'll be in the lounge.

Just like that he walked out leaving her in the bedroom.

She sat down and started applying lotion to her nude body.

Meanwhile there was a door knock and Hayden went to open thw door.

Blair:Move Smith, we don't have time..

She walked in followed by three more ladies. The ladies greeted Hayden and Blair rolled her eyes.

Blair:Girls we don't have time. The good Dr needs to be dolled up. Smith which room is it?

He gave her directions.

Blair:Go knock on that door and she shouldn't leave that room till she is beautiful.

Hayden:She better be...

Blair:Trust your aunt little one..

She said holding his shoulder and he chuckled. The make up ladies took one last glance at Hayden. He was like those men who graced magazine covers and for sure the lady is lucky to have such.

They made their way to Reginah's bedroom while Blair sat down with Hayden.

Blair:Does she know how lucky she is?

Hayden:I'm the lucky one in this case....

Blair:Ncoaah...

Hayden:Shut up!

Blair:I can't wait to be an aunt...

Hayden:Who would've thought I would be here like a year later?

Blair:She doesn't know it's more than just a photoshoot right?

Hayden:She doesn't even know there is a photoshoot.

Blair:You're full of surprises Hayden.

Hayden:Doll, you should know me better than that.

Blair laughed as they continued talking.

Reginah went to open the door as she tied her robe loosely over her bump. She frowned when three ladies walked inside the room.

Reginah:I-I...

Lady 1:Hello mam, we came to do your makeup..

Reginah:Make up?

Lady 2:And hair...

Reginah walked to the dressing table and dialed Hayden's number.

Reginah:Babe...

She rubbed her tummy as she talked to him.

Hayden:Are you done?

Reginah:Who are these people?

Hayden:They came to doll you up sugar...Hand the lady the phone sweetheart..

She did so.

Hayden:Make sure she walks out of that room looking like a princess..

Lady 1:Yes sir.

Hayden:Hand her the phone.

Reginah:Where are we going?

Hayden:Let them do their job angel okay? I love you..

He hung up and she sighed sitting down.

The third lady looked at her dress and at the others.

Lady 3:Should she get dressed first?

Lady 1:I think so...Let's help her get into the dress then start on her hair and make up.

Reginah sat down on the bed as one of the ladies took the dress and inspected it throughly to see if it was fine.

Lady 1:Let's get started mam...

At the office

Cane walked inside the office that was his. He found Letty relaxed on the chair and he chuckled.

Cane:Sister in law we meet again..

Ms Smith:You bastard..

Cane:I know. I know...

Ms Smith:You poisoned my son against me. He will change his decision and how the hell does he know he is the major shareholder?

Cane laughed. The kind of evil laugh that gave someone goosebumps and not the good kind of goosebumps.

Cane:You underestimate your son. He is much more smarter than you think. He knew all along, I didn't even tell him...

Ms Smith:You're lying...le tswa go mo lowa akere Iona Babirwa?

Cane laughed and held his chest in mock pain.

Cane:Bitterness makes you look ugly sis...

Ms Smith:I'm not your sister..

Cane:Well you are right about that. Family doesn't stab each other's backs and I don't keep such as family..Should I call security to escort you out?

Ms Smith:Hayden would never do this to me. I am his mother it's all your fault. It's that witch's



fault(screaming)

Cane:Now, now don't cause a scene..

Ms Smith:I will get you for this. It is not over.  
Not by a long shot...

She grabbed her bag and left the room. Cane sighed and walked to the desk. He slipped his hands in his pockets and looked at the view.

He was steps away from making the Smith legacy great again. Well not entirely him. The brains of everything was still busy but he was coming along just fine.

Cane:The Smith dynasty will rise from the ashes again...

He gave an evil smile as the bright sun shone towards the glass window.

At Reginah's house

Hayden tapped his shoe impatiently as Blair went through posts on Facebook.

Blair:She will be done. Trust me tlhe...

Hayden:I do..

Minutes later the make up ladies made their way to the lounge.

Lady 1:We're done..

Blair:Okay..I think we'll take it from here.

Hayden:Wait...I need to see that they did their jobs.

Blair:Be my guest...

Hayden stood up and made his way to the bedroom. He stopped by the door.

Hayden:Babe should I come in?

Reginah:Yes sir...

He opened the door and stepped right inside. He paused and looked at her once, twice and the third time.

He put his fist in his mouth in disbelief. Reginah looked at him then at herself in the mirror and she fluttered her eyelashes. She had never had artificial eyelashes before because she relied on her natural beauty and if she did make up it was just mascara.

Hayden looked at her once more and sucked in

a breath. Damn!

Reginah:You're out of words?

He knew she was a stunner but the make up and how they styled her hair made her look like a princess. Literally. The dress didn't make it any better. Well she was the Queen of his castle but damn her.

He walked to her and helped her stand on her feet.

Hayden:My real life princess..(softly)Fuck!  
You're gorgeous my love.

Reginah:Thank you..

He maintained eye contact with her and she blushed and looked away.

Hayden:I love you..Now I feel under dressed...look at you..

He held her at arm's length and twirled her around as she laughed.

Reginah:Stoop!(giggling)

Hayden:I love you did you know that?

Reginah:Yess...

He pulled her to him and held her close.

Hayden:I promise you that I won't hurt you..

Reginah:I didn't know you could make me so happy...

Hayden:You changed me(chuckling)I still remember you saying that I should look at you like a sister..

Reginah laughed.

Hayden:I mean princess, I liked you and I always

get what I want...

Reginah:Mxm..

Hayden:Don't forget that I will love you to eternity.

Reginah:Don't make promises you can't keep...

Hayden:I mean it..You're my forever and always Regie...

She placed her head on his chest and he looked at her.

Reginah:Relax. It's waterproof..I love you Mr Smith..

He indulged in the moment and held her close, kissing the top of her head.

.

.

\*

\*

For a bonus insert today please give this post 2k likes, 100 shares and a 100 comments. I think you need this bonus but then again it's up to you † ♀

Forever&Always

\*28\*

At Reginah's house

He broke the hug and kissed her lips softly before he rubbed his lips to wipe the lipstick off.

Hayden:We should get going sugar..

Reginah:Where are we going?

Hayden:It's a surprise okay my love...

Reginah:Today is full of surprises. Ga ka lebala..

Hayden cocked an eyebrow.

Reginah:My chocolates duh..

Hayden:Heish..

Reginah:I want them mestah..

Hayden:Ee mma..

Hayden and Reginah walked into the lounge and Blair was gone. So she left. His phone vibrated in his pocket.

Doll:The driver will be there in five. I left to go check on the final touches. I'm the best photographer so duh, I'll take the photos..uhm...what else? Yeah the food is cool. Your surprise is also going to be documented



so we're set my guy..

He slipped the phone back in his pockets.

Hayden:Let me go get the chocolate for you  
hmm..

Reginah:There is chocolate in the house?

Hayden:Yeah. It's out of reach for you.

Reginah:Boloi H.

Hayden laughed making his way to the kitchen where he opened the cupboard and took a slab of chocolate from the top shelf.

Reginah stayed put rubbing her tummy while she moved her legs up and down looking at her nice sandals.

Hayden:Tshwara..(handing her the chocolate)

Reginah:E one?

Hayden:Are you taking it or leaving it?

Reginah:I'll take it...

She took it from him and opened the foil. She grinned as she took a bite from the chocolate.

Hayden:E je sentle..(eat it properly)

Reginah:Tswa mo go nna(leave me alone)

Hayde :Whatever that floats your boat pretty lady.

While she ate the chocolate Hayden blocked Reginah from seeing his posts on Facebook and he started posting little hints on his timeline.

He placed his phone down when there was a

door knock.

He went to get the door and the chauffeur greeted him.

Hayden:Babe?

She stopped biting and looked at him.

Reginah:Yes?

Hayden:We have to go..

Reginah:Okay.

She got up before looking at him.

Reginah:Let me go get my phone. Do I need a purse?

Hayden:Nope..

She made her way to the bedroom and came back minutes later pressing her phone. She took his phone as they walked out of the house.

Reginah: Oh my flippin gosh! You h-hired a car.  
My dream car?

Hayden: I kind of did...

The chauffeur opened the door for both of them and Hayden helped Reginah get inside the car before he sat next to her.

Hayden fixed her seatbelt and his before placing his hand on her thigh and pressed his phone. He went through the comments and chuckled looking at Regie who had no idea about what was happening.

He read his earlier Facebook post where he had posted her smiling in pink scrubs before she got pregnant.

"Dr Smith       "

He read the comments on the post and laughed.

Comment 1:Hee are you sure you're 19? Or you're playing with us?

Comment 2:Shiid! Nnyaa mme ke ene bathong..

Comment 3: Le ba sela ha kae?

Comment 4: What's her name bathong?

Comment 5:Shawty his lil boo thing..she is cute aah.. My gee

He looked at Regie before he uploaded another Facebook status of both their hands on her tummy.

" † ♀Nothing but stress here "

He placed his phone down and looked at her.

Reginah:O ntibile eng?(why are you looking at

me?)

Hayden:Just..

Reginah:Ijah.

He kissed her cheek as she pushed him away laughing.

Hayden:Gatweng neh...

Reginah:Tswa mo go nna..

He face palmed laughing.

At Ms Smith's house

She parked her car and just placed her head on the steering wheel. Everything just crumbled. Just like that.

It's like her life is remote controlled and one minute she had it all the next she lost it all. How?

She had everything figured out. The money, the riches, her son was misbehaving but he still considered her as his mother but now he was a stranger to her.

She didn't wrong him. So why? She closed her eyes before she opened them again. It must be Reginah. Ever since she started to date her young son everything went south from there...no wonder she hated her.

Even her being pregnant didn't even move her. Not at all. She will find a way to get it all and be at the top again. This wasn't the last of her and Cane better not think he won. She will avenge herself. Soon.

At the venue

The car parked and the chauffeur opened the door for the lovely couple.

Hayden stepped out first and helped the lovely lady to get out of the car.

Reginah:Where are we?

Hayden:Somewhere...come..

He held her hand leading her through the small gate of the mysterious venue.

Hayden:Close your eyes sugar.

Reginah:Okay.



He just walked behind her and placed his hands over her eyes. She inhaled his cologne.

Reginah:You smell good.

Hayden:I know babe.

Reginah:Mxm..

Hayden:Keep walking...

He slowly guided her and he was surprised himself when he looked at the whole setup. Blair had really gone all out. It was something for the books.

He stopped still keeping his hands over her eyes.

Reginah:Can I open my eyes?

Hayden:In a minute. You know that I love you right?

Reginah:Yes..

Hayden:And you're important in my life right?

Reginah:what's going on?(worried)

Hayden:You know that right?

Reginah:Yes babe...

He removed his hands and she opened her eyes. They nearly popped out of their sockets as tears blurred her eyes and she looked up to not let the tears fall.

Reginah:Oh my God!

Hayden:Babe..

She looked around noticing the way they made nature look so beautiful with the pick aesthetic accentuated by the pink roses and they got her dressed in pink.

The chairs that had itty bits of flowers and the gorgeous table setting...

She paused and looked at the green grass. There were petals on the ground too and they seemed to spell out something. She walked towards the pink petals as Hayden slipped his hands in his pockets.

Reginah:Will you m-oh my God!(with a shaky voice)

Hayden:Read it all...

Reginah fanned her face as her heart beat erratically in her chest.

Reginah:Wi-will you m-marry me?

She turned around and found the 19 year old who literally had his hands in his hands on his

knees holding a ring.

She so badly wanted to sob. This was too much.

Hayden:Will you?

She covered her mouth crying, unaware of Blair who had been taking photos ever since they stepped in the area..

Hayden looked at her as more tears streamed down her cheeks. She didn't know what to say.

She sucked in a deep breath and extended her hand nodding her head.

Hayden:Yes(punching the air)

He slipped the ring on her finger before

standing up and holding her close.

Hayden: Thank you...

Reginah: Y-you didn't have t-to do all the-  
se(crying) Anything simple would've been okay...

Hayden: Wa lla?

Reginah: I- I j-just...

Hayden: Come here...

She cried softly against his chest as he rubbed her back. He fell for the most simplest women of all and spoiling her was a huge thing for her..He kissed the top of her head.

Hayden: Hey baby..you deserve if okay?

She nodded.

Hayden: Thank you Dr Smith..

She smiled tearfully looking up at him.

Reginah:You re-really planned this for me?

Hayden:Yes..and you look like a princess today...

Blair came out of hiding with a huge smile on her face..

Blair:Now that's ou-

Reginah looked at her and she laughed.

Blair:Congrats sis and welcome to the fam...now sis I know you're happy and emotional because this one decided to be the most romantic man of the year but I need you to smile baby for the camera..our shoot begins..

Hayden rolled his eyes laughing and Reginah laughed softly. That was Blair and she was going to have to get used to her loud personality.

Blair:Don't forget to flaunt that rock too...

At Masa's home

Masa walked inside the house and immediately made her way to the bedroom. She sat on the bed and went through her gallery.

She sighed. She was not proud of the girl she once was. She was working on it. Rectifying her mistakes and making sure she starts on a clean slate.

Her phone beeped and she smiled.

Masa:what time?

Tilly:In three hours. See you.

She placed the phone down and thoughtfully pulled her bag towards her before she took out a notebook so that she can read while waiting for her daughter's godmother. She laughed at how easily Tilly gave herself that spot.

At the venue

Blair:Beautiful. Look at you guys so in love bathong...

Blair said as she got photos of Hayden kissing her tummy. It was so perfect.

Blair:I need the last set. Uhm I don't know, let your imaginations run wild..



Hayden:Wild?

Reginah:What are you thinking about?

Hauden:Just this...

He pulled her body to his and kissed her lips softly. Blair just took photos and they looked beautiful and spontaneous.

Hayden broke the kiss looking into her eyes before biting her lower lip and she closed her eyes.

Hayden:Till death do us apart....

He whispered before french kising her lips regardless of the snapping camera.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*29\*

At the venue

Hayden smiled looking at her.

Hayden:Dr Smith well I can't wait for these two to come.

Reginah:Soon. You did this for me?

He could hear the disbelief in her voice and he nodded.

Reginah:I-I...

Hayden:Don't start crying again my love..let's enjoy the rest of the day.

She sniffed and nodded.

Reginah:I love you okay?

Hayden chuckled kissing her forehead. He loved her more than she could know.

He led her to the chais and she looked around. She still couldn't believe he planned all of this for her. It was beautiful, he even got maternity shots too.

At the hospital

Tessa said a silent prayer before closing her eyes. All she ever did these days was pray for a new day even though it came with pain.

At some point she found herself questioning God. Why her? What did she do? But the questions rang unanswered everyday.

Meanwhile Scott sat in office scrolling through Facebook. He paused when he saw a picture of Reginah trending on Facebook. She was looking all cute in pink scrubs. She saw the guy who posted it and went to his timeline.

He swallowed a bit when he realized his age. A guy younger than him? He got the girl? Wow!

He removed his coat and drank water. He even made her pregnant. Although Reginah had never shown interest in him, she went for a guy way younger than her.

He hated to admit it that she looked happy. So happy with that young boy.

At Masa's place

Tilly knocked on the door several times before Ma Masa came to open the door.

Tilly:Dumelang.

Ma Masa:Hello Matailda, how are you?

She smiled.

Tilly:Good. Mama a re le dumele.

Ma Masa:Okay. Masa is in the bedroom.

She nodded and stepped inside making her way to Masa's bedroom.

She found Masa on the mat pressing her phone.

Tilly:Godmother is here.

Masa looked up and rolled her eyes.

Masa:Tswa ha kwa..

Tilly placed her school bag on the bed and sat next to Masa.

Masa sighed.

Masa:If it happens we stop being friends please don't badmouth me or use what I told you against me.

Tilly:Letso isn't it..

Masa:We've been friends since forever and suddenly she says I'm a bad influence and speaks about me behind my back.

Tilly:That's why you don't like talking too much

about yourself...

Masa:I don't know where she got the nerve to then want to talk to me as if she missed all that we had...Just because shit doesn't go her way.

Tilly:Calm down. She is the past. Another chapter in the book. One of the people who switched up, don't paint everyone with the same brush..

Masa:I guess you're right(sighing)

Tilly:Now don't upset my goddaughter wena..

Masa chuckled.

Masa:Ka re o serious. Let's do English.

Tilly:I can write that exam with my eyes closed.

Masa:Well I can't so let's study mma...

Masa stood up and walked to her desk getting

her books.

At the venue

Reginah's eyes sparkled with unshed tears in the moonlight and the starry light setting.

He smiled as they danced slowly to the soft sound of the music playing.

Hayden:And one day we'll tell our kids about this.

Reginah:How many do you want?

Hayden:Five..

She shook her head.

Reginah:Nnyaa mr..These two are good.



Hayden:Three then..I mean four years later a boy  
re dira last born..

Reginah:Wow! Focused..

Hayden:Trust me these kids will be happy with  
us as parents.

Reginah:I trust you.

Hayden:I want a boy e le last born.

Reginah:What if the third child is a girl?

Hayden:(laughing)Re nna serious re dira  
ngwana wa reng neh...

Reginah:O batla go ntapisa akere?

Hayden:I won't, I mean it's a pretty nice exercise  
making kids. Hmm...me over you, hearing those  
sweet moans and whimpers.. o ete o bone gore  
o itlhela o le turn on yang?

Reginah:Mxm..

Hayden:I wouldn't mind having a house full of

kids.

Reginah:Wena rich guy..

Hayden:But first let me build a legacy for all three of you then we will be back to the baby topic Dr Smith.

Reginah:We're getting married? I don't think I believe this..

Hayden:It's real sugar. I want you for worse or for better pretty lady...

She placed her head on his shoulder.

Reginah:I enjoyed today. Thank you.

Hayden:Anything for you sugar.

The Following morning

At Reginah's house

She opened her eyes feeling a bit sore down there. She didn't know how he was going to keep his high sex drive in check after the first three months of her children's birth.

She stretched her arms and yawned before rubbing her tummy.

Hayden walked in his boxers holding a tray of food. At that exact moment the babies decided to kick and it was a bit painful. Hayden noticed the frown on her face and quickly placed the tray down.

He sat next to her and touched her belly. He felt the kicks and he gently rubbed her tummy as the kicks subsided.

He kissed her cheek once the babies stopped kicking.

Reginah:They are already traitors.

Hayden:Tswa mo banake mma..you good?

She nodded.

Reginah:Thank you for breakfast.

Hayden:We aim to please or whatever english says..

She grabbed her phone from the nightstand and finally switched it on.

Minutes later she got a lot of notifications and most of them were congratulatory messages. She immediately went to Facebook.

Hayden looked at her. He unblocked her in the morning so most probably his posts will pop up on her timeline.

Reginah went through the posts and looked at him.

She read the latest post.

"Dr Smith said yes "

She read all the comments and they were positive. She placed the phone down and looked at her fiancé. It felt good thinking about it like that.

She mouthed a thank you and made a heart shape with her fingers with a huge smile on her face.

At Ms Smith's house

She held a glass of wine as she drank it reading the news. It was weird not going to the office and it was already stressing her. She passed a post of Hayden proposing. She rolled her eyes.

That gold digger had her claws right into Hayden's back and he called it love? He was too stupid to see that she was nothing but a bitch after money.

She said it, she knew he had money. Maybe she was in it with Cane. You can never put anything past Cane.

She got angry thinking about it. She hated Reginah with every fibre of her being. She hoped she dies giving birth with her useless children. Maybe the children were not even Hayden's.

She threw her glass at the door and it broke, sending shards of glasses flying around.

At the office

Cane went through the pictures and he had to admit it that Hayden had a beautiful lady. He was surprised that he was taken by her and she had such a soft personality. He placed his phone down as his new secretary walked inside the office.

Her: Morning sir, this arrived just for you.

She placed the letter on the table.

He frowned and dismissed her as he opened

the letter.

He got more confused reading the contents till it made sense once he read the name. Fuck! He wasn't thinking straight that day but...

He paused and went through his contact list clicking on her name. The phone rang and rang with no answer. He sighed and placed the letter down.

.

.

\*

\*

A WEEK LATER

Forever&Always



\*30\*

At Cane's house

Blair shook her head.

Blair:Kana bo uncle have to know. Well with Regie it's not that massive but a minor bro? You're my older brother but yoh(placing her hands over her face)

Cane:I know. I met her some time this week. A re o hetsa go kwala ka Friday.

Blair:So most probably her family is waiting for a reply.

Cane:I know.

Blair:What is done is done right now we have to do damage control.

Cane:I sent the letter forward.

Blair:The family needs to know. At this point we are planning on making the Smith Dynasty great again and we can't afford to taint our reputation yet again. Letty did enough harm to our name and I wonder why she kept the surname. The only Smith we recognize is Hayden and Regie and the kids....

Cane:We'll sort it out.

Blair:Now that is out of the way, is she pretty?

Cane laughed.

Cane:Ga ke selesele Blair..

Blair:Well I'm going to be an aunt to 3 kids. You guys are going to pay me for babysitting.

Cane:No one is asking you to.

Blair:You'll want my services one day...what's her name again?

Cane:Masa..

Blair:Pretty name...how far along is she?

Cane:She will be six pretty soon..

Blair:okay...Well operation meet Masa will be underway..

Cane:Blair bathong!

Blair:I mean I should know the new members of this family...

Cane checked his watch.

Cane:Uhm, I have to go somewhere.

Blair:Okay...

At School

Masa checked the time.

Tilly:Are you sure this is a good idea?

Masa:I don't know too..

Tilly:Urg...Mma wa re ra go kopana kae gape?

Masa:Taxi rank..Rank..I just need ten minutes.

Tilly:Okay...I'll wait for you.

Masa hugged Matilda.

Masa:Thank you baby..

Tilly:I'm not your baby euw..

Masa:Fosek!

Tilly:Le wena...(laughing)

The car stopped by the side and Masa got inside the car in the front seat.

She closed the door and looked at him.

Masa:Hi..

Cane looked at her once again. She was

different from the lively girl he had met months ago. He felt so guilty for getting her pregnant.

Masa sighed and leaned back.

Masa:It happened. We move.

Cane:You make it seem easy, I'm so fucked  
Masa..

Masa:I was worse kana...I got a beating first.

Cane:A literal beating?

Masa:My dad..yoh!

Cane:No wonder o sa utlwe..

Masa:Mxm..I learnt my lesson. After this ka  
mme, I'm not having sex(crossing her fingers)

Cane:owai!

Masa:I swear..I just want to focus..

He started the car and joined the road.

Cane:Uhm..I didn't know what to get you. I got wings, a burger, milkshake le mo gongwe moo..

Masa:Thank you..

He took the paper bag from the back and handed it to her.

Cane:I think there will be a meeting in two weeks or so, I know I'm going to get called out for this.

Masa:We move hey.

Cane:Ke go drope ha kae?

Masa:Taxi rank...theu don't know we met up, I don't want to get in trouble.

Cane:Fine with me.

Cane glanced at her as she sipped on the

milkshake. Now looking at her, he could see the innocence in her.

He dropped her by the taxi rank.

Cane:Take care.

Masa:Thank you and bye.

She held her school bag and the paper bag as Cane drove off..she looked around trying to spot Tilly and saw her.

She slowly made her way to her and handed her the paper bag.

Tilly:Food..o sharpo?

Masa:I'll take the wings hela..

Tilly:La ratiwa tthe...so much food.

Masa:Ija..Are you eating first or we should look

for a taxi?

Tilly:Let's sit down by the chairs first.

Masa:Alright. Yoh.

That evening

At Reginah's house

She laid on her back as she talked to Hayden.

Hayden:Babe?

Reginah:Yes?

Hayden:Do me a favour...

She frowned.

Reginah:Okay...



He shook his head.

Hayden: Forget it love.. how are the twins treating you?

Reginah: I'm good these days. I rest. A whole lot.

Hayden: As you should. I'll be coming over ka weekend okay?

Reginah: Okay. I love you..

Hayden: I love you more Dr Smith, bye.

He hung up and she thoughtfully laid on the bed before she got up and grabbed her car keys.

She had been putting this on hold but she just had to. Plus it was not even dark. 6pm was still early even though they were experiencing light showers in Francistown.

She slipped her feet into the sandals and walked out of the bedroom.

She made her way outside and smiled as the smell of the rain wetting the soil hit her nostrils. It was days like these one would literally crave eating soil but nope. She wasn't doing that to her babies.

She unlocked the car, got inside and rolled down the windows letting the fresh smell fill her car.

At the bar

Letty downed what seemed to be her sixth alcoholic beverage and placed the glass down.

Ms Smith:Another one..

Bartender:Mam you've had enough. I think you should leave..

Ms Smith:I'm the one paying...don't t-tell me what to do with my money.

She was slurring and the bartender shook his head. She had been here the whole afternoon. Whatever that was eating her up must be so deep for her to drink like a whale.

Bartender:We can arrange a cab for you mam.

Ms Smith:Mxm! Tsamaela koo, I'll go some place else...

Like that she got up and held onto the counter for balance before she walked out. She looked too inebriated at this point but she kept on walking to the car as the rain drizzled on that

particularly cloudy day.

She got inside and started the ignition.

Ms Smith:I'm not drunk...I can see my fingers..

She placed her fingers in front of her face and she placed them back on the steering wheel. She could still drive.

She looked around the car, how come she didn't have a bottle in the car, it could help right now.

She haphazardly reversed out of the parking spot and drove till she joined the main road.

Still on the road Regie smiled. She was hoping Tessa will be fine and maybe seeing her will

make the little girl smile.

She increased the volume as she played Sbahle's Emlanjeni. It was her favourite song and it somehow reminded her of how her love life seemed perfect.

He did everything right. She took a u-turn as the light showers started not being so light anymore. She could see and it wasn't that bad.

Ms Smith struggled to see through the rain as it poured. She couldn't even see if she lit her headlights. She saw an oncoming car. Shit she was in the wrong lane. She tried to swerve but it seemed as if she was going to crash into the oncoming car.

Reginah saw the oncoming car and the traffic proved it difficult for her to switch lanes. The lady was on the wrong lane. She just said a silent prayer as cars hooted and lights flashed before there was a head on collision. She screamed placing her hands over her belly before her car started to roll on the road and she hit her head against the windscreen and passed out in the crashed car.

.

.

\*

\*

\*Forever&Always

\*31\*

At the accident scene

Sirens rang as the police and ambulance made their way to the scene. Some bystanders took photos as the paramedics moved people from the scene. All they saw was blood from the car that just rolled on the road. Some held their hearts as the image of such happening to their loved ones terrified them.

Some got busy as they updated their Facebook statuses about the newly happened accident.

The female paramedic got busy with trying to open the car to get the person out. The males helped as they had standby doctors. Meanwhile others got Letty out of the car as her head bled. She didn't have massive injuries. Maybe she broke a few bones but she was alive.

After almost an hour they finally got a pregnant Reginah out and she was bleeding profusely.

Female paramedic: Blood now, tell them at the hospital. Female, pregnant...God!

The male paramedics quickly rushed with the stretcher and oxygen pipes, where they quickly laid her unconscious body there and tried to stop the bleeding.

Female paramedic: We need to go. Now!!!

At Palapye

Hayden went through his social media as he laid on his bed. He frowned when he read people's updates about an accident. He read more and the more picture he saw the more his heart pounded upon recognition of the car.



He watched the short video of the paramedics taking out..

Hayden:Fuck!

He jumped out of bed and slipped his defined legs into the jeans and wore a t-shirt.

He grabbed his car keys dialing Cane.

Cane:He-

Hayden:Uhm, I just saw people posting on social media..

Cane could hear the fear in his voice as he stood by the hallway. He came here as soon as Blair had told him what she saw on Facebook. Thw family didn't even know and they had to

find out through Facebook. Imagine what Hayden is going through at this exact moment.

Hayden: Fuck, I'm on my way..

Without waiting for a reply he hung up and walked out of the house making sure to lock it before jogging to his car. He could be there in two hours and probably an hour and a half given that he doesn't get a speeding ticket but what is a speeding ticket compared to his fiancée's life.

He drove off

At the hospital

Blair placed her hands over her face. The pictures she saw on Facebook were not pretty and she was so scared.

She blinked trying to not let the tears fall then she burst into tears.

Cane sat next to her and held her close.

Blair: I'm scared. She has no one but us and Hayden is n-oh God!

Cane rubbed her back as she sobbed on his chest, even gasping for breath. This was scary as hell.

Letty woke up disoriented on the hospital bed and looked around, feeling the bandage wrapped around her forehead. She didn't know what happened. The door opened and in walked the doctor, a nurse and a police officer.

The doctor looked at Letty. He had told the

police officer that they found high levels of alcohol in her system and well driving under the influence on it's own was a crime.

By the way bystanders and other drivers described the accident, this lady was on the wrong lane making it hard for the other car to swerve.

Police officer: Hello mam..are you in the right state of mind to answer my questions?

She looked at him and it didn't seem as if she had a choice. She quietly nodded her head.

The police officer sat down and started asking her questions which she failed to answer.

Ms Smith: I swear I didn't mean to cause an

accident. Who did it affect?

Police Officer:A pregnant woman is fighting for her life because of you.

She covered her mouth.

Ms Smith:I swear..I-..

Police Officer:You will have to go through a trial, there is concrete evidence of your drunk state and eye witnesses that saw the accident happen. Have a good night.

He stood up and walked out. Sue didn't want jail time and she didn't even have enough money to pay her lawyer. Maybe Hayden will help. He wouldn't let his own mother go to jail no matter how angry he was with her.

She swallowed a heavy lump. Maybe if she

talks to Reginah to talk to him on her behalf.  
She can't go to jail.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*32\*

At The Hospital

3 hours later, Hayden arrived at the hospital. He was hoping to hear good news.

He found Cane and Blair. Blair looked like an absolute mess and he just needed to be strong. He had told her to never drive herself but there was no use pointing fingers at this exact moment. All three of them had to survive. He held back tears as he placed his hands over his mouth as he sat down, his knees failing him. He held the bench tightly.

Cane just quietly looked at him. He was hurting and it was normal.

Hayden kept quiet for a few minutes trying to regain his composure. He cleared his throat before speaking.

Hayden: Any updates?

Cane shook his head sadly and Hayden leaned

back closing his eyes. He had to keep it all together for his mini family.

Hayden:Who did this?

He asked with a voice that scared Blair a little.

Cane:Uhm..

Hayden slowly opened his eyes and looked at Cane.

Blair was also curious to know.

Hayden:Who did this?

Cane:Calm down Hayden.

Hayden:I am calm...

He stood up and hooked his thumbs in his jeans still glaring at Cane looking for an answer.

Obviously they have been here for longer, they



had to know who did this..

Cane:Your mother.

Hayden kept a straight face.

Hayden:I don't have a mother. Who did this?

Cane:Letty.

Hayden chuckled in disbelief. So she just crashed into his fiancée's car.

Unfuckingbelievable!

He rubbed his chin as the doctor made his way to them. The doctor looked nervous as he looked at the men standing up on their feet.

Doctor:I'm assuming the whole family is here.

Hayden:Yes.

Doctor:She wrote her next of kin as Mr Hayden Smith..

Hayden nodded.

Doctor: We need your permission to perform an emergency c-section on her. The babies' heartbeats are weak and she had lost a lot of blood, but thankfully our blood bank had enough to stabilize her.

Hayden listened attentively and he didn't hear the doctor mentioning her survival rates at this point in his long speech.

Hayden: Will she wake up?

The doctor looked at Hayden. Not sure how to answer him because they had been in there trying to see if there was a way past it all but unfortunately there was not. He had wanted to keep that particular detail of her survival out till they were sure they had delivered the babies before they died in their mother's womb.

Doctor: We'll discuss that after the surgery. Can I give you the forms?

He ran his hands through his short hair before nodding his head.

He saw how evasive the doctor was about this and this double his stress levels.

Scott wiped a lone tear as he sat on his chair. She was here, not as a doctor but a patient hanging by the threas fighting for her life. Life had a funny way of turning things around. He just hoped she survived this.

Meanwhile the doctor handed Hayden the consent forms as he signed for the surgery. He had a feeling he was signing her life away. The doctor had explained that the longer they wait,

the higher the possibility of the babies dying in their mother's womb.

Hayden handed the doctor the papers before sitting down. He had to be there for his family. He will deal with Letty later. It was obvious she wanted to kill Reginah and at this exact moment his hate for her escalated.

Cane saw the underlying rage in Hayden's eyes and he stood up placing his hand on his shoulder. Smith men had a quick temper and he didn't want Hayden to do something he will regret.

Cane:We'll deal with it.

Hayden:I'll deal with it..

Cane:Don't...

Hayden:I won't..

Cane sucked in a breath. Blair was fast asleep as her head ached from all the crying. She was just hoping for good news, nothing else at this point.

Meanwhile Letty laid on the bed not knowing what to do. She never asked for the name of the lady she crashed into. Her family must be devastated and they must know it was never her intetion.

She pressed the emergency button and the nurse walked inside.

Ms Smith:I know most probably guests are not allowed, can I see the family of the lady whose car I crashed into?

Nurse:Let me see if they are still here.

The nurse walked out and came back minutes later with a wheelchair and helped Letty get sitted on it with the drip attached to her arm.

Ms Smith:Are they good people..

Nurse:They look dangerous if you ask me...it's the famous couple..uhm..ye ne e trender last week. I forgot their names mme..let's go.

She led Letty to the waiting room and once they arrived she saw a lady sleeping on the bench. She looked familiar. Her heart skipped a beat as the men turned around.

The nurse saw the way the men were looking at Letty. She decided to excuse herself at that very moment.

When Letty turned the nurse was already gone.  
Was she sure this was the family of the  
woman...

She covered her mouth.

Hayden chuckled as he stuffed his hands in his  
pockets.

Cane: Hayden control yourself...

Hayden looked at the woman he supposedly  
called a mother. And here she was. Alive. While  
Reginah and his kids fought for their lives. He  
wanted to fucking murder her for what she did.

Ms Smith: Hayden ho, I didn't know you were  
here. So you heard I-I got into an accident.

Hayden shook his head. The longer he looked at her the more he wanted to kill her so he walked away before he totally lost it.

Cane shook his head.

Cane: If this was some sick twisted revenge of yours then you are in deep shit. She is fighting for her life in the Intensive Care Unit and look at you..

Her heart pounded in her chest. She had hit Reginah's car? So they all believed it was intentional. Well it would've been nice of it wasn't her and she would've been rejoicing in the comfort of her home now they said she did intentionally.



Ms Smith:It was not intentional..

Cane:Who the fuck believes that when you hated her guts? Maybe you followed her just to kill her. You are going to regret this woman and trust me I won't be the one doing the punishing..your very own son is going to end you...

She swallowed a huge lump.

Ms Smith:You have to believe me, I can't go to prison...

Cane laughed bitterly. This woman was unbelievable. Hayden was a ticking time bomb and he left before he could lose it and here she was already pleading innocence.

Cane:How quickly the tables have turned. Enjoy hell because that's certainly where Hayden is

taking you. You underestimate him. He has Smith blood running through his veins..

Letty covered her face with her hands. She hated Reginah and wished her death but she got her wish. She literally did that.

Ms Smith:How is she?

Cane:As if you care but know this if she loses the battle, you are going to fucking regret your entire existence. We let you go when you handed Kennedy to the authorities but not this time..

With her head low and a heart pounding loudly she swore Cane could hear it, she wheeled herself to her hospital room. This was messy. How was she going to escape this one.

That late night

Letty opened her eyes and she saw a shadow in her hospital room. Her heart pounded and she swore it was no longer in her chest.

She placed her hand over it still seeing the shadow.

Ms Smith:Wh-who is it?

The deep rumble coming from the shadow's chest terrified her even more before it became a fully fledged laugh that sent chills down her spine and not in the nicest ways. Tears blurred her eyes.

Ms Smith:I'm not see-seing ghosts(shaky voice)

He moved from the shadows and stood by her bed where the curtains were open and the moonlight shone on his face.

She pulled the sheets closer to her chest as a huge lump choked her.

Ms Smith:H-hi...

He looked so much like his father and the cold look he gave her was the same one Kennedy used to have when he killed with no regrets.

Hayden:Death would be an easy escape..

His hazel brown eyes no longer seemed hazel but there were dark, as if it was another person talking. An ego as so to say.

Hayden:You're going to rue the day you bore me...

His voice left her so cold and she blinked several times to find him looking her dead in the eye with no emotion on display. What was he becoming? This was not Hayden.

Ms Smith:Tha-that's not y-you Hayden. You're not a killer.

Hayden smiled. It hurt that his fiancée was in there because of her. It was her fault and she must be happy she got what she wanted. She was going to regret everything. Even her entire existence.

Hayden:There are other ways to kill don't you think? Sleep with one eye open...

With that he walked out leaving her stupefied on the hospital bed.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Forever&Always

\*33\*

At the hospital

They spent the whole night at the hospital with Cane coming in and out. He sat next to Hayden who was lost in his thoughts. He took the plastic cup from Cane and placed it over his nostrils.

Cane:You need something strong.

He thanked him silently downing the alcoholic beverage in the cup before he rubbed his eyes. He just couldn't see himself without her. As unrealistic as that sounded the thought of not seeing her smile again or hearing her voice just killed him inside.

He placed his head between his legs as his last conversation with her played in his mind. He didn't want to think that was the last time he spoke to her. The sun was starting to rise and they still hadn't heard anything about Regie or the twins.

He looked around the room as Blair slept peacefully and he wished he could also sleep but he couldn't sleep. Sleep was the last thing on his mind honestly.

He rubbed his face as the doctor finally made his way to them. He had a sombre expression on and that was a bit worrying on his part.

Hayden stood on his feet.

Doctor:We have managed to save the babies. They are premature...

A sigh of relief fell over him.

Doctor:is Mr Smith the father?

Hayden nodded.

Doctor:Can you follow me, this will take a while.

Hayden quietly followed the doctor and he took him to the pediatric care unit..



He looked at the many babies there and the doctor led him to the incubators and he saw their small bodies.

Doctor: We need you to get changed into scrubs..

He frowned.

Doctor: For Kangaroo Mother Care, the body heat from you is essential to them..

Hayden: Okay..

A nurse led him out and the doctor called another nurse as they led the babies out of the room to another hospital room.

Minutes later Hayden laid on the bed as the nurse gave him the first baby. It was a little boy and a part of him was scared that he might drop the tiny body.

Doctor:Place him against your chest so that he can absorb the body heat..

He did so and they then gently placed the little girl on his other side as the two tiny humans absorbed their father's body heat. The doctor explained reasons for such and Hayden looked at his two babies.

The doctor had said nothing about his fiancée and he was getting worried. He tried not to stress since he was holding the little ones but how was he going to cope?

Three hours passed before the nurses took the babies, satisfied that they got the body heat they needed to.

The nurse left the room with the babies after telling Hayden to get changed and go to the pediatric care unit.

In less than 30 minutes he was there as the nurse held her clipboard. She took a few minutes to check him out, it wasn't as if she didn't see his muscled chest and the tattoos adorning his upper body. He was really a looker and she had to admit that Reginah had the best, just looking at him.

Hayden cleared his throat and the nurse pretended to be looking at the clipboard.

Nurse:Uhm...Mr Smith, the birth certificates need to be prepared.

Hayden:Who was born first between the two?

The nurse looked at the clipboard.

Nurse:The boy..

Hayden nodded.

Hayden:Can I see the times?

She handed him the clipboard and he took note of the times, committing them to memory.

Hayden sighed.

Hayden:Hayden Smith Jr Smith and Avery Cerise Smith...

He waited for the nurse to take the names down.

Nurse:Sure?

Hayden:Yes...

He ended letting them use his last name

instead of his first name as their surname. He remembered the time Regie was testing it out using Avery's name.

Hayden:Can I see them for a few minutes?

Nurse:of course. Well they are underweight but they will survive..most probably because they are premature.

He nodded as he looked at his two babies. Dressed up in blue and pink. He smiled as he held the clear plastic looking at them. They were finally here.

Hayden:Can't wait for you guys to meet mommy(whispering)

The nurse stood by the door and looked at him with his kids before walking out.

## Inside Ms Smith's room

She stared at the white ceiling. He wasn't really going to send her to prison right? Reginah was fine right? They were just kidding.

She can't go to jail. A lot of thoughts ran in her mind and she just held her head to stop the thinking.

The door opened and the nurse wheeled in a tray of food.

Nurse: Goodmorning...

Ms Smith: Morning... Can I ask something?

Nurse: Of course mam...

Ms Smith: How is the pregnant lady from the accident doing?

The nurse's face changed and she took note of that.

Nurse:I'm not supposed to tell you mam...

And the nurse walked out. She was asking about her colleague whom she hit with a car. The tears burned in the back of her eyes as she walked away to regain her composure.

Hayden joined his uncle and Blair in the waiting room. Blair held a cup of hot coffee and looked at Hayden with a small sad smile.

Blair:Any news?

Hayden:The babies are okay.

Blair held her chest.

Blair:Thank God..

Cane:Good to know.

Hayden:It's a boy and a girl..

Blair:Congratulations...

She paused and silence filled the space.

Blair:What about Regie(low voice)

Hayden's heart sunk more. They hadn't updated him about her and how she was, he was scared to be honest. Scared of losing her. Scared of his kids growing up not knowing their mother. Scared he was going to break if he lost her. Scared that his sanity will be gone if she leaves.

Cane noticed the swirl of emotions in his eyes before Hayden masked them with indifference.

Hayden:I honestly have no idea..they haven't



said a word about her..heck I haven't even seen her..

Cane:They will tell us something, I'm hoping very soon.

Hayden:Yeah...

He slipped his hands in his pockets and walked to the nearest window staring outside as othe people's daily lives went on while his world stopped just like that.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*34\*

At the hospital

Hayden just made his way to the pediatric care unit again and checked on the babies once again. He smiled looking at the two of them.

They were so tiny and he couldn't wait till they got normal body weight but for now as long as they are out of danger, he was happy.

He looked around and saw other babies in there.

He walked out and sat next to Cane.

Hayden:Anything about Reginah?

Cane sadly shook his head and Hayden looked

down

Cane:Go freshen up, a bath and a change of clothes will do.

Hayden:I'm okay..

Cane:No, it might help clear your mind. If there is something I'll call okay?

Hayden sighed and he nodded.

Minutes later he walked out of the hospital.

At Masa's house

Masa read the news and watched the video of the accident on social media. This was scary and the very fact she was pregnant was scary

as hell. How are people still allowed to walk scott free after causing such accidents?

She sighed as she hid the phone in her bag and continued reading for her next exam. Tilly was writing and well they didn't have the same options which meant more time to study.

At Reginah's house

Hayden's hands shook as he tried to unlock the door. He tried to block the tears but they persisted and flowed down his cheeks. He weakly pushed the door open and his knees failed him the moment he walked inside the house.

Her soft scent wrapped itself around him as he

wailed.

He placed his hand on his chest, trying to ease his aching heart amidst the tears but that failed and he felt his heart sink deeper. As if it was made of lead.

He didn't know how to numb the pain, to make it hurt any less because boy did it hurt. It hurt like a little bitch. A part of him wanted to believe she was okay but the doctor's silence was so loud.

He weakly tried to stand up, steadying himself with the couch and headed to the bedroom where he walked slowly. His legs were heavy, the more her scent got stronger, the more emotionally distraught he became. Something stuck in his throat as tears blurred his perfect

vision and he had difficulty in swallowing. He held the door knob as his heart ached. Why couldn't it have been him? Not her.

She didn't deserve this. He pushed the door open slowly. He didn't know how to drown out the pain that had left him enervated.

More tears filled his eyes and he swallowed a huge lump looking at the bed as the memories came to play in his head.

Hayden:Fuuu-fuuuck! Honey come back please!!(weakly)

He let go of the door and walked to the bed where he sat down, like a river, the tears flowed down his cheeks and he found himself clutching his chest as more pain filled his entire

being.

At The Hospital

In Regie's room

The doctors looked at their patient and colleague on oxygen pipes. This was hard. As much as it was part of their job it was hard to treat her, she had been so healthy and happy.

They walked out with heavy hearts each heading to their offices wondering how the hell they were supposed to tell her family when they are also failing to accept reality as well and were working on changing an unchangeable reality.

Cane and Blair just quietly looked around. They haven't got an update and it has been hours since Hayden was gone.

Blair:He is most probably asleep.

Cane:He needs to rest.

Blair pushed her hair backwards. She saw the doctor make his way to them. Finally.

They quickly stood up and looked at the doctor.

Doctor:Can I talk to the next of kin?

Cane quickly got his phone and dialed Hayden's phone that rang continuously before it sent him to voicemail.

Cane:He isn't answering..

Doctor:When he comes back, tell him to pass by my office.



Cane nodded anxiously wondering what news the doctor had.

At Reginah's house

Hayden woke up and he rubbed his eyes hoping it had been all a dream and he was sleeping next to the love of his life. His body had automatically kept itself away from her side and his heart was still heavy.

He got up and made his way to the bathroom where he got under the water. The tears mixed with the water, there was no way he could remedy the ache in his heart.

Minutes later he checked his phone and found a

missed call from Cane. He called back immediately.

Hayden:Hello..

Cane:The doctor has news.

Hayden:I'm on my way.

He quickly got dressed in fresh clothes before he walked out with his car keys and phone.

At the hospital

More than ten minutes later, Hayden made his way to the waiting room and saw his paternal family there.

Cane:He said his office...

Hayden:Alright.

Hayden made his way to the office and the doctor stood up.

Doctor: Can you follow me?

Hayden silently did till they were outside a hospital room. The doctor opened the door and Hayden followed behind. His already flailing heart dropped and he swore he felt it drop as he saw the love of his life on oxygen machines.

He slowly walked up to the bed and looked at her bandaged forehead. She had a few scratches on her cheeks, other than that her face still looked angelic.

He ran his finger on her cheek as his hand shook slightly.

Doctor:At the moment, she can only breath through life support.

Hayden's heart that has taken one too many emotions erratically beat at that simple sentence.

Doctor:From our exams, they got her too late.

Hayden:What do you mean?

Doctor:She has head injuries, well they are not acute unless of course they lead to blood leaking into the brain.

Hayden silently listened.

Doctor:Blood has leaked into her brain and it is still leaking, it is difficult to stop it when the damage has already been done.

Hayden:What is that supposed to mean?

The doctor sighed and looked at Hayden hoping to see emotions on his face but nothing. That means he was darn good at hiding them but the doctor himself failed to. This was his colleague and she was so lively.

It was a fresh wound and treating her, having to see her reality and how it ended was painful.

Doctor:She is gone...

Hayden only heard the word gone and it echoed in his head for a few moments before he looked at the doctor again with disbelief.

Doctor:We can't save her, the damage is done and we can only wait till the machines stop or we switch them off..

Hayden's head spun as his reality was shook to

it's very roots. He held onto the bed for stability as his heart felt like it had been stabbed a million times and bleeding profusely.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*35\*

At The Hospital

Hayden sucked in a deep breath and looked at his fiancée. They had said forever and always. This can't be the end. Not for their lovestory.

They still had more to live for, heck she still had to enjoy being spoiled rotten with his money. He was still building a legacy for her and his kids. What the hell?

Hayden:I want a second opinion.

He said with a straight face and his hands in his pockets.

Doctor:We che-

Hayden:I want a second opinion!

He repeated with a much deeper voice that scared the doctor.

Doctor:As you wish...

Hayden:I'll find one myself..

Doctor:But Si-

Hayden turned to face him.

Hayden:Will that be a problem?

The doctor shook his head and walked out.

Hayden pulled a chair close to the bed and held Regie's hand.

Hayden:Hey sugar...(softly)

He heard that patients can respond to touch and voices of familiar people.

Hayden:We have a girl and a boy angel...I named our princess the name you chose. Her name is Avery and there is Smith Jr angel. They can't wait to meet you..I can't wait to hold you again in my arms...



He let go of her hand and covered his face. This was hard. The machines kept on beeping and he wasn't going to believe that his one and only lifeline was gone..he just couldn't let that sink in. If need be, he would ask for a third opinion too if need be.

Hayden:You are still very much alive sugar..I love you okay angel?

He kissed her hand with a little sad smile.

At the doctor's office

He dialed a close friend who answered immediately.

Doctor:Dr Mason...

Leatile laughed a little.

Leatile:o teng mona?

Doctor:Same old, same old...I need your opinion on something.

Leatile:Sure...

The doctor went on to explain everything to Atty who listened and took notes.

Leatile:I'm not a brain specialist..

Doctor:I know but we need a second opinion..

Leatile checked his watch.

Leatile:Uhm, I'll pass by kamoso...is it okay?

Doctor:It is..Thank you..

Leatile:Sharp.

He hung up and the doctor sighed. He went over the medical records again and the notes. Hoping he misdiagnosed her but everything was aligning and he hadn't misdiagnosed her. She was gone.

Hayden walked out of her room and walked to the waiting room. Blair quickly stood up and met him halfway.

Blair:What is it? What happened?

Hayden just walked past her and went to sit down.

Cane:Any news is good news at this point right?

Hayden:Apparently she is gone.

Blair paused and looked at him with teary eyes.

Blair:What do they mean gone?

Hayden:Without the machines she is good as dead...

Blair:Tell me you don't be-believe that?(with quivering lips)

Hayden:I don't..

Cane:Are they sure?

Hayden:I need a second opinion...

Cane:We can fly in a doctor...money is not a problem.

Hayden:I know that...I just don't want to believe she is gone. Just like that..

Blair:Oh God!!

Blair sunk to the floor and covered her face. She hated it when bad things happened in the family. She hated it so much.

Hayden:Excuse me..

Hayden walked out and Cane sadly watched him go. He was bottling in his pain and he didn't want him to self destruct because it will end badly.

Hayden walked inside his mother's room and stood by the door. She lifted her eyes and nearly jumped at his sight.

Hayden clapped his hands.

Hayden:Mission accomplished right?

Ms Smith:What do you mean?

Hayden chuckled bitterly lifting his head up.

Hayden:Well congratulations. Hope you know

that you just found the doorway to hell...

He walked away. He was going to make her regret each and everything she has ever done. She is not walking away scott free. Not in this lifetime.

Hayden just passed by the waiting room.

Hayden: Thank you guys for the support. You don't have to wait, the doctor told us their verdict..

Blair stood.

Hayden: We'll make it right? We're just waiting for a second opinion. Come here..

He hugged Blair.

Hayden:She will be fine...

Blair:I pray and hope so..

Hayden:I know so.

He said more to himself. He couldn't just lose her like that. It was too early and their story had just began.

Hayden let go of Blair and looked at Cane who wanted to say something.

Cane:I went online looking for doctors..

Hayden gave him all of his attention.

Cane:There is this doctor, ke Motswana..

Hayden:Yes...

Cane:Her name is Dr Romano..

Blair turned to look at Cane. They wanted to fly in the Dr Romano.

Blair:As in Dr Angel Sethunya Romano?

Cane:Yep..

Hayden:Then by all means, let her be contacted.

Cane:On it.

Hayden:Thank you.

He said gratefully.

.

.

A WEEK LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS



\*36\*

## At The Hospital

Angel walked out of Reginah's hospital room. She sighed. This was the bad part of being a doctor. Having to deliver news. Bad news especially. The doctor who was on her case told her he did get a second opinion from Dr Mason and still the same thing.

She felt bad but she had to break down the news and go back to Italy.

She walked out with her stethoscope hanging around her neck. She smiled sadly. From what she heard she was a really sweet soul and that she was also a doctor too, pity she was the one

receiving treatment.

She found the family and they all stood up. She looked at Hayden and she couldn't read him at all. He had no emotions on display and that kind of reminded of Sandro. Her hot devil. He rarely became vulnerable in public, only around her.

Angel:Can I talk to you?

Hayden:Sure...

Hayden followed Dr Romano to Regie's room.

Angel sighed and clasped her hands together looking at Hayden.

Hayden could see the look in her eyes that it was hopeless, he felt something get stuck in his

throat and it choked him. Must be the pain. He looked the other way and cleared his throat before looking at Angel.

Angel:I'm sorry..

She said with her soft voice. Even if she was delicate about it, it didn't hurt any less. In fact it hurt more because he lost a priceless gem.

Angel looked at her clipboard and pushed her glasses back before looking at him.

Angel:Hayden sit down..

He sat down and looked at her. So she was really gone.

Angel:I checked her out and what was initially said is true..she is brain dead.

Hearing that, tore his heart out but he kept a straight face listening to Angel explain each and every detail, throwing in medical terminologies here and there.

Angel:Any questions?

He shook his head as he turned to look at his lifeline on the bed. He sighed. It was over. She was gone and it hurt like a little bitch.

Angel looked at Regie and a wave of sadness fell over her.

She stood up and jusy squeezed his shoulder.

Angel:I won't say it gets better with time because it doesn't. Some things you learn to live with them. All the best.

She walked out leaving him there and he tried so badly not to cry. His whole world crashed literally in front of him and he couldn't stop the crash.

The door opened and Blair walked in.

Blair:What did she say?

Hayden couldn't even speak and he didn't want to break down here. They should never see him weak.

Hayden:It's over..

He said and tears blurred Blair's eyes. She shook her head. A second opinion from one of the best and they told him it's over. She is not coming back?

Blair:Be serious..

Hayden:Serious as a heart attack.

Blair covered her mouth as she burst into tears. Hayden silently listened to Blair's sobs with his own heart breaking.

Meanwhile in the office the doctor compared the blood results he got from the lab. He didn't know how to get her family to agree. It was solely up to them really and they had no right to force them. He sighed. This was hard.

Scott scrolled through Reginah's pictures on Facebook and sighed. He loved her in secret and no one knew. But that didn't make it hurt any less. She was gone. There was nothing they could really do to bring her back.

Hours later...

The time Hayden left the room, his heart was so heavy, he felt like dying too. He didn't want to do this life thing without her. She was the reason for this huge change in him. He needed to get his hands on weed mixed with something heavier. That was how he wanted to numb the pain...

He sat down on the benches and placed his head in between his legs. He wanted to scream and shout but nothing couldn't come out of his mouth. He felt like something was stuck in his throat.

The doctor made his way to him.

Doctor: Can I talk to you?

Hayden looked at him and he wanted to punch him in the face. Talk about what when the mother of his children was gone and was alive only because of oxygen pipes.

Doctor:I have to run something past you...

Hayden quietly stood up and followed the doctor to his office.

Hayden sat down and looked at the doctor.

The doctor wanted to be careful in approaching this issue and give it the sensitivity it deserves.

The doctor started talking and after he was done he looked at Hayden. Expecting a reaction



or an answer but nothing.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*37\*

At the hospital

The doctor's office

Hayden chuckled before looking at the doctor with a straight face.

Hayden:No.

Doctor:Excuse me?

Hayden:No. Simple as that. Am I forced to do that?

Doctor:No bu-

Hayden:Then I'm not donating Regie's heart. Not now, not ever.

Doctor:But humani-

Hayden:I do not give a damn about humanity.

Doctor:But she is just a little girl...

Hayden just held himself back.

Hayden:I just lost a person I care about and you're already ready to cut her up to give her organs. Know what give her heart away, her liver, her lungs, he kidneys(sarcastically)

The doctor saw the anger in his eyes and kept quiet.

Doctor:My apologies.

Just as he was saying that Tessa's parents walked inside the office and they looked at Hayden then the doctor.

The doctor shook his head and Ma Tessa held back her tears. She walked up to Hayden.

Ma Tessa:Please! I'm begging you. My little girl is about to di-

Ra Tessa:Please sir!

Hayden took one good look at them. He hadn't even started grieving and already people were after her body parts.

Hayden:My decision still stands. Excuse me.

He walked out and Ma Tessa sobbed into her husband's chest. Why couldn't he see reason? Tessa had a lot to live for and it wasn't as if it will change anything with Reginah's situation.

The doctor looked at the couple as Ra Tessa led his wife to the couch and she wiped her tears.

Ra Tessa:He is still hurt, we can't bombard him with such when he is starting to accept that his fiancée is gone..He needs time.

Ma Tessa:I know but Tessa...she doesn't have time.

Ra Tessa sighed.

Ma Tessa: We can give him time to think about it but Theresa doesn't have time. She is deteriorating and we might lose her anytime. She can't even do anything. Doctor please help us...

She looked at him pleading. More tears filled her eyes.

Ma Tessa: Please! She is just a little girl and her dying just like that...

The doctor looked at Tessa's mother as she got on her knees begging him.

Ma Tessa: Ka kopa! We'll pay, anything for my baby to live...

She said as tears streamed down her eyes.

The doctor was stuck between a rock and a hard place. He was told no while there was a family that was desperate to save their little girl. He sighed and rubbed his beard.

Ma Tessa:Ka mo kopela!!

Ra Tessa helped his wife stand on her feet and they looked at the doctor.

The doctor sat down on his chair and leaned back.

Ma Tessa looked at him with teary eyes. Her daughter's life was hanging by the thread and she had to do what she had to do.

Doctor:I might lose my practicing licence for this...but okay.

A wave of relief hit her as she smiled tearfully..

They thanked the doctor and walked out of his office. He walked out after them and headed to Regie's room. He stopped by the door when he saw Hayden inside. His heart pounded looking at him and what he said he was about to do.

He was still grieving and it was up to Hayden to switch off the machines or not. He walked away.

Hayden held his fiancée's hand and felt a deep lump in his throat. He had so much to say but couldn't say it. He wanted to hope that the more he kept the machines on there might be a

chance of her waking up but she heard what Dr Romano said. It was hopeless. One day the machines were gonna switch off on her own because it would be useless and he didn't want to drag her through that too.

He got up and made his way to the doctor's office.

The doctor looked up startled as his guilty conscience set in.

Hayden:I want to switch off the machinea tomorrow.

Doctor:Very well. I'll organise for that.

Hayden nodded and walked out. He was met with Blair who looked hopeless.

Hayden:I'm switching off the machines



tomorrow morning.

Blair's heart cracked.

Blair:No!

Hayden:I made the decision. I'm going to check on the twins.

Hayden walked away and went to the pediatric ward.

The doctor called the local heart surgeon as he made arrangements for tonight. They were going to do it tonight.

He went through the documents and tried to find the papers where Hayden had signed when Reginah was admitted to the hospital.

He covered his face. His guilty conscience set in and it consumed him as he did that.

.

.

\*

\*

An insert later. I know this is short.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*38\*

At Reginah's house

Hayden walked around the house as the pain

settled deep in his chest. Of course it hurt, he had just lost the love of his life and he was about to pull the plug.

He paused thoughtfully as he searched his pockets for his phone.

He went through his contacts. He needed to numb it down. The more he inhaled her faint perfume and the fact that her clothes were here and everything just made it hurt much more worse.

He dialed the number and the person answered.

Hayden: Weed plus cocaine..make it fast.

Him: Okay. It's short notice, you'll have to pay more.

Hayden: No problem.

He hung up and ran his hand through his hair looking around with tears in his eyes. He bit his lower lip trying to stop the sound from escaping but the latter won and he was on his knees in seconds holding onto the sofa crying.

His heart couldn't take it anymore. He lost her. She was gone just like that. He had to drown in out. His whole lifeline died.

All because of one selfish woman. He knew he was going to deal with her, he needed to try and get through this.

His bellowed cries could be heard from a house nearby and they just knew that a man cried when he had reached his breaking point. For

him to cry like that meant that he was really hurt and their hearts ached for whoever was crying.

Hayden couldn't control his tears. He couldn't imagine life without her. It almost seemed impossible to live without her. His phone rang uncontrollably on the sofa as he cried.

At the hospital

The doctor compared the two signatures and they looked identical. How was he going to do this without them noticing?

It would look dodgy if they find the machines off so what if they switch the machines off and they do a non-beating heart transplant even though a fresh beating heart would've been

much more suitable in this situation.

Either way, he prayed not to get caught. The family looked ap desperate for their child to live and he had to help them somehow. It was just a child. A child.

At Ms Smith's house

She just sat in her house staring at the white wall. She couldn't even drink. There was a voice that kept telling her how wrong she was and thay she was evil. That image of Hayden in the dark room was still stuck in her head and she always made sure she locked all doors and everything.

He was bluffing right? It just didn't feel like a

bluff. The intercom ringing made her jump and she held her heart.

She sucked in a deep breath and made her way to the door where she pressed the buttons next to the door while her heart skipped. The gate opened and she anxiously waited for the person to show themselves.

The door opened and she looked at the officer of the law as he handed her big brown envelope before walking away.

She closed the door and locked it before closing the gate.

She slid down the door and opened the envelope.

She read what was written and she knew her life was over already. She held back tears. Was there anyway she could stop him from doing this? She was his mother, he had to feel for her right.

She nodded her head like a mad person as she quickly stood up almost falling on her butt before heading to the bedroom to wear her shoes. Where was he likely to be?

She ran out of her house and opened the gate before walking to Reginah's house.

She opened the gate and saw his car there. There was still hope. She knocked on the door and knocked. There was no answer..



She sighed and walked away.

Meanwhile Hayden sat in the spare room blowing up the smoke, trying to forget what was happening around his life..in his life..

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*39\*

At Reginah's house in the early hours of the

morning

Hayden tosses as he murmured something. He opened his eyes and almost jumped seeing Reginah on the bed. She gave him one of her pretty smiles.

Reginah:Hey love..

He rubbed his eyes asking himself if he is dreaming or the drugs got him hallucinating. She was gone. She can't be here.

She just moved her legs up and down before sighing looking at him sitting up right.

Reginah:You'll be just fine.

She was sitting on her side of the bed.

Reginah: Thank you the wonderful year you gave me. It was one of the best years of my life, now you have to let me go. I'm okay wherever I am H.

She said with a pure smile. Almost angelic even. It all seemed peaceful.

Reginah: We have two beautiful babies. Take care of them. I know you'll be daddy of the year. Just promise me that you won't hurt yourself like this, I'm waiting to go to a better place. I'm at peace and you have a lot to live for.

She stood up from the bed in all white and walked to his side, she kneeled before him holding his hands.

Hayden couldn't bring himself to believe it, she

seemed so real that he could actually feel her touch.

Reginah: You're not hallucinating (smiling) I love you okay? Take care and live your best life my love. Let our babies be there to mend your broken heart, I'm sorry ours had to end like this. You said till death does us apart and it did. We'll meet in another life.

She stood up and kissed his cheek before walking away. She looked back and threw an angelic smile his way before it seemed like she disappeared.

This time Hayden jumped from the bed in shock as he rubbed his eyes

He was dreaming that he was next to Regie. Why did it have to end? He looked around the room and nothing had changed. It was a dream

but he held his heart as he breathed in and out.

He was just dreaming. His subconscious was thinking about her so much that he dreamt all of that.

He got off the bed and made his way out of the spare room. He headed to the bedroom and the fact that her faint perfume was lingering in the air was enough reminder that his lifeline was gone.

He headed straight to the bathroom and got naked before going under the shower. The memories came flooding back and he cried under the water, was he going to be the same?

He stood there thinking when it clicked that he

also had two human beings to look after. They won't know their mother but he'll tell them one day. The only way forward was to look after Hayden Jr and Avery...

She left them and they had a part of her. He leaned back as the water drizzled across his pectoral muscles. Not drugs maybe. Maybe more ink...the pain over pain.

He sighed as the water washed down his tears.

At the hospital

Blair and Cane arrived before Hayden and Blair sighed.

Blair:This is it.

Cane:I guess so.

Blair:Let me go see thw twins I'll be back. She walked away. The babies were getting stronger each day and most probably by the end of this month they will be allowed to take them home.

She was going to help Hayden with the kids to relieve the weight on his shoulders. Still at that, they also had to notify the family about everything but for now, Hayden was still grieving his fiancée and they had to respect that.

Hayden arrived an hour later at the hospital and made his way to the doctor's office. He knocked on the door before walking in. The doctor panicked when he laid his eyes on Hayden.

Hayden suspiciously looked at him before he sighed.

Hayden:Can we do it now?

Doctor:Of course, of course.

Hayden followed the doctor out of the office as they headed to Regie's room. Cane and Blair saw them then they followed them.

Hayden held her warm hand one more time before kissing her forehead.

Doctor:She is brain dead and there is nothing that can be done. Once the machines are off her heart stops beating.



Hayden nodded and the doctor walked to the machines. He didn't know how he was going to pull off a surgery now to remove her heart if they family lingered around much longer.

He switched off the machines and they watched the heart beat drop to zero. Hayden sucked in a deep breath as his got hot. Tears burned at the back of his eyes but he was around people. They shouldn't see him weak.

He looked down before he looked up again and sighed. Blair covered her mouth as the tears flowed down her cheeks.

Hayden walked forward.

Hayden:Let me do it..

He looked at her angelic features once more.

Hayden:I love you my angel. Forever and always.  
Go well sugar..

He held the sheet and looked at her, he had so much to say but he just covered her with the sheet and kept it all inside.

Hayden:Rest in peace sweet angel.

He finally said and stepped back. He walked out of the room after that.

Cane held Blair as they walked out of the room and the doctor slid his phone out.

Doctor:They signed the papers, we can get her heart.

He hung up and looked around before rubbing his hands on his coat.

He walked out of the room. They had to move her and be fast before the family asked for them to send her body to the mortuary.

Later that evening

Hayden sat down on the rug and looked around. He didn't have the energy to pack up her stuff, he was already shuttered himself and now he had to be strong for the innocent humans that only had him as their next of kin.

He covered his face. Funeral arrangements had to be done. They had to see if she had a will and if she had what's what.

Everything. But he was going to buy this house. He won't let the memories fade away. He was going to buy this house and keep it as an inheritance for his daughter. Maybe.

He looked around. It felt so different and he was so empty. It was not a nice feeling. The last time he felt like this, he lost all direction and met her. She kept on going on and on about thinking of her as a sister. A small smile came on his lips. She was always his voice of reason and he was going to miss that.

Calling her whenever they wanted to talk and just doing stuff with her. He didn't have the strength to go through her pictures, that would break him even more at this point.

At the hospital

The doctors smiled after they had successfully taken out Reginah's heart. She was stitched up and already cleaned. All they had to do was take her body to the mortuary now. Another life was going to be saved by this that's for sure.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*40\*

2 days later

At the hospital

Tessa opened her eyes and she saw her parents looking at her with hope in their eyes.

Her mother quickly went to get a glass of water and gave it to her.

Her father fixed up her pillow as she tried to sit upright but there was a dull pain on her chest. It felt like she had been cut.

She peeked inside the hospital gown and saw the stitches that ran along her chest area and gasped.

Her mother smiled.

Tessa:I got a heart?

Ma Tessa:Yes..

Tessa:thank God!

Tears blurred her eyes and that happiness was all that mattered. Regardless of what they did. As long as their baby was good, it was okay.

Tessa wiped her tears away. They have been waiting for years for a moment like this and she finally got one.

Tessa:Is the doctor around?

Ma Tessa:Which doctor?

Tessa:Regie mama, so I can tell her I got a new heart and will be getting out of hospital.

The two parents looked at each other and

sighed. They had rehearsed what they would say about that regardless, they weren't expecting this question this soon.

Ma Tessa:Uhm baby?

Tessa:Hmm...

Ma Tessa:You know the doctor was about to have babies right?

Tessa nodded. She didn't like her mother's tone one bit.

Ma Tessa:She got into an accident and unfortunately the doctors couldn't save her, but they saved the babies.

Tessa:What does that mean?

Her mother sighed. There was no way they were telling Tessa she had Reginah's heart. She would feel guilty and also it was a secret they



would take to the grave. There was a zero probability of Tessa ever meeting anyone related to Reginah.

Ma Tessa:She is gone..

Tessa gasped before covering her mouth in shock. She was gone. She didn't even say goodbye to her.

Tessa:It's a prank right, she is going to walk in any moment fr-from now right?

Her father just walked out as the guilt laid heavily on him. They swore they were going to take this secret to the grave but what if? What if? What if it all blows up in their faces and Tessa is caught in the crossfire?

At the Smith's

Hayden was grateful for Cane having talked to the family. They were going to lay Reginah to rest this weekend which was starting that day since it was a Friday and shortly after that, he was going to the hospital for the twins. They seemed to be okay and he wasn't sure how he was going to do this parenting thing alone but well he had the support of the whole family.

By the looks of it, everyone had so much respect for his dad and they had long been waiting for his son to come home. He hated his mother more, for taking away the one thing that had started to make sense in his messed up life.

He sat on the bed at the bedroom he was given, to think that they were going to come here to talk about their wedding not to bury her.

He covered his face with his hands. He didn't know how to get through this.

A door knock disturbed his thoughts and one of the older aunts of the family walked in.

He looked up and she smiled sympathetically.

Aunt:Hi, can I talk to you for a moment?

Hayden:Of course.

He stood on his feet and followed her. They stopped by the passage.

Aunt:Ha ne ke ntse ke sutlha moswi, I saw something weird.

Hayden looked at her confused.

Aunt:Not the c-section scar, ng ng..go nale lebadi le lengwe and it's fresh..

Hayden waited for her to continue.

Hayden:It runs next to her heart and it's still red and fresh..

Hayden frowned. Her heart? A scar?

The aunty slipped her hand between her breasts.

Aunt:O tla intshwarela motlogolo...

She removed her phone and went to the gallery where she had snapped a few photos of Reginah's chest. She didn't expect Hayden to go see her, he was still hurting and it would only cause a lot of grief and sorrow for him when he was trying to cope.

Hayden looked at the picture closely. She was right and it looked fresh. His suspicions rose and he looked back at his aunt.

Aunt:I thought you knew something about it.

Hayden:I didn't. Thank you. Uhm, send the pictures I'll see what to do.

Aunt:Alright.

She was about to walk away when she stopped in her tracks.

Aunt:O gomotsege, she left two beautiful children for you.

Hayden just nodded and the aunt walked away.

He will see this after the funeral is finalised.

That is what he was going to do.

He walked back to his room where he sat on the bed and scrolled through the pictures and all.

At Masa's house

Her father read the letter and he was glad they responded. Unfortunately they had said they had a bereavement and that they will schedule a meeting once the dust settled.

It seemed as if things won't be that bad although he had wished that his daughter had never fallen pregnant but it had already happened.

Masa sat in the room with Tilly as she narrated what happened at the pens down party.

Tilly:Go ne go le busy Masa!!

Masa:Bathong!! I missed out but I didn't miss out but I missed ouy you get me?

Tilly:Owai, while waiting for February, I'll be in Maun, gatwe go a happener ka December.

Masa:yoh! Yoh! Don't make me miss partying you. Kana around December I used to be in Gabs mma, chillstep, Black, Social keore yoh!

Tilly:Askies..(laughing)

Masa:Fosek!

They laughed as they talked.

Tilly:How is my godbaby doing?

Masa:She is good. Do you drink?

Tilly:Only wine darling, ga di cider moo..ng ng..

Masa:Who would've thought...

Tilly:I drink occasionally  
so...(shrugging)Imagine ke ja allowance  
mntase..fashion sense, thee wines darling..

Masa:Fashion my love..

Tilly:To life and happiness...

Masa:If this baby will allow me to be happy...

Tilly:Whatever, you're gonna make it hun, trust  
me.

Masa:We'll see ka February neh..

From thereon they snapped photos and Tilly  
forced Masa to stand for full body pictures.

Tilly:Matilda the photographer here,  
acknowledge me when you post them..

Masa:I won't post them.

Tilly:Ng ng.. o montle, mathata nko e



maswenyana..

Masa:Wa swaba Matildah. Mxm!

Matilda laughed and Mada did too.

At Letso's house

She sat on her bed as she set up her Instagram account. School was done for and she was a 100% sure she did well, no questions asked.

After setting it up, she followed her favourite celebs and searched profilea of people she knew. She saw Masa's Instagram and paused. She clicked on it and Masa had just uploaded pictures of her pregnant self. Was she not embarrassed of posting pictures of herself pregnant when she was still underage? To the

public even?

She rolled her eyes as she read the caption.

" Be a butterfly and fly higher. Btw I was forced to post these by thee godmother, check the last frame "

Letso scrolled to the second to last frame as they smiled at the selfie cam, then the last frame had a 30 second video of them doing absolutely nothing but smiling and pouting.

She clicked on Matilda's profile after she commented immediately.

She went through her pictures and she saw the

pictures they had together. Over a short eriod of time and they already had a lot of pictures together? Such friendships usually smelled fake from a mile away. They aren't going to last, she could bet her last money on it.

She continued searching up people she knew on Instagram.

At the Smith's

That evening, Reginah's casket was placed in the lounge as some of the ladies sat on the floor and the men sat on the chairs. Hayden quietly sat down in an all black outfit. He wasn't going to disrespect his love's last memories by wearing jeans. His black silk shirt was neatly tucked in his black pants. They said this was an all night vigil before the burial.

A local pastor had been called and although je didn't believe in any religion, he listened as he talked about the after life. He just wanted his angel to rest in peace. That's all.

Blair looked up at Hayden and he looked so emotionless that one would question if he was even grieving. She looked down as she wiped the tears that had escaped her eyes. Cane listened and he sighed. This was hard for Hayden and he knew he wasn't going to show emotion at all. He sighed. He didn't know how they were going to help him get over this or if he was ever going to get over this.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*42\*

At The Smith's

The following morning

Hayden loaded his bags into the car before he went to say goodbye to the family. It was still fresh but then there were the twins to think of, see if Regie had a will, the house and that issue with the scar around her heart.

He had so much to do then he had to go back to

school. At this point he wasn't going to leave school when she had asked him not to, leaving would be like disrespecting her wishes.

He hugged the rest of the family members before hugging Blair.

Blair:Have a safe journey.

Hayden:I will. Thank you.

He hugged Cane and let him go.

Cane:Will see you in a few days.

Hayden:Of course.

He walked back to his car and they waved at him. He smiled a bit through the pain as he got inside and started the car.

An hour later he drove as it started to shower slightly. He switched the radio on to tackle the silence that seemed to depress her some more. The song that had been playing ended as a new one begun. He tried to ignore the pain in his chest as Celine Dion's My Heart Will Go On played and the words hit a very open wound.

He drove off the road and parked under a nearby tree as tears fell down his cheeks.

Love was when I loved you  
That true time, I hold you  
In my life you'll always go on  
Near, far wherever you are  
I believe that the heart does go on

Once more, you opened the door

And you're here in my heart

And my heart will go on and on

He held the steering wheel tightly as hot tears rolled down his cheeks. She was here to show him how to go on? He didn't understand why he loved her so much just for her to leave him here.

The familiar heavy feelings in his chest came back ten times stronger and the tears didn't stop. The song reached it's pinnacle and it seemed to just hurt him more, a whole lifetime without her? A whole fucking lifetime without her?

It seemed surreal and he always wished it was all a bad dream. Just a nightmare he will wake



up from only to realise that it was and it will still be his reality.

He wiped his tears but they still trickled down his cheeks. He started the car and joined the road. He had an hour and a half to get back to Francistown.

At the hospital

Tessa laid awake on the bed waiting for the nurse to bring her food. She still couldn't believe she had a new heart. She felt okay. Different maybe but it has been a long since she had a healthy pumping heart.

She wished she could tell the pretty doctor that she had a heart. She would be so happy for her

and she felt sad that the doctor didn't meet her babies. She was genuinely excited about her , mo go nna akere?(y'all are shitting on me right?)Le lenyatso thata..

He stood up. He didn't need to question him to know he did it. He picked up the forged signature documents and stood up in his all black outfit.

Hayden:See you in jail for organ harvesting or whatever crime you'll be in jail for.

Hayden paused.

Hayden:And oh, if there are any other illegal crimes, I'll definitely dig them out. Enjoy freedom while it lasts.

He walked past him and walked out. The doctor's knees shook so hard and he struggled to breathe. It all came back to bite him in the ass and hard. He wasn't surely 19 right? A 19 year old didn't have that much power. He knew people, maybe he should start making calls.

He held onto the wall as he made his way to his desk. The documents were gone. His hands shook as the prospect of jail terrified him. He quickly dialed Tessa's parents.

Ma Tessa answered immediately.

Ma Tessa: Hello?

Doctor: He found out...

The line cut.

Doctor: Hello? Hello!!

He tried dialing it again but it didn't go through now.

Meanwhile outside Tessa's hospital room Ma Tessa looked at her husband.

Ma Tessa: Gatwe he knows.

Ra Tessa's mouth gaped open.

Ma Tessa: What do we do? We have to move Tessa away from here...

Ra Tessa: We might go to jail..

She bit her nails.

Ma Tessa: And Tia is so young and Tessa...(teary)

Ra Tessa: If we run we show that we are guilty..

Ma Tessa: But we are guilty..oh my God!!

Tears blurred her eyes as her husband pulled her into his embrace.

Ma Tessa: We paid him a-and oh gosh...

She let go of her husband and wiped her tears.

Ma Tessa: Let me call my sister...

She took her phone out and dialed her sister's number.

She explained to her what was happening. Her sister didn't want to get involved but she literally begged her.

Ma Tessa: Please, for a year or two in Canada..

Her: What if they come for me?

Ma Tessa: Tessa is innocent in all of

these..please!

Her:Fine, book a flight for her with a private nurse because her heart surgery ia still new.

Ma Tessa:Thank you.

She hung up and looked at her husband.

Ma Tessa:Let's get Tessa out of here.

Her husband nodded.

Meanwhile in the doctor's office, he finally asked around about Hayden Smith and his heart pounded more. It was not known but from his quick asking he was Kennedy Smith's son.

Chills ran down his spine. Kennedy was the country's most wanted. He was a dangerous

man and his son just threatened him. He knew about the time Kennedy was arrested. It was news all over.

The door opened and Tessa's parents walked in. They saw the worry on the doctor's face and they immediately knew shit was about to go down.

The door opened once again and Hayden walked in holding his son.

He chuckled.

Hayden: Oh just in time for you guys to discuss your plans. Wonderful.

Ra Tessa: Son please forgive us we did what he had to do. Our child was dying.

Hayden:Well not my problem right? Everyone dies and there is not a lot that can be done...

The way he said that, they knew he was hurting.

Hayden:Well, I guess I should see everyone in court...

He looked at the small human in his arms and walked out.

Ra Tessa:He is blinded by hurt.

Ma Tessa:What we did is illegal...oh god(getting teary)

Hayden placed Smith Jr on the bed.

Hayden:Hey little man..



He let out a small smile as he looked at the newborn.

Hayden:They say I'm your dad by the way..

Smith Jr held his finger with his whole hand and he smiled.

Hayden:Your sister is sleeping little guy..

The baby just looked at him and he smiled.  
Maybe he will heal in time. A big maybe.

.

.

\*

\*

SIX YEARS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*42\*

At The Smith's

The following morning

Hayden loaded his bags into the car before he went to say goodbye to the family. It was still fresh but then there were the twins to think of, see if Regie had a will, the house and that issue with the scar around her heart.

He had so much to do then he had to go back to school. At this point he wasn't going to leave school when she had asked him not to, leaving would be like disrespecting her wishes.

He hugged the rest of the family members before hugging Blair.

Blair:Have a safe journey.

Hayden:I will. Thank you.

He hugged Cane and let him go.

Cane:Will see you in a few days.

Hayden:Of course.

He walked back to his car and they waved at him. He smiled a bit through the pain as he got inside and started the car.

An hour later he drove as it started to shower slightly. He switched the radio on to tackle the silence that seemed to depress her some more.

The song that had been playing ended as a new one begun. He tried to ignore the pain in his chest as Celine Dion's My Heart Will Go On played and the words hit a very open wound.

He drove off the road and parked under a nearby tree as tears fell down his cheeks.

Love was when I loved you  
That true time, I hold you  
In my life you'll always go on  
Near, far wherever you are  
I believe that the heart does go on

Once more, you opened the door  
And you're here in my heart  
And my heart will go on and on

He held the steering wheel tightly as hot tears rolled down his cheeks. She was here to show him how to go on? He didn't understand why he loved her so much just for her to leave him here.

The familiar heavy feelings in his chest came back ten times stronger and the tears didn't stop. The song reached it's pinnacle and it seemed to just hurt him more, a whole lifetime without her? A whole fucking lifetime without her?

It seemed surreal and he always wished it was all a bad dream. Just a nightmare he will wake up from only to realise that it was and it will still be his reality.

He wiped his tears but they still trickled down his cheeks. He started the car and joined the road. He had an hour and a half to get back to Francistown.

At the hospital

Tessa laid awake on the bed waiting for the nurse to bring her food. She still couldn't believe she had a new heart. She felt okay. Different maybe but it has been a long since she had a healthy pumping heart.

She wished she could tell the pretty doctor that she had a heart. She would be so happy for her and she felt sad that the doctor didn't meet her babies. She was genuinely excited about her , mo go nna akere?(y'all are shitting on me right?)Le lenyatso thata..

He stood up. He didn't need to question him to know he did it. He picked up the forged signature documents and stood up in his all black outfit.

Hayden: See you in jail for organ harvesting or whatever crime you'll be in jail for.

Hayden paused.

Hayden: And oh, if there are any other illegal crimes, I'll definitely dig them out. Enjoy freedom while it lasts.

He walked past him and walked out. The doctor's knees shook so hard and he struggled to breathe. It all came back to bite him in the ass

and hard. He wasn't surely 19 right? A 19 year old didn't have that much power. He knew people, maybe he should start making calls.

He held onto the wall as he made his way to his desk. The documents were gone. His hands shook as the prospect of jail terrified him. He quickly dialed Tessa's parents.

Ma Tessa answered immediately.

Ma Tessa:Hello?

Doctor:He found out...

The line cut.

Doctor:Hello? Hello!!

He tried dialing it again but it didn't go through now.



Meanwhile outside Tessa's hospital room Ma Tessa looked at her husband.

Ma Tessa: Gatwe he knows.

Ra Tessa's mouth gaped open.

Ma Tessa: What do we do? We have to move Tessa away from here...

Ra Tessa: We might go to jail..

She bit her nails.

Ma Tessa: And Tia is so young and Tessa...(teary)

Ra Tessa: If we run we show that we are guilty..

Ma Tessa: But we are guilty..oh my God!!

Tears blurred her eyes as her husband pulled her into his embrace.

Ma Tessa:We paid him a-and oh gosh...

She let go of her husband and wiped her tears.

Ma Tessa:Let me call my sister...

She took her phone out and dialed her sister's number.

She explained to her what was happening. Her sister didn't want to get involved but she literally begged her.

Ma Tessa:Please, for a year or two in Canada..

Her:What if they come for me?

Ma Tessa:Tessa is innocent in all of these..please!

Her:Fine, book a flight for her with a private nurse because her heart surgery ia still new.

Ma Tessa:Thank you.

She hung up and looked at her husband.

Ma Tessa:Let's get Tessa out of here.

Her husband nodded.

Meanwhile in the doctor's office, he finally asked around about Hayden Smith and his heart pounded more. It was not known but from his quick asking he was Kennedy Smith's son.

Chills ran down his spine. Kennedy was the country's most wanted. He was a dangerous man and his son just threatened him. He knew about the time Kennedy was arrested. It was news all over.

The door opened and Tessa's parents walked in.

They saw the worry on the doctor's face and they immediately knew shit was about to go down.

The door opened once again and Hayden walked in holding his son.

He chuckled.

Hayden: Oh just in time for you guys to discuss your plans. Wonderful.

Ra Tessa: Son please forgive us we did what he had to do. Our child was dying.

Hayden: Well not my problem right? Everyone dies and there is not a lot that can be done...

The way he said that, they knew he was hurting.

Hayden:Well, I guess I should see everyone in court...

He looked at the small human in his arms and walked out.

Ra Tessa:He is blinded by hurt.

Ma Tessa:What we did is illegal...oh god(getting teary)

Hayden placed Smith Jr on the bed.

Hayden:Hey little man..

He let out a small smile as he looked at the newborn.

Hayden:They say I'm your dad by the way..

Smith Jr held his finger with his whole hand and he smiled.

Hayden:Your sister is sleeping little guy..

The baby just looked at him and he smiled.  
Maybe he will heal in time. A big maybe.

.

.

\*

\*

SIX YEARS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*43\*

At John Mackenzie Primary School

The black Mercedes coursed its way through the school as it blasted Keri Hilson's Pretty Girl Rock.

She parked the car and fixed the rearview mirror and reapplied her lipgloss before pouting her plump pink lips.

She smiled and opened the car door, stepping out slowly with one foot forward first. The driver of the car that parked next to hers, saw her pretty legs in her 5 inch heels. He waited to see the face that belonged to the beautiful legs.

She stepped out and held her handbag as her hair flew to the side due to the soft breeze.

The man muttered a low fuck as he looked at her.

She touched her airpods as she tucked her hair behind her ear. She darn wished she had a scrunchie nearby.

The lady made her way to the classes where she was sure she was going to find the kids.

She knocked softly on the door and it opened. She didn't know why they preferred to wait in class than where other kids waited but she didn't even debate it.

Smith Jr saw her first before his sister looked up. Arielle was the last to look up and she smiled like Masa always smiled. Masa thanked



her lucky stars that Arielle had more of her qualities.

Avery fixed her backpack and touched her little ponytail and smiled at Masa.

Masa:Alright guys, let's go. I need to go.

Arielle fixed her school shoes and stood up following Smith Jr who was next to Masa in seconds.

Smith:Is dad back?

Masa:No but I'll connect him to a group video call. Cool with that?

Avery:Yes mom.

Masa:Baby girl we're waiting for you.

Arielle:Ee mma..

She quickly took her bag and followed her mother and the twins. Her mother gave her her hand and she held it tight.

Masa:Who is getting the front seat today?

The three looked at each other and no one said a thing.

Smith Jr:I'll take it..

Masa:Alright.

They walked to the parking lot and she unlocked the car. They each opened their sides and got inside.

Masa:Seatbelts everyone.

They all buckled up and she smiled.

The girls started chatting at the back and Smith Jr quietly observed Masa.

Smith Jr:You're pretty..

Masa chuckled.

Masa:Thank you big guy, pick a song. They aren't even listening.

Smith Jr just held her phone as he went to his favourite song and handed Masa her phone back.

Smith:Thank you.

Masa reversed out of the parking spot before she buckled up. To believe that she has been helping Hayden out with the kids for years now. The first week was awkward because of her history but then they formed a sibling like relationship and these three have been nothing

but happiness although he had to make Hayden make them understand that their mom is no more and they should be aware that she wasn't their mom. They took it well and instead asked questions about their mom though they called her mommy.

Masa's phone rang and that interrupted Smith's song. He looked at her and she answered the call.

Masa:Hello...ka kgweetsa tlherra ke tswa go tsaya bana ko skolong.

Hayden:Hi guys..

Avery clapped her hands.

Avery:Daddy!

Hayden:Hello princess..

Arielle was the most quiet among the three and she tilted her small head before she recognized

the voice.

Arielle:Hello Uncle..

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:Hello baby..are you guys good?

Smith Jr:Dad when are you coming back?

Hayden:In a few days my guy. I'll call later okay?

Smith Jr:Okay.

Hayden:Masa re tla bua.

Masa:Sure groot man.

Hayden:Wa swaba..

Masa chuckled before hanging up.

Arielle:Mama I want icecream.

Masa looked at her using the rearview mirror.

Masa:After everyone does their homework.

Smith Jr:We all did our homework waiting for

you..

Masa:Avery o bua nnete?

Avery nodded her head.

Masa:La lapisa.

She said as she took a u-turn. Now she was going to buy icecream for all three of them.

Avery:We love you.

Smith Jr:Very much.

Masa:Bolope bana ke lona...mxm!(laughing)

At Sabrana Mental Hospital

Ms Smith stared at the white wall, she kept hearing voices and she was sure she wasn't

crazy. Reginah was here to haunt her. She cried asking her to stop. She didn't mean it.

What happened years ago was an accident.

The nurse rushed in and just injected her. She went out like a light bulb. When she was sentenced, she was okay in prison but things spiralled out of control two years ago and they had to take her to an asylum.

They had always suspected that something happened in jail but they will never know. Whenever they thought she was okay, she took twenty steps backwards.

Not even once has her son ever visited her. No one even bothered and at this point, all

decisions involving her were the state's problems. It was sad that no family had visited her or anything.

The nurse sighed after laying her on bed and walking out. That was going to knock her out for at least 6 hours before another episode.

At Reginah's place

Hayden sat on the bed as he looked around. He did this yearly. Only two weeks to go before her death anniversary. The kids didn't know he did this and maybe he'll tell them in a few years.

He stood up and walked to the wardrobe. He never moved anything and her clothes were still there. He held one of her favourite shirt and



inhaled her faint scent. He smiled sadly.

She was gone but he had learnt to live with it though it hurt like a bitch whenever her death anniversary was near. To know that she was gone when they delivered the twins.

Speaking of the twins, she wanted to ask Masa and Blair about their plans about his babies' birthday.

He slipped his hands in his pockets and ran his hand through his hair.

He will live. He didn't want to follow his heart at this point because he was not willing to lose yet another. He sat on the bed and looked around. Maybe in another lifetime he will get over here

but the pain was a bit bearable.

Hayden: Sugar do you know that Avery looks a lot like you? You live in her and thank you for them. They kept me sane throughout the years and if Masa showing up was part of your plan, then thank you. She has been a mother figure to them. (laughing sadly) Smith is such a gentleman though I see a lot of me in him, please help me if he becomes a rebel..

He walked out of the bedroom. Maybe he should surprise the kids and say he came early? Yeah.

He walked out. He has been here long enough. A whole week was enough.

At Blair's house

The kids got out of the car holding icecream and a few sweet treats.

Masa:I'm sorry babies but I need me time. Don't tire out aunty Blair ka le kopa.

The girls smiled. One would swear they were triplets. They had Smith traits and sometimes she would be asked if they were siblings and she might as well say they were. They grew up as siblings.

Arielle:We'll behave mom. If we don't get my chocolate.

Masa rolled her eyes.

Masa:Ke isa kae chocolate? Let's go guys.

She knocked on the door and a five month old pregnant Blair opened the door.

Masa:Glow ya teng.

Blair:I feel like sh-

She saw the kids and nudged at Masa.

Masa:I need me time tlhemma wena.

Blair:Dirathana tsa lona..(laughing)

Masa:Wa swaba mo bame bana Blair..mxm.

Blair:Hey guys, come in..

Arielle paused and looked at Blair.

Arielle:Is that a baby?

Blair nodded.

Arielle:It should be a girl..

Smith Jr:Ari!

Arielle:Ee(slowly)

She followed the twins.

Blair:Ari wa nkgatlha gore..

Masa playfully rolled her eyes as she talked to Blair.

Masa:Kana tell the guys themma they'll sort that fool out.

Blair:It's fine.

Masa:It's not as if they don't know. They are just waiting for you go ahead.

Blair:I don't want a stressful pregnancy Masa.

Masa sighed.

Masa:I hear you.

They hugged and when she was about to go, Blair called out her name.

Blair:What's up with you and Smith?

Masa:Which Smith?

Blair:You know which one...

Masa:Sharpo mma..

She half ran to the car in her heels and she removed the heels when she got inside the car.

She reversed before her phone rang.

Masa>Hello...

Cane>Hello baby mama..

Masa:Tsamaela koo tlhe, how is Joy?

Cane>About her, what remedy is used for morning sickness?

Masa:Tota I didn't take any remedies haish..ne ba ntlogela ke kgwa hela gotwe ke tla bakela banna(laughing)

Cane:Ija. Sharp and I'll pick Arielle later.

Masa:O ko Blair autwe. Sharpo.

She hung up and dialed Matilda's number.

Tily:Moloi..

Masa:Been busy as hell tlhemma wena..kamoso girls night out?

Tily:Take a flight to Gabs phakela.

Masa:Avani tomorrow?

Tily:Yes mam.

Masa:It's a date..

Tily:And get laid..

Masa:Eeuw no, I'm a virgin..don't corrupt my mind wena..

Tily:Says the one with a whole five year old.

Masa:Ng..

Tily:Give my godbaby the phone.

Masa:She is at her aunt's place.

Tily:More reason to get dick since they are not there.

Masa:I'm relaxing..

Matilda rolled her eyes.

Tily:Wa mpalela tsala yame waitse..

Masa:I'm a virgin mma..I haven't seen dick ever since I got pregnant.

Tily:And I would've said you're lying but since I know the real you, that's the truth.

Masa:And I plan to keep it that way.

Tily:I don't know how to convince you but I'll be with you the whole day. Le go nna flexible ka tswa go ile o omeletse.

Masa:I can prove you wrong..



Tily:Please do..

Masa:With pleasure. Sharpo mma.

Tily:Bye.

She hung up and she kept her eyes on the road.

She got to her house and pressed the remote, opening the gate. She didn't know where her other remote was.

She drove inside and closed the gate. She parked the car and got out.

She got her heels and bag, walking barefoot on the pavement.

She looked for her house keys in the bag and

unlocked the door.

Masa:Finally. It has been a stressful week at work and no kids now..

She said and she closed the door without locking it.

Masa:(talking to herself)a shower, get social and chill..wine..definitely wine girl...yes..that moet. Yes!

She danced her way to the bedroom and got rid of her clothes humming to a made up tune.

She got inside the shower and opened the water. Her hair was going to get wet but she didn't care.

She laughed under the water. Her life was perfect at this point, she couldn't ask for more. Being single was working just fine for her.

30 minutes later she walked out with a towel wrapped around her body and one on her head.

She sat down on the bed and looked for her phone. She went through her socials. She paused coming across Bontle Modiselle's Joro challenge..

She watched the clip. She was still flexible right? She asked herself laughing as she stood up walking to the wardrobe

Meanwhile Hayden's car parked outside Masa's

house. The kids were probably here.

He used his remote to open the gate a little before closing it and walking to the house.

Meanwhile Masa stood in front of the mirror as she blasted Wizkid's Joro in her room. She laughed as she held her waist with her hands.

Masa: Bitch you still got it in you..(laughing)

She slowly started moving her waist to the beat. Okay she still got it.

She started the song.

Masa: Bo Bontle ba tla re kgaphisa bathong!

She said as she looked at herself in the mirror.

When the song started she did the exact same thing that was done in the video. She smiled as she danced.

She didn't hear the bedroom door open. Hayden stood there as he saw that waist move sweetly and when she went down. Goddamn!

He slipped his hands in his pockets hiding his boner. The moves were seductive and he swallowed.

Masa felt weird as she stopped dancing and turned.

Masa:oh my God!! Hayden get out dude!!

Hayden raised his hands in surrender as he walked out.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*44\*

At Masa's House

Hayden tried to sit on the couch straight but he couldn't. His hard on couldn't let him as he kept replaying what he saw in his head.

Hayden:Fuck!!

It's not as if he hasn't noticed how fucking perfect she looked, he just decided to crush those thoughts down but then he had to see that. Why didn't he knock?

He asked himself over and over again. Her breasts looked perky on the mirror as she danced.

Hayden: Stop thinking about it man!!

He warned his subconscious.

Masa walked out of her room with her hair let loose and a long maxi dress. Hayden watched her. Yup! She was fully covered up.

Masa sat down and looked at Hayden.

Masa:You did not see that.

Hayden:I-

Masa:I repeat Smith, you did not see that.

She said and looked at him. Expecting him to agree with her.

Hayden:I did not see that.

Masa:Good. Let's pretend it never happened.

Hayden:Tell that to my dick(under his breath)

Masa:What was that?

Hayden:Nothing..

He stood up and walked to the kitchen.

Masa quietly followed him with bare feet.



Hayden:Where are the kids?

Masa:They are with Blair, why didn't you call ne rra?

Hayden:I thought..

Masa:Why ne o thoughta mara(laughing)

Hayden:I was assuming they'll be here.

Masa:Stop being an assumist.

Hayden:That word doesn't exist.

Masa:Whatever dude. Whatever..

Hayden:So whatchu doing?

Masa:I was having me time...wait...how did you get inside? The gate is closed.

He slid out the remote and she angled her head.

Masa:You're the one who took it...

Hayden slid it back into his pocket.

Hayden:And there is nothing you can do about it.

Masa:Bring it back dude!!

Hayden:Ke dude?(acting surprised)

Masa:Yes..dude my gate remote.

Hayden:Not in this lifetime.

Masa rolled her eyes as she walked to the fridge. The sunlight that came through the kitchen window shone her way and he could perfectly see that ass through the yellow maxi dress. He looked the other way as she closed the fridge after taking out the juice.

Masa:Juice? I was about to have wine.

Hayden:Don't stop on my account.

Masa:I don't have beer in the house, I have wines. Lots of wines.

Hayden:I know Masa. I know..

Masa:Cane is taking Ari and I guess the kids will be with their dads this weekend. More time for me.

She said as she stood on her tippy toes to open the top shelf. She pulled the wine out and went to another shelf to take her wine glass.

Masa:Since you're here, help me open that bottle..let me order pizza or something.

She walked out and Hayden took out another glass and he checked the label and he nodded.

He poured the wine into the wine glasses as Masa walked in holding her phone.

Masa:Uhm Lemon and herb or peri-peri? No wait, your favourite is peri-peri...

She walked out pressing her phone as she made the orders via the app.

Hayden walked out of the kitchen holding the glasses and handed her one.

Masa: Thank you.

He sat down next to her and she looked at him.

Masa: How are you feeling?

Hayden: About?

Masa: I know where you were...

Hayden sighed as he swirled the red wine in the glass and took a sip.

Hayden: It hurts like a bitch..

Masa: I understand. Have you taken the kids there?

Hayden: Maybe when they are older.

Masa: And the heart issue, have you made peace with it?

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden: Surprisingly I haven't. I didn't want anyone having a part of Reginah, it doesn't feel right at all and having an important part of her like her heart..

Masa sighed.

Masa: I understand. Akere the culprits went to jail.

Hayden: Yeah, the doctor lost his practicing license and there is no hope of him ever getting it back, the man and woman got out was it like two years ago.

Masa: I see.. focus on the kids. They lack nothing and focus on your healing too. You'll find the

right one after you've fully healed.

Hayden looked at her as she said that. She has grown over the years and he smiled.

Hayden:Yeah I guess..

Masa:Why does it sound like you've given up on love?

Hayden:I don't have the energy to love..

Masa hugged him.

Masa:You will love again H, just don't try and look for her, she might find you my guy okay?

Hayden rubbed her back slowly inhaling her soft flowery scent. He closed his eyes before opening them again.

Hayden:Alright Dr Phil.

Masa:ka go thusa ha..mxm. Go eng nare?

Hayden:O molomonyana waitse Masa.

Masa:Tswa mo go nna Mr..

She broke the hug.

Masa laughed and pinched his cheek.

Masa:My guy ga o bona kuku o tle o e phatole autwe?

Hayden:Fotshek Masa.

Masa:Sale o e bona leng mme gone?

Hayden:I'm not discussing that with you Sunshine.

Masa:She will find you. Bula pelo o e phuthulole gore happiness e tle e dlale mo wena. You've been sad these past few years.

She said as she walked away and Hayden's eyes followed her. He sighed. Just maybe, just

maybe she has been here all along.

At Francistown International Airport

Tessa looked around as she waited for her parents impatiently. She pressed her phone trying to pass time. She honestly did not want to be here but they had to 'bond' pathetic!

And to think they wanted to force her to attend Uni here was making her go crazy. Her whole life was in Canada and she had a boyfriend there. One she loved very much.

Ma Tessa and Ra Tessa made their way through the airport and saw Tessa. They smiled. She was finally back home and they knew she had been reluctant to come home but Tia was



here already.

They stood in front of Tessa who looked up. Ra  
Tessa frowned.

Tessa:Hello. Are we going?

Ma Tessa:What did you do Theresa?

Tessa shrugged.

Tessa:mom it's just a nose ring and a few ear  
piercings. Nothing personal.

She stood up and pulled her luggage bag.

Tessa:Are we going?

Ra Tessa:Yeah..

He led the way as Tessa pulled her bags silently.  
Ma Tessa looked at Tessa. Maybe it had been a  
mistake to take her Canada. She was going to

call her sister after this.

Tessa placed the bag in the boot and closed it before she got inside the car.

She pressed her phone as her parents sighed.

Ma Tessa: Which course do you want to study?

Tessa: Uhm medicine is still fine..I'm starting to like it.

Ma Tessa: Will they let you in with those piercings.

Tessa: Geez, it's not like it's their body. Gosh!

She looked back at her phone and sent a text to her friend back in Canada.

Tessa: And I'm back at this place.

Her: You hate it there?

Tessa: they are tripping over my piercings, imagine if they saw the tattoo on my lower back.

Her:It's just ink.

Tessa:Exactly ↑ ♀I'll skype later and please check Conor for me.

Her:Of course..waiiit..did you guys you know?

Tessa:Yep

Her:I never thought you'd have the guts to.

Her:Look I love Conor a whole lot and I was ready. Contrary to what people thought. I got to go, they'll say I seem disrespectful when I'm always on my phone.

She put her phone down and quietly looked at the place she grew up at. She knew she had anger issues. The first one being how her parents got her heart.

She did find out and nothing has been the same ever since. Her heart. No wait...not her heart but the organ that was "supposedly" her heart went out to the family. She couldn't imagine how they felt knowing that the heart was stolen. If she was in their shoes, she would also not forgive them.

She looked at her chest through the tee. The scar was still there. She hated that they didn't tell her the truth. That they stole her favourite doctor's heart. As much as it was to save her, she hated it when unethical things were done and in doing medicine she wasn't going to malpractice.

She chuckled. To believe she wanted to be an author. Must be the heart. Most of the times,

she listened to her head and not her heart because at times her heart would be heavy for no apparent reason or she would find herself missing people she didn't even know. She had given herself time to read up on it.

Apparently it's called cell memory theory, where you at times have the characteristics of the organ donor. She didn't want to live her life like the prettu doctor. She wanted her own life. Hence listening to her head and not the heart.

The gate opened and her father parked the car.

Ma Tessa:We've arrived.

Tessa:Sure..

She got out of the car as the boot opened and she took out her bag. The door opened and Tia

came running to hug her big sister.

Tessa:Hey you...look at you.

Tia:You are finally here.

Tessa: I promised akere..

It felt weird speaking Setswana. She shook her head.

Tia:Can I help with your bags?

Tessa:I came with only one bag so if it's not too heavy for you be my guest lil sis..

Tessa looked at her parents.

Tessa:Still the same room?

Her father nodded and she walked inside the house in that oversized tee, jeans and black boots.

She made her way to her old room and it was clean. She was finally 18. Finally.

She hoped they didn't mind her doing stuff but she'll see. Right now she had to adjust being here again.

At Masa's house

Masa walked to the gate to get her orders.

She paid and tipped the guy before walking away.

She walked inside.

Masa:Hellooo, I come baack!

Hayden laughed.

Masa:How is everything at the office(placing the takeaway bags on the table)

Hayden:Well..let's just say things are looking up.

Masa:well we can drink to that and eat to that.

Nna ke tshwerwe ke tlala sorry..

She opened the bags and she sighed. She made her way to the kitchen to get the plates.

Hayden:Have patience.

Masa:For who? For the why? Tlala mr..

She sat on the carpet instead and put a few pieces on the plate followed by the breadrolls and chips.

She used her manicured fingers to dig in and



her hair fell forward.

Hayden:Let me help you with that..

He pushed her hair backwards and their eyes locked. Masa looked at her plate ignoring his gaze.

Masa:Thank you..

Hayden licked his lips.

Hayden:Uhm, I have to go. We'll talk okay?

Masa:Sure.

He stood up and walked out.

.

.

\*

\*

A bonus insert from me to you. Just nje.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*45\*

At Hayden's house

He sat on the bed and looked around. It was quiet without the kids around but he will pick them up first thing in the morning, he needed to think.

Maybe it was just lust and he had spent a few months without sex right? And it was his libido talking not his heart, the stupid organ he swore he would never use. He will give it a month or

so.

He checked the watch and he decided to just head to the gym. To release the tension.

At Masa's house

Masa sat cross legged on the couch as she talked to Matilda.

Masa:I'll take the morning flight.

Tily:Girls night out and come out looking sexy.

Masa:We'll see. And guess what? I'm still flexible..

Tily:Can you come show me?

Masa:Your ass is gay..

Tily:Mxm!

Masa:I think I have an incoming video call, I'll call.

She hung up as she answered Joy's video call.

Masa:Hey..

Joy:Hello, Ari talk to mommy..

Joy handed Ari the phone and Masa smiled.

Masa:Hey princess, how are you?

Arielle:We are having ca-cake, icecream, chips..

Masa laughed, her baby was too sweet.

Masa:So did you take a bath?

She nodded and placed the phone on the table leg, she started telling her mom what they did when they were with Blair to when her dad picked her up.

Masa:I love you sweetheart, give aunty Joy the

phone.

Arielle did that before standing up and heading to the kitchen where she bothered her father.

Joy laughed.

Joy:You're the easiest baby mama to be honest.

Masa:Just don't hurt my baby, otherwise we're cool. How is the morning sickness coming along?

Joy:I feel like garbage.

Masa:Glad I'm not Blair or you.

Joy:Go tla go tlela...

Masa:Back to sender!!

Joy laughed and chatted with Masa for a few minutes before hanging up.

She walked to the kitchen and kissed Cane's

lips.

Arielle hid her eyes with her hands giggling.

Joy:Bathong, this baby is so sweet.

Cane:Tell me about it.(laughing)

Joy:Her mother did good with her.

Cane nodded in agreement.

At Hayden's house

He finally walked out of the shower and just wore a tee on top before he dialed Blair's number.

Blair answered immediately.

Hayden:Hey Doll..

Blair:Come take your kids. I'm tired.

Hayden:Tomorrow first thing in the morning.

Blair:Smith, Avery? Come talk to your dad guys.

The kids rushed to take the phone from her.

Smith Jr held the phone.

Smith Jr:Hello dad when are you coming back?

Hayden:Soon..

Avery:Daddy?

Hayden:Yes princess?

Avery:I miss you.

Hayden:I miss you too angel.

Avery:Mom took us to do our hair last weekend.

I look like an actual princess...that one that  
kissed a frog..

Hayden laughed. She made him wath The  
Princess and the frog countless of times to the

point that he knew the songs.

Hayden:Then you are beautiful baby girl.

Smith Jr:Let me talk to dad.

Avery:Okay..

She gave Smith the phone and got off the couch heading to the bedroom where she looked at the dolls. She missed her learning laptop, the pink one her dad had gotten her.

Hayden:I understand champ.

Smith Jr:Thank you.

Hayden:You are manipulative.

Smith Jr:I don't know what that means but it's a good thing right? I love you dad.

Hayden:I love you too(laughing)Bye.

Smith Jr:Bye..



He hung up and handed Blair the phone.

Blair: A dire a tle a ba tseye. I can't believe I offered to babysit these children now Cane is having a second one. God!!

At Hayden's place

He laid down on his bed and he went through Masa's picture on Facebook. She had pictures with the kids and the small outings she took them to, forcing him to come along.

She made this parenting thing seem easy though she just came back a year ago from school. Having bagged that BsC in Financial Engineering degree.

She balanced spending time with them and without her and Blair plus the whole family, he was sure he wouldn't have coped with it all. Plus her parents were also supportive.

He paused on a particular photo of her pouting with the girls and clicked on it. He shook his head. That was Masa being well, her.

He exited his social media and scrolled through his contacts. He paused on her name. Of course she wasn't saved as Masa, he didn't know why he called her Sunshine. He video called her.

The phone rang for some time before she answered. Her hair all messed up and she still looked cute, surprisingly.

Hayden:You look homeless.

Masa:Geez! I'll take that as a compliment. It's late Hayden what the hell...(sarcastically)

He chuckled. She had such a smart mouth.

Hayden:Can I come over?

Masa:Mr! Mr! Sleep..

She turned on her side holding her phone.

Masa:I have an early morning, I drank too much wine. I'm still gonna drink too much.

Hayden:Tomorrow there is no work.

Masa:Work for who? I'm going out. I deserve it baba..

Hayden:Wa kae?

Masa:Calm down...I'm going out. I have to catch up on sleep(yawning)The wine didn't knock me

out senseless. Boroko.

She hung up and yawned some more before closing her eyes to sleep.

Meanwhile Hayden laid on his back and stared at the ceiling. He didn't know why he asked Regina for direction, he knew no one would be able to replace her in his heart and the fact that someone had her heart ignited fury in him. He hated that fact. Hated it so much.

He turned to his side and closed his eyes.

The following morning

Masa stood in front of the mirror as she curled

her hair. She slightly parted her lips as she focused on the curl definition she wanted.

She slowly removed the curling rod and then looked at the curl. Perfect.

Did she book a flight? Maybe she'll buy a ticket right there at the airport. It's no biggie.

She walked to the wardrobe where she took out a small suitcase and packed her overnight clothes plus of course the party clothes.

When she was done, she wore her body suit before she slid her legs inside her jeans and jumped a bit for them to go over her butt.

She wore her sneakers and pulled her bags with a black stylish hat over her bouncing curls.

Now she had to drive to the airport.

At Hayden's place.

He woke up and checked his phone. He found a message from Masa.

Sunshine: I'm gone, tell the twins I love them and call me if there is an emergency.

Short and to the point.

He rubbed his head and got out of bed.

On the road

Masa passed by a car that seemed to have a problem. The other cars passed by and it seemed as if it was a lady.

She reversed her car and parked her Mercedes next to the car as she stepped out.

Masa:Hi I s-

Masa scrunched her face as she came face to face with Letso. If she was not mistaken.

Masa was taken aback and a part of her wanted to leave her stranded because of spite but she was bigger than that and she knew better than to hold grudges.

Masa:Hi, I saw your car stranded..I thought I could help.

Letso stood there dumbfounded. That was Masa. Masa standing in front of her, she had gotten ten times more lighter and she had such an accent.

Masa:Uhm let me call my mechanic to help out.

She took out her phone and walked to the car as she talked to the mechanic.

She hung up and walked to where Letso was.

Letso quietly observed her clothes. That jean



was a Guess and God knows how much those sneakers cost.

Letso:Hello.

Masa:Hi..How have you been? It's been years..

Letso:School and then work.

Masa:That's good.

She looked ahead and she saw the mechanic's car.

Masa:He's just about to arrive, I'll drop you off at work..

Letso:Thank you.

The mechanic arrived and Masa asked Letso to explain.

Mechanic:I'll look at it and get back to you.

Masa:I'll cover the bills. Thank you.

She flashed a smile and Letso took her bag and phone from the car. She looked at her one inch heel and the chinese clothes she was wearing just so she can save costs. It was not like her job was paying much anyway. Her dreams went down the drain like that. She had to do any available course and she wasn't even happy.

Masa opened the car door and Letso did too. The car exterior and interior was nice plus she looked rich.

She sat at the backseat. Unsure of where to sit.

Masa fixed the rearview mirror.

Masa:Ke go droppe kae?

Letso:Ha council.

Masa:alright..

She started the car and she could feel the engine.

Masa:Buckle up!

She said as she joined the main road. Masa's phone rang and she rolled her eyes, as she answered the phone since she had connected it to the car system.

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Morning..

The deep voice scared Letso a bit. The guy had such a deep voice that most women would go crazy over.

Hayden:I was just checking up on you.

Masa:I'm not a child Hayden..

Letso frowned. The name Hayden sounded so familiar.

Hayden:O sharpo? I heard they kidnap ladies out there.

Masa laughed shaking her head as she took a left turn.

Masa:I know how to protect myself. Kiss the twins for me. Bye. Go get laid or something. Wantapisa.

She hung up and Letso tried to remember where she heard the name Hayden when it finally clicked.

Letso:You know Hayden?

Masa:Yep..

Letso:The young business man that's making waves?

She wanted to add former crush but she kept quiet.

Masa:Yep.

Letso:You are friends?

Masa:We co-parent. We are about to arrive.

That was how Masa closed the whole conversation.

When Masa finally arrived at the destination, Letso looked at Masa gratefully.

Letso:Thank you, you don't have to pay or-

Masa:It's nothing.

She handed her her phone.

Masa:Tsenya your number so I can call you once the mechanic is done.

She pressed the digits and handed Masa the phone.

Masa:Have a good day hun.

Letso:Thank you..ke Letso.

Masa:I know...

She smiled and Letso stepped out.

Masa drove off to the airport from thereon.

.

.

\*

\*

GOODNIGHT

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*46\*

At Sir Seretse Khama International Airport

Masa stepped into the airport and smiled. It will be so busy later on.

She dialed Matilda's number.

Masa:Hello, I come baaaaack!

Tily:Meet my best friend, Masa. Sataan!

Masa:Come pick me from the airport.

Tily:On my way..

Masa:Thanks.

A message popped up and she rolled her eyes. She texted back and he replied.

She put her phone away no. She was here to have fun and relax. She was five hours away from the kids. That meant peace.

30 minutes later Tily was at the airport and she loaded her bag into the car.

They shared a long hug.

Tily:I'm glad you came..

Masa:When Dr Tily called me I made it my mission. Avani?



Tily:You know..

Masa:I need a bath first and I need to smell good.

Tily:Who do you want to impress.

Masa:I want to smell good for me..areye mma.

Tily started the car and drove off to join the Gaborone traffic.

At Tily's house

Masa walked out of the bathroom, this time she had covered her hair. There was no way she was about to lose the curl definition she worked on this morning.

Tily:Ka bo three tla bo re le within.

Masa:You know.

Masa opened her suitcase and took out her short high waist jeans and white off the shoulder top. Of course she was wearing white sneakers.

Tily: Get a man.

Masa: I don't want a man, maybe when Ari is 8 I'll think about.

Tily: Yoh!

At Hayden's house

Hayden laughed as he kicked ball with Smith Jr and Avery had decided to be their cheerleader.

Avery: Go daddy go!

Smith Jr: What about me?

Avery:Go Smith Go!!

Hayden laughed as he passed the ball to Smith who took it as the opportunity to score.

Hayden:And he scooreees!

He picked Hayden Smith Jr and placed him on his neck.

Smith Jr:I know you let me win.

Hayden:Stop being so smart.

Avery clapped her hands when they came to her.

Hayden laughed. These two had absolutely different personalities.

He put Smith Jr down as they walked to the house.

Hayden:Go take a bath Smith..

Smith Jr:Yes father.

Smith made his way to his room while Avery sat on the couch and held the remote. She changed tv channels as her dad headed to the bedroom.

Hayden went through the WhatsApp statuses and he paused on Masa who was in shorts and a white top. Imagine all the men who'll be looking at her. She had captioned the photo 'weekend turnup '.

He screenshoted the picture and threw his phone on the bed heading to thw bathroom to take a bath.

A while later he walked out of the bedroom

wearing a black sweater that showed his defined muscles and some black jeans.

He found the twins debating on who should watch what.

Hayden checked the time. They still had time to go out and buy stuff.

Hayden:Guys let's go do some grocery shopping.

Avery:I pick everything?

Hayden:If it's what we need then you get to pick.

Avery:I like that.

Smith Jr looked at his sister and then at his dad.

Hayden:Guys let's go, it seems as if it'll rain this side.

## At Tessa's House

Tessa sat on her tummy as she pressed her phone. Her phone rang and when she saw the caller id she smiled.

Tessa:Hello..

Conor:Hi Tess, uhm I jave something to tell you.

Tessa:Sounds serious.

She sat upright and waited for him to tell her.

Conor:I think we should break up..

Tessa:Ooh!

Conor:I mean we are far from each other and this long distance thing might not work out.

Tessa sucked in a deep breath.

Tessa:Okay.

Conor:Okay?

Tessa:You made up your mind Conor and I'm not going to force you to change it.

Conor:But we had sex a couple of times.

Tessa laughed.

Tessa:No wonder I love you. You care a whole lot about me baby boy. Sex has nothing to do with this. I can't cry and shout out that I don't want you to leave me because we've sexed.

Conor I'm not childish like that dude. Baby do you and all the best in your future endeavours.

Conor:Thank you. And I love you Theresa.

Tessa:I know. Boy bye. We are exes now.

She said laughing as she hung up.

She placed the phone down and walked to the wardrobe to go get changed. Maybe she was going to go to town for fresh air.

She tied her hair up into a sleek bun before she wore her kicks.

She got her stuff and phone. Tessa made her way to the lounge.

Tessa:I'm going to town, trying to remember everything. I'll be back.

Ra Tessa:Won't you get lost?

Tessa:Maybe. But I'll be back.

Ma Tessa:It's about to rain.

Tessa:I won't be long...byee..

She walked out of the house and slipped her



hands into her tracksuit pants that were riding low below her waistline revealing her butterfly tattoo. She wasn't sure if they saw that or...

But either way, it was there to stay. As she walked to the stop she could see everyone looking at her. She rolled her eyes.

It was as if it was their first time seeing a person in a crop jersey and trackpants.

At Avani Gaborone Resort&Casino

Masa held the can of sparkling wine as she stood up.

Tily:You go girl!!

Masa:Take a video Tily..

Tily took out her phone as Dj Obza's Mang'Dakiwe played.

Masa sang along as she danced. Tily laughed taking the video. Everyone shifted their attention to Masa. Well since this was Gaborone they assumed they were this slay queens who had nothing better to do with their lives.

Masa:Tsa! Tsa!

She said as she did this other move with her hands.

Tily:Masa!!

Masa stopped dancing and laughed as she took a sip of her wine.

Masa:We have the whole night..Yazi mang'dakiwe sa khumbula lutho!!

Tily:I'm glad I made you go out. Look at us having fun..

Masa:And the wines darling. The wines.

They sat down talking as more songs played. Tily had placed their orders.

Masa:Ema!!

She placed the wine can down as Jorja Smith's Be Honest played.

Masa:I still got the flexibility mma..take a video.

Tily got her phone ready

Masa:"You see my thick thighs, lost when you look into my brown eyes.."

Tily:Masa!!

Masa laughed as she stopped moving that tiny waist making her way to her seat.

Tily:You guys will still our men. Such flexibility..

Masa:Tshek! Send the videos my love.

At town

Hayden loaded the food into the car and closed the boot. He helped the twins get into the big car.

It looked like it was about to rain any moment from now.

Hayden:You all have seatbelts on?

They both nodded and he started the car,

reversing out of the parking spot before he buckled up and joined the road.

Meanwhile Tessa walked around as it started raining.

Tessa:Shit! Shit!

The taxi rank was far and she didn't even take an umbrella. She had been so lost in thought that she had lost track of time. She was starting to shiver as the rain wet her clothes.

She kept walking in the rain, she had no motherfucking choice. All the taxis just sped past her.

Tessa:My phone...shit!! I hate this universe gosh.

She now looks like some girl from a sad movie just cause she is going through a breakup.

Meanwhile in the car, Hayden saw someone walking in the rain. It seemed as if there were no taxis.

Tessa blinked the water away as a car flashed it's light and approached her.

She stopped. If they kill her, then what the hell?

The windows rolled down and the car was classy. A black Mercedes SUV. The latest in the market. Wow.

Man: Get in..

His voice was deep what the hell?

She did so, immediately opening the passenger door and got in with wet clothes and stuff.

Hayden looked at her. His heart raced. He cleared his throat. He recognized her from the photos and what he had his investigator dig out.

Tessa: Thank you and hello, I'm Tessa.

Hayden: Hello Tessa.

Tessa: Sorry for the mess, I promise I'll try and clean it. Thank you.

She said once again. Her heart was skipping beats. He was so hot. She didn't know there

were hot men in Botswana. He was hot. Hot!  
She was definitely telling her friend that she  
was in the car with a hot stranger.

She leaned back and closed her eyes. How  
would it feel if he had his hands all over her?  
And she would call him daddy? She had to stifle  
a giggle. You only live once right?

She turned her head and saw two kids. The little  
girl looked familiar but she wasn't going to stare  
at her. She was cute obviously but kids weren't  
her forte. She was all about her and her  
happiness, nothing else.

.

.

\*

\*



\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*47\*

At Hayden's House

He parked his car and looked at Tessa. The drive here had been a silent one even the kids were silent.

The rain had stopped.

Hayden unlocked the doors and the kids undid their seatbelts and slowly got out of the car.

Hayden:Your clothes are wet, I jave a dryer somewhere in there.

Tessa:Sure. Thank you. By the way you're not going to kill me right?

Hayden:Nope..

He got out of the car and Tessa did too. She looked around. His house was huge and Hayden just looked at the child like glee in her eyes.

Tessa:Nice house.

Hayden:Thanks. He opened the door and both the kids ran to their bedrooms up stairs.

Tessa followed Hayden who made his way to his room. She could see the back view and it was spectacular. He opened the door and his masculine scent engulfed her.

Hayden:Uhm let me look for something you can change into.

He disappeared into his walk in closet and she removed her clothes. She didn't know where to put the wet clothes. His house was biiiig!

Hayden found an old shirt. It was clean and it seemed to be her size. He paused. When was the last time he had a female in his house? He tapped his head. Masa..

Speaking of Masa he slid his phone out of his pocket and he saw the video of her dancing.

He replied her status.

Hayden: Don't get drunk..

He saw typing.

Sunshine: Tshek don't talk to me I'm drunk texting...

Hayden: I knew it..

He saw her recording a vn..she probably can't text well..

It was 20 second long vn and he opened it.

Sunshine:Tshek! Tshek! Don't text me...yoh batho I'm seeing stars..

Hayden:Botagwa.

She sent another vn.

Sunshine:Hayden!! Haish I'll see you ka Mo-Monday...Can I have a sick leave?

Hayden: Wa peka, who sent you to get drunk?

He saw her typing.

Masa: † ♀Ehe? Safe...

Then she went offline and he laughed shaking his head before sliding the phone back in his back pocket.

He walked out of the closet and he found Tessa sitting half naked on his bed. He saw the faint scar around her breast area. It was her alright. Obviously his dick was going to react to any naked woman at this point.

He cleared his throat.

Hayden:Here is a clean shirt.

Tessa:Thanks.

Hayden:How old are you?

She smiled.

Tessa:18...

Hayden:I see. Are you warm?

Tessa:Why are you taking care of me?

Hayden:Common courtesy.

Tessa stood up as she wore his shirt. It had his scent too.

Tessa:Really? No ulterior motives?

Hayden paused and looked at her.

Hayden:No..

He was about to walk out of the bedroom when he stopped in his tracks.

Hayden:What if they were?

Tessa:Interesting...

Hayden:Don't you think you should run?

Tessa:Run to where? I don't even know where I

am..

Hayden:True..

She shrugged and he walked away. She looked around his room. She should probably follow him, everything in here looked expensive and she didn't want to break shit.

Tessa:Hey, I didn't get your name..

Hayden:Hayden..

Tessa:Okay, where should I put my clothes?

Hayden:I'll put them in the washer..

He walked back to his bedroom and picked the clothes.

He made his way to the laundry room and paused. Did he ever do laundry?

Tessa followed and stood by the door, her legs

showing from his shirt.

Tessa: Never used the washer?

Hayden: I forgot.

Tessa walked over and looked at it.

Tessa: It looks complicated and expensive..

Hayden remembered that he had Masa help him choose and operate it. Masa is drunk and Blair must be exhausted. The house helper was off too.

Hayden: I think they'll dry..

Tessa: Yeah..

He spread the clothes out. Hopefully in an hour or so.

At Avani Gaborone Resort&Casino



Tily took the phone from Masa and switched it off. She was drunk and she knew drunk Masa was the most honest of them all.

Tily:Masa are you waiting for Hayden?

Masa laughed throwing her head back as she took another sip of wine.

She held her chest in shock.

Masa:Me? Hayden? It will never happen.

Tily:Then why are you still single?

Masa:I-I wa-nt t-t-too..(slurring)

Tily shook her head. She was going to get through to her.

Masa:I me-(pausing)He doesn't love me..

She was talking now...

She slid her phone out and recorded the conversation.

Masa:He deserves s-s-so much bett-better..

Tily:But he was your crush..

Masa:Was...You know why I went for Cane? He l-looked like H..

She knew that. No wonder Masa has been single all these years.

Tily:You love him?

Masa paused and took a sip of her wine once more.

Masa:Mmhmm..

Tily looked at Masa. She had eloquently hid her feelings from Hayden and no one could suspect

that she loved him.

Tily:If he moves on?

Masa:I want hi-him to find love. Y-you should see the way his eyes light up when he talks about Regie(her mind wandered for a bit) he deserves perfect I-love..A person who wi-will mend his broken heart...One who doesn't have a past...To raise the twins together.

Tily:So you'll be okay?

Masa:Yeah..I'm a big girl, eventually the childhood crush will di-disappear right? I'm not what he ne-needs. We are better off as friends.

Tily:He hasn't hit on you?

Masa laughed.

Masa:H o bolawa ke nopa hela(H is just horny)juuuust cause he saw me dancing ke ha ntshala morago...

Tily:If you say so..

Masa:mmhm..he has to meet uhm a perfect girl..one who didn't make mistakes like me..I'm flawed.(near tears)sometimes I hate myself for the decisions I took..

Matilda squeezed Masa's hand.

Masa:My p-past is not nice..I-I feel cheap now. Everytime I think of sex, I feel like a whore..like why the hell did I do that stuff when I was a teen,(crying)

Tily:You have a beautiful baby..

Masa:I know...Ari is the best..keore(using her hands to wiped her tears)I don't want to date only for a man to say I used to be a cheap tot because I had a child as a teenager...batho ba dipuo gore..

Tily:Ignore them..Masa you rebuilt your life I

was there. You have the degree, job and house and a pretty baby girl..

Masa:I gue-guess you're right...

She gulped the last of the wine and laughed.

Masa:Let's dance..

Matilda indulged her. She had been burying a lot of things inside and one thing's for sure, she will blow up one day and it won't be pretty.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*48\*

At Hayden's house

Tessa pressed her phone as she ignored her parents' messages. She was fine and if they knew she was with a hot stranger they would live.

Hayden handed her a hot cup of coffee and sat down.

Tessa: Thank you. Uhm are the clothes dry yet? I have to go..

Hayden: Let me check them for you...

Tessa smiled at him. For some strange reason

she kind of liked him. She looked around and wondered where all the kids were? Maybe they were not his children and she had been reading too much into it.

I mean he could be an uncle to the kids hence not even talking about them. He was too young to have kids that old.

She sighed and sent her friend a text. It is as if she wasn't going through a break up. Out of the blue a handsome hot stranger saves her and takes her to his home.

Hayden walked back.

Hayden: The clothes are dry, you can wear them and I'll take you home..

She just agreed. Why wasn't he making a move on her or anything?

She got up and tried to remember where the laundry room was, his house was gigantic.

She found it and got the clothes before making her way to his room. She unbuttoned his shirt and got dressed.

She stood in front of the mirror and fixed her hair, letting it loose and allowing it to fall down her neck.

She looked at his shirt again. She badly wanted to steal it. The man smelled hella good plus it would be a souvenir.

She sighed as she walked out leaving it on the



bed.

When she made her way to the lounge, Hayden was just making his way downstairs. He had told the kids that he would be back...

Hayden searched for his car keys and looked at Tessa.

Hayden:We can go..

Tessa followed him and she opted for the backseat since she had been a wet mouse when she was in that front seat.

Tessa:How can I repay you?

Hayden:Common courtesy. You don't have to.

Tessa:I want to, I feel like I owe you...let me take your number. I'll wash your car for free this

weekend.

He kept quiet. She assumed he really wasn't a man of many words. Obviously she won't be too too forward but yeah..

Tessa:I insist..And even the weekend after that one. Imagine what I would've become had you not stopped for me?

Hayden:Now you're being too dramatic...

Tessa giggled.

Tessa:I'm not...

She handed him her phone. Waiting for him to punch his number. Hayden held the steering wheel with one hand and Tessa licked her lips. It was sexy especially since he had muscles and all. He used the other hand to punch his number.

Tessa:Ke yone ya WhatsApp?

He nodded.

Tessa:thank you, let's just hope I don't lose it.

She said before she started to direct him to her parents' house. If her memory served her well.

She made him stop five house away.

Tessa:Thank you once again.

Hayden handed her his phone so that she could enter her number. Tessa smiled as she entered her dials.

She got out of the car and Hayden leaned back. He knew who she was and that the heart that was pumping in her body was Regie's. He didn't

even understand his own feelings.

He made a u-turn and turned back home.

The following day

At Tily's place

Masa half ran to the bathroom to throw up, she had a massive headache.

She is never drinking with Tily again.

Matilda walked into the bedroom and looked at her.

Masa:I feel sick..

She tapped her head.

Masa:Emisa botagwa Masa..tlhogo yame wee!

Tily:You were drinking like no one's business..

Masa:you didn't take a video?

Tily:I have videos my guy..videos!

Masa:Oh God!

She moved from the toilet bowl and rinsed her mouth.

Tily:Do you remember what you said last night?

Masa:What did I say? Ke ska bo ke buile gore ke nale bokahe in my bank account ka tla ka ustwelwa ke batho(I didn't say my bank balances out loud, they might steal my money)

Tily noticed that she didn't have any memory of

her spurting out those intimate details of herself and let it be.

Tily: Luckily not..

Masa: Thank God. I need a bath and I need to book a flight to go home...

Masa said as she walked out of the bathroom and picked her cellphone. She frowned when she saw text messages from Hayden.

Masa: Why didn't you take my phone? H is annoying.. what the hell was I saying?

She listened to her vns.

Masa: Jesu! Always take my phone yoh..

She rubbed her temples.

Later that day

Tily dropped Masa off at the airport. Masa had shades on to hide the eyes. She wasn't going to pick Ari or even check on the twins. She was sleeping it out at home.

Masa boarded the aircraft as Tily watched her.

At Hayden's house

He rubbed his head. For the first time in a while he wasn't thinking about Regie. He was fascinated by Tessa. He knew the truth and he wondered how he failed to hate her because he swore he would hate the person who had Regie's heart. He sighed as he leaned back. Maybe Masa was back.

Hayden:Guys?

Avery:Yes dad?

Hayden:Do you want us to go check on your mother?

Smith Jr:Is Ari there?

Hayden:Not sure..

Smith Jr:She is like a baby...daddy we are older than Ari right?

Hayden:Yes...Let the baby live..

Avery held the iPad and made her way to her dad and sat down next to Hayden.

Avery:Daddy?

Hayden:Yes?

Avery:Ari is our sister, are you and mommy going to have a baby like aunty Blair? Is



mommy's stomach going to be big too?

Hayden cleared his throat.

Hayden:Not anytime soon.

Avery sighed. Hayden laughed softly. She seemed serious about this matter.

Avery:How does a baby end up in the stomach?

Hayden:Whoah!

He had to think fast..

Hayden:You swallow a seed and eat lots of food and drink water..

Avery suspiciously looked at her dad then figured out he was telling the truth. But then she frowned.

Avery:If I do the same will I have a baby too?

He rubbed his head.

Hayden:No..

She made this confused expression that Regina used to make.

Avery:I'm co-it is conf-

Hayden:Confused angel. Confused.

Avery:That..I'll ask mommy too.

Hayden:You don't believe me?

Avery shrugged and handed her father the iPad.

Avery:I'm going to take a hair brush and you can do my hair...

She slowly walked to the stairs and sighed looking up. Baby girl behaved like mommy sometime and he laughed a bit as some of Masa's characteristics rubbed off on

her..maybe it was because she spent time with her too..

Avery held onto the rail as she took small steps up the stairs.

Hayden dialed Masa's number and it wasn't going through. Was she back?

He checked the time. It was almost seven, she was probably back.

Smith Jr made his way down and sat next to his dad silently.

Hayden:What's up champ?

Smith Jr:just thinking..

Hayden:uhu, you're just six years..

Smith Jr:our birthday..

That had slipped his mind. He had to ask Masa about that. She planned all the kids' birthdays to perfection.

Smith Jr:Can I tell you our plans?

Hayden:You have plans?

The little boy shook his head and so did Hayden. Why did he have to turn out to be like him so early in his life?

Smith Jr told his dad and Hayden just agreed. His mind whirling wondering how he was going to pull that off.

Avery came with a brush and sat in front of her dad.

Avery:You can do my hair.

Hayden's large hands held the small brush. The things he did for these two..

When he was done Avery stood up and made her way to the kitchen. She looked at herself in front of the mirror fridge.

She gave her dad's a thumbs up.

Hayden:Now we can go.

At Masa's place

He parked his car inside the yard and he wondered why he didn't steal the house keys too.

He knocked on the door more than five times.  
Her car was there.

The door finally opened and she looked horrible.

Masa:wha-what(yawning)

The twins hugged her legs.

Masa:Hey babies.

Avery:Are you okay?

Masa:I'll be fine baby.

Avery:Where is Ari?

Masa:With her dad and aunty Joy..

Avery:Okay.

They let go of Masa's legs and walked inside

the house.

Masa:You could've called. I haven't cooked. Ke lapile..And you brought the kids over..

Hayden just walked in. He looked at her properly, her hair was all over and she was just in shorts and an old t-shirt..

Masa pushed her hair backwards and looked at Hayden.

Masa:Kao robala. I feel like crap. O ganne go mpha sick leave.

Hayden closed the door and followed her.

Hayden:You were serious?

Masa:Do I look like I can go through the company finances in this state?

Unless(yawning)you want to lose your money...

She walked into her bedroom and laid down on her head, face down. She did look beat.

Hayden:But I have an important meeting tomorrow.

Masa:Does it involve me?

Hayden:Part of it..

Masa:Haish...haish...being smart has it's disadvantages.

Hayden:Can I help you relax?

Masa:No..Maybe sleep will be good. Boroko mr.

She closed her eyes and Hayden chuckled.

Minutes later she felt his weight on top of her.

Masa:What the hell? Nkgologe o bokete(get off me you're heavy)



Hayden:Relax..

He said as his hands slowly worked her back muscles and he kept more than half of his weight off her.

Masa:Ke sharpo..

Hayden:Shut up!

He used his dominant voice on her and she did listen as she placed her face on her pillow, breathing in her lavender scents.

Hayden:Good.

His hands worked from her neck, shoulders to her back and lower back..

Hayden:How are you feeling?

Masa:Better..

Hayden:As you should. Ska tlhola o ya go nwa..(don't go out and get drunk)

Masa:And who are you again?

He held her waist tightly.

Masa:Wa mpolaya..sheesh! Sorry ee..

He let it go and massaged it gently with his large hands. He chuckled looking at how his hands were big over this small body.

Hayden:Are we clear?

Masa:Crystal..

Hayden:Can you remove your tee?

Masa:Ka gana..

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Ntsha t-shirt..

She quietly obliged. Why in God's name was he being dominant over her?

Hayden swallowed a bit, she had a nice back. He moved her hair forward and started working his hands over her smooth skin.

Masa:Uh..

He ignored that soft sound that came out of her lips, also ignoring his reaction to that. Masa felt the knots become loose.

Masa:Mhmm..

Hayden stopped kneading her back.

Hayden:All done..

Masa still laid on her back.

Masa:Thanks..

Hayden:welcome..

He walked out of her bedroom and paused going back.

Hayden:I'm leaving.

Masa:Okay. Bye..

Hayden went to say bye to the twins and looked around her lounge. He saw the set of spare keys and he grabbed those before walking out. He took out his phone. His heart was not doing this to him.

Never again. His brain was the wisest. He texted Tessa.

Hayden:Hi, can we meet up?

He sent the text and got inside his car starting it.  
His phone beeped.

Tessa: Sure. I see why not.

Hayden: Can I pick you up in 30 minutes?

Tessa: Definitely.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*49\*

At Masa's house

Masa got up and wore her tee before heading to the kitchen.

She found Avery climbing the shelf with the help of her brother.

Masa: Get down!

Avery did as told and flashed a smile.

Avery: I want seeds..

Masa frowned.

Masa: Seeds?

She nodded.

Masa: What for?

Avery: Daddy said to have a baby you swallow a seed and eat lots of food and drink lots of water.

Masa face palmed.

Masa:Oh my God!

He is corrupting the poor kid.

Avery frowned.

Avery:that's not how to have a baby?

Avery touched Masa's stomach.

Masa laughed.

Masa:Well no..let me tell you..

She bent down to her level and Smith Jr listened too.

Masa:When you are sleeping, an angel tells you that you will have a baby..

Avery:Huh?

Masa:Remember that Christmas story about Jesus?

Avery nodded.

Masa:It happens like that. Then you will see your tummy grow and grow..

Avery:So...that is how Ari..

Masa quickly nodded.

Avery:And my mommy in heaven was like that too?

Masa nodded.

Avery:oh. I und-unde...

Masa:Understand. Say U-nder-stand..

Avery followed her lead.



Masa:Only big people can have babies.

Avery:I want a baby..

Masa:When you are 25 you'll have a baby okay?

Avery:Go sleep so you can have a baby..

Masa laughed.

Masa:You ask for a baby..

Smith Jr:Huh?

They were asking too many questions.

Avery:How? You are mommy and you can have another baby..let's ask for a baby..

Avery grabbed her hand leading her to the couch.

Avery:Then you sleep. Will your tummy grow and grow?

Masa shook her head. Avery was on a mission.

At Tessa's house

Tessa turned around as she looked at herself.  
The jeans and hoodie were fine.

Her mother walked inside the bedroom.

Ma Tessa:Where are you going?

Tessa:I met a childhood friend. Remember  
Daisy?

Her mother nodded. This time she didn't seem  
to have an attitude.

Ma Tessa:Yes. Your friend at school.

Tessa:Yes. We are going to catch up. I'll be  
back before you know it.

Ma Tessa:But..

Tessa:Trust me..

She kissed her mother's cheek as her phone beeped.

Tessa:I love you..

She said walking out. Her mother remembered those times when Tessa was sweet. Was the sweet Tessa coming back? She so wished it was like that.

Tessa kissed her dad goodbye after selling the same lie to him.

She pushed the gate open and walked five

houses away when she spotted the Mercedes.

She walked to it and he opened the door for her.

Hayden:Hey..

Tessa:Hi..

Hayden handed her chocolate and a single rose.

Tessa chuckled as she smelled the fresh rose.

Tessa:Thank you.

Hayden:I didn't know what to get you..

Tessa looked at the rose and the chocolates.

She wasn't going to have a lot of them because they were not good for health but it was the thought that counted.

Tessa:This is sweet. You seem sweet..

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:I'm far from sweet, trust me..

Tessa:Oh...(laughing)Where are you taking me?

Hayden:Wherever the road leads us..

Tessa:Sweet!

Hayden:Connect your phone to the car system.

Tessa:Alright..

She did so and went through her playlist. She played Khalid's Saturday nights..

Hayden smiled.

Tessa sung along and he looked at her surprised, she had a nice voice. Soft and sweet and innocent.

He listened to her singing along. At this point, his heart was silent and it was better that way.

Someone who won't make it hurt when they leave.

Tessa:How old are you?

Hayden:25...

And it was even better she didn't even know his social status or who he was.

Tessa:old but not old.

Hayden:Mxm!

He parked his car in the middle of nowhere.

Hayden:I brought food.

Tessa:Thank you..

He opened the car and stepped out first..

Hayden:It's muddy..

Tessa looked at her white kicks then back at Hayden.

Hayden rolled his eyes chuckling..

Hayden:They are just shoes.

Tessa:My favourite shoes Hayden..

Hayden opened the boot and walked to her side where he picked her up.

Tessa:Oh!

Hayden placed her down.

Hayden:Now your shoes are safe and you.

Tessa just smiled as Hayden sat next to her. If this was a date, it was laid back and not too fancy.

They just stared at the moon and she placed her head on his shoulder. He smelled good.

Tessa:You smell good.

Hayden has heard that line a whole lot of times.

Hayden:I know..

Tessa:You were supposed to say thank you, it's a compliment Mr..

Hayden:Smith..

Tessa:Smith..

She said it and it felt familiar but she ignored that feeling as she inhaled his masculine scent..

Tessa:Is this a date?

Hayden:What do you think it is?

Tessa:Well you're sweet, this feels like a classic romance movie..

Hayden:I didn't take you for the girl who watches romance movies.

Tessa:I actually do and I have big ambitions too.

Hayden:Do tell..



Tessa:I'm about to leave for Uni..uhm I got direct entry into medicine at UB. I did A levels at Canada.

Hayden:You didn't live here?

He asked. As if he didn't already know.

Tessa:No. I moved to Canada when I was twelve...

Hayden:Do you miss it there?

Tessa:I actually do..

Hayden:isn't home where the heart is?

Tessa:I don't think home is good for me..

Hayden:And the piercings?

Tessa:I'm not a rebel or anything. I like them..They are cute...They make me look somewhat badass but they are cute.

Hayden:They suit you..

Tessa:i know...

Hayden pushed her away chuckling.

Hayden:You are supposed to say thank you.

Tessa:You didn't say thank you first..

They locked eyes and Tessa looked down. He lifted her head up and slowly angled his lips onto hers. His heart kept on telling him that he was kissing the wrong person..

He ignored the useless organ as he deepened the kiss, he broke it as they breathed each other's breaths. He looked into her pretty eyes and he kissed her again, placing his hands on her cheek.

At Masa's place

Avery gave Masa the phone.

Masa:What?

Avery:I want to talk to dad..

Masa unlocked the phone and clicked on Hayden's name.

Avery:What did you write here? I can't read it..

Masa just shook her head.

Masa:I wrote daddy.

Avery:That's not how my teacher taught me to write mama..she got off the bed and found a paper and pen on the dresser.

Avery:Here is how the teacher showed me..

She slowly wrote the word daddy then looked at the phone. It was not the same thing.

Masa:I'll change it..

As if she'll change his name..

Masa dialed Hayden and handed Avery the phone.

Somewhere out there

Amidst the kiss that had seemed to get hotter, Hayden's phone rang in his pocket. He tried to ignore it but it rang. He broke the kiss as Tessa was out of breath. She touched her lips. The kiss was none like she ever had.

Hayden slid his phone out and with the corner of her eye she saw the name Sunshine and a picture of one beautiful lady.

Hayden answered.

Hayden:Hello...

Avery:Daddy?

Tessa frowned. That sounded like a little girl's voice and she was calling him daddy..

Hayden rubbed his lips.

Hayden:Hey princess what's up?

Avery:I told mama to sleep. She said you have to ask for a baby then when you sleep an angel comes and gives you a baby. Her tummy will grow.

Hayden laughed. Masa's explanation seemed better than his.

Avery:We are having a baby..

Avery said excited and Masa spoke in the background.

Masa:Avery kante o bua eng?

Tessa could hear the conversation.

Avery:Well dad we are going to have a baby. Bye and I love you...

She hung up before he could say anything.

Tessa didn't want to ask anything yet. Hayden turned to look at her and she smiled. Hayden switched off his phone.

Hayden:Where were we?

His voice was seductive and so deep she would say yes a million times.

He said as he kissed her again and his hands slipped under her hoodie. He laid her down as he removed her hoodie with kisses in between.

Hayden's breath hit her neck and she crossed her legs.

Hayden:We shouldn't be doing this..

He looked into her eyes and he swore they said fuck me.

Hayden:But fuck it!

He attacked her lips full force as his other hand unzipped her jeans. She helped him by pushing them down and when her legs were free from the jeans she slipped her hands underneath his sweater and all she felt was muscle. Just muscle and more muscle.

He sucked her neck softly as she pushed his sweater up. He lifted his hands making the job easier for her. Tessa's mouth dropped. Holy crap. He was hot and had tattos..

Hayden pushed her tee off and he slowly kissed between her breasts. He knew she had a heart scar but since it was late at night he wasn't going to see it clearly.

Tessa moaned as his tongue swirled around her nipples, she held his head as he #EXPLICIT

.

.

\*

\*



\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*50\*

The unknown location

Tessa placed her head on his warm chest. This was definitely a new experience. Wow!

Hayden kissed her salty neck as she giggled.

Tessa:Stop!

Hayden:Can I go at it again?

Tessa:Ng ng, I'm tired..

Hayden chuckled. How he managed to go months without pussy surprised him. Was he

making this a relationship? He hasn't had one ever since Regina died. It has been one night stands and no strings attached stuff.

Tessa looked up at him.

Tessa:What's the time?

Hayden looked for his phone and switched it on. He waited for it to restart before entering his passwords.

Hayden:Almost midnight.

Tessa:Oh shit!

She moved from his chest.

Tessa:I have to go..

She quickly picked her top and Hayden held her hands.

Hayden:Tessa?

Tessa:Hmm?

Hayden:Relax...breath in and out...

She did as he said and looked at him.

Hayden:Calm now?

She nodded.

Hayden:Now you can get dressed.

She kissed his cheek with a smile. She took her time getting dressed in her clothes and she wore her hoodie over her hair, she failed to straighten it out so the hoodie will do.

Hayden just wore his pants and shoes before he picked her up again taking her to the passenger seat.

Tessa:Thank you..

He walked to his side after closing the boot and got in the car.

He started the car and reversed before driving for sometime till he joined the main road.

At Tessa's house

30 minutes later Hayden parked a few houses away.

Hayden:I'll keep driving till you get home safely.

Tessa nodded. He was sweet. He said he was not? He was just saying that.

She walked to their house as Hayden slowly drove behind her. When she pushed the gate, he

saluted and drove off while she got inside the yard. She was still sticking to her story. No matter what.

On the road

Hayden made a u-turn and drove over to Masa's place. He parked his car inside the yard and used his spare keys to unlock the house.

He walked inside and all the lights were off. He made his way to her bedroom and she was fast asleep with the twins on the bed. His heart pounded and it felt as if what he just did with Tessa was wrong. He was careful not to make any noise as he made his way to the bed. The twins were heavy sleepers and they definitely won't wake up till they are woken up for school. He pushed her hair backwards and she just

turned to face the other way, breathing softly.

He ran his knuckles over her cheek as she slept.

He lightly kissed her cheek and she turned again. He had to go.

He walked out of the bedroom and quickly got out of the house with no hassle.

He drove out of the yard and made his way to his house. What the hell was he doing? He had no idea.

The following morning

At Masa's house

Masa quickly did her hair as her phone rang.

Masa: Masa speaking hello..(placing the phone between her shoulder and ear) The car is good...okay. I'll pay when I get to the office..huh? Oh. You'll tell her...okay. shap and thank you.

She hung up and threw the phone on the bed.

Masa: Are you guys done?

Smith Jr: Almost.

Masa: I'm about to go.

She tied her hair back and took her bag and phone walking out in her regular high heels.

She walked to the kitchen. It's funny how her, Hayden, Cane and Blair have adjusted to having

all three kids over that it's never a hassle when they are at their houses.

There was a meeting later and well the driver will have to drop them off at the office.

Masa:Avery! Smith!la ntia bathong!

They replied at the same time and they finally made their way to the lounge after ten minutes.

Masa:Sh-uhm holy cow..your bags. Kante...

Masa dialed Hayden's number who answered immediately.

Masa:Morning..come pick the kids up for school. Their school bags. It has their homeworks.

Hayden:I'll be there in a few.



Masa:Thanks.

She hung up and just checked their lunchboxes.

Minutes later, Hayden parked his car inside the yard and opened the door.

He found Masa in the kitchen and he smiled.

Hayden:Mor-

He took her by surprise.

The twins rushed to the kitchen and he smiled.

Hayden:Get your lunchboxes and go to the car.

Masa handed them to the kids and he looked at Masa.

Hayden:Are we going?

Masa:I'll take my car..

Hayden:Nonsense..let's go.

Masa:Drop off the kids first..

Hayden:I'm not taking no for an answer  
Sunshine..

Masa:Fine..

Hayden:After you..

He walked closely behind her and he licked his  
lips.

Masa:You didn't come with the Mercedes?

Hayden:Nope..

He wasn't going to have his mini family inside  
the car he sexed another woman in. He should  
take it to the car wash even for thorough  
cleaning.

Masa sat in the front and placed her bag at her feet. She buckled up and told the kids to buckle up at the back.

Hayden started the car and reversed before he closed the gate.

Masa:And he still refusing with my remote..

Hayden:It's mine to keep.

He joined the road and played songs over a low volume while he stole looks at Masa who was facing the other way.

She leaned back and closed her eyes. He looked at her lips and faced the road.

They arrived at the school and the kids got out after saying goodbye. Masa spotted Joy's car.

Masa:Let me go see Ari, I'll be back.

She got out and Ari saw her.

She picked Arielle up.

Masa:Hey sweetheart..

She said kissing her cheek.

Masa:Have a great day angel.

She placed her down and Arielle said bye to Joy and went away.

Masa:Hey Joy. And have a nice day.

Joy:Same..

Masa made her way to the car and got inside.

Masa:You can drive..

Hayden:Mxm..

Masa:we will be late(laughing)

Hayden:Who cares?

Masa:I don't want a written warning Mr..

Hayden:Why were you angry?

Masa:Me? Angry? Never..

Hayden:In the morning when I came to pick you guys up, you seemed angry.

Masa:I'm cool..

Hayden:Sure?

Masa:Mmhmm..

Their eyes locked and Masa was the first to break the eye contact.

Hayden sighed. He kept on driving till he got to

the office.

She was about to get out of the car after he parked it but he held her hand. Masa quickly removed her hand. The more he touched her, the more her true feelings were going to show. They were just co-parenting. What would people say? Moving from uncle to nephew. Like a cheap harlot? He deserved way better.

She wasn't about to be the bad guy again.

Hayden:Wait..

He stepped out of the car and she did too..

Hayden:Masa what's wrong? Are you pregnant like Avery said?

Masa laughed.

Masa:o bua dilo yo..

Hayden:Come here..

Masa:I have work.

Hayden:ga ke lome Masa..

He pulled her to him and held her.

Hayden:Why are you so moody?

Masa:It's nothing, let me go.

Hayden:Wait, I'm still asking questions here..

Masa:I'm good H..

He inhaled her soft scent as he rubbed her back. The heels made her tall, but she still didn't reach his height with them on.

Hayden:Are you pms'ng? You usually get moody as fuck..

Masa:Fotshek Hayden! Fotshek!

Hayden:The day you're going to shut up..

Masa rolled her eyes, secretly enjoying being in his arms.

Masa:I have work to do.

Hayden:You're hugging the CEO.

Masa:Ke tla go roga kana Hayden..

Hayden:And that is supposed to scare me? I wonder why Ari is sweet when you're like this..

He said and she laughed softly against his chest as his vibrated a bit.

Masa:Ng ng Hayden let me go, now your cologne is going to stick on me.(Attempting to push him back but he still held her)

Hayden:I smell good..

Masa:Whoever said that lied to you.



He broke the hug still keeping his hands around her waist.

Hayden: Still moody?

Masa: No..

He gently kissed her forehead and let go of her waist.

Hayden: The meeting. You know how important it is to me.

Masa: I know..

She took her bag and walked away while he watched her walk away. He was unaware of Cane's car that had just parked and that he had been watching the whole moment.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*51\*

At the office

Hayden went over his documents once again.  
Making sure everything was set and okay.

The door opened and he frowned seeing Cane.  
Well Hayden was running his Construction  
business, so he didn't know what his uncle was  
doing here.

Cane:Can we talk?

Hayden closed the files.

Hayden:Sure..

Cane sat down and looked at Hayden.

Cane:What's going on between you and Masa?

Hayden:We are just co-parenting?

Cane:You're sure?

Hayden:Yes. Why wouldn't I be? Is there a problem? Did she say anything?

Cane:No..I just wanted to know.

Hayden:Is that all?

Cane was about to say yes when he paused.

Cane:Whatever you do, don't hurt her.

Hayden:And how would I hurt her when we are just co-parenting?

Cane:If you say so. And all the best for that meeting.

Hayden:I'm meeting the top dogs neh? Thank you.

Cane:Update me on what happens.

Hayden:Okay.

Cane walked out. Hayden was good at hiding whatever he was hiding. No wonder he was dangerous. Who would suspect that he has done a lot of evil over the past six years and he still managed to exude dominance and a clean record? He was indeed his father's son.

Cane made his way to Masa's office and he knocked lightly on the door.

Masa:Come in.

He walked in and she looked up in her glasses.

Masa:Rraagwe Ari..

Cane>Hello and goodmorning..

Masa:What did Ari do?

Cane:My daughter is well behaved for your information.

Masa:Take a seat.

Cane:I won't be here for long, I was just around the area.

Masa:Oh okay.

Cane:I have a question..

Masa:Shoot.

Cane:What you told me six years ago, did you get over it?

Masa:Yep. Yep..

He looked at her carefully trying to see if she was lying but she looked sincere.

Cane:Okay.

Masa:Why are you asking?

Cane:Just..

Masa:Alright. I have work to do big guy, close the door on your way out.

Cane walked out and closed the door. Not that he would take offence if there was anything happening but six years ago when Masa had blatantly told him that she saw Hayden in him had been a huge blow to his ego. Of course he knew they had a one night stand with no feelings involved whatsoever but she had been that brutal to tell him that once upon time she had a huge crush on Hayden. She had been a free spirit then and she was unfiltered so she wondered if her crush on Hayden was still there six years later but it seems not. When she left the country to go study abroad, the free spirit faded and it was hard to tell what she was thinking about unless she made it clear to you. Her feelings weren't just out there for everyone to see and he guessed it had a lot to do with

growing up.

She looked like she was way past Hayden and maybe he was reading too much into what happened at the parking lot.

Three hours later the boardroom was full and they were all waiting for Hayden. The man of the moment to show up.

Masa walked to his office and knocked.

Hayden:Give me a few minutes.

Masa:Hello..

Hayden:Come in..

She walked in and he was standing up wearing his jacket.

Hayden:I look okay?

Masa:You do..

Hayden:You can lie to my face. O moloji akere..Fix my tie.

Masa:Mr it's fine..

Hayden:Masa tlhemma..

She walked to the other side of the desk where he was standing and she just fixed his tie, not that there was a lot fixing to do.

Masa straightened the tie with her hands and looked at him.

Masa:Done. Happy?

Hayden:Yes..

Of course he knew the tie was fine, he just



wanted to feel her hands over his chest.

Masa:You're going to be late..

Hayden:You'll give a good excuse.

Masa:Bathong man of the moment let's go.

Hayden's phone rang and his heart skipped a beat as he quickly picked it up before Masa could see who was calling.

Hayden:Hello...

Tessa:Hi..

She paused. She had honestly thought he was ignoring her because there was no good morning text or anything.

Hayden:I'll call you back in a few hours, I'm in a meeting at the moment.

Tessa:Okay.

He hung up and placed his phone. It honestly felt as if he was doing Masa wrong.

Masa:Have your things ready?

Hayden:As I'll ever be..wish me luck..

Masa:You don't need it..

Hayden handed her his documents and he walked out following her.

Hayden:You should let your hair loose..

Masa:It look unprofessional.

Hayden:You seem uptight.

He just removed the ribbon letting her hair flow.

Hayden:Much better..

Masa:Heish, heish..

Masa opened the boardroom door and stepped in as everyone's eyes landed on her. Her throat dried up but luckily Hayden stepped in and held her waist.

Hayden: You owe me and thank you (whispering)

Masa sat down as Hayden unbuttoned his blazer. He looked so in control and to imagine that the room was half full with men of high power and dominance.

The screen flashed and she smiled as Dr Romano connected via skype.

Hayden: Good afternoon gentleman.

The men looked among themselves impressed and Maduo rolled her eyes. They were so full of themselves.

Hayden:I guess I should begin with the meeting and my apologies for wasting your time.

Hayden:Now....

He started talking and he paused when Angel asked a question.

Angel:So for this hospital you need all of us.

Hayden:I want everyone to consider it as an investment. No matter how the economy looks, there is always income generated from the healthcare sector.

Reba:He is definitely right.

Lefika unbuttoned the first two buttons of his shirt. This young guy was good and he covered all angles.

Dan:I have to agree with Hayden on this one.

Maduo:gentlemen this is a huge gamble and I must say..I'm willing to take the risk.

Rethabile:So I'll draw the papers, for the contract to be signed and the works.

Masa:Can I throw in something?

Hayden:of course.

Masa:Well let's take this new private hospital we're building, we are putting in almost everyone's money in on it, will it make double the money invested? I mean there is free hospital care...we're looking at something that will draw people to that particular hospital..

Angel paused.

Angel:She has a point.

Masa:Thank you.

She looked at Hayden and he hated that she just put him on the spot.

Masa:A different approach is needed. It just can't be a hospital.

Maduo:She's smart. Is she the deputy CEO?

Hayden:The financial engineer of the company.

Maduo:Wow, so we need to tweak out a few things in that aspect.

Reba:So another meeting in a week?

Angel:I'll be there physically.

Lefika:I'll definitely show up.

Dan:Yes. We are investing big money into this..

Masa:Uhm..Thank you.

Maduo:And do you engineering stuff..it seems as if you know the market better.

Reba:I think next week everyone will be here..I'm

already sold though.

They stood up and walked out.

Reba walked to where Hayden was standing.

Reba: Piece of advice if you flop, some man will take her.. I saw the way you look at her..

He walked away and Hayden talked with Lefika for a few minutes.

Lefika: and you're not married yet. O emetse eng, mosadi a le ha pele ha gago?

Hayden: Not yet.

Dan: They'll take her... anyways bye young man..

Lefika: I think I'm seeing my wife after this..

Dan: Power couple e ile (laughing)

Lefika: Reba and Maddy? They are tight as thieves. Anyway sure sure my guy.

They all walked out as Angel said bye before disconnecting.

Hayden:And you had to put me on the spot.

Masa stretched.

Masa:You were going to make big mistakes trust me, as much as they are good in the game. For such you always need a financial engineer my guy.

Hayden:Se bothhale tlhe..

Masa:Fosek..

He stood behind her and just massaged her shoulders.

Hayden:But thank you.

Masa:I guess we're even now..



Hayden:No we're not.

Masa:I need to pick the kids up from school.

Hayden:Don't bother about it. Late lunch?

Masa:I'm tired.

Hayden:A quick bite.

He said as he helped her stand and wrapped his arms around her waist.

Hayden:But are you sure you're not on your periods?

Masa:Hayden!

Hayden:I guess that's a yes. Let's go and tell me about your plans for the twins' birthday..

Masa:Let go of my waist. Wa lapisa!

He laughed and still kept his hands there.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

A WEEK LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*52\*

At Hayden's House

All the kids ran upstairs to their bedroom as  
Masa cleared the table.

She took stuff to the kitchen before she picked up all the gadgets and put them away where the kids can find them.

Hayden held her waist from behind and breathed in her soft scent. He didn't know what it was about the way she smelled.

Masa:I'm done, thank you for the movie. I have to go. You'll take care of the kids akere? Don't forget tomorrow is their birthday.

Hayden:Go where?

Masa:Home.

Hayden:Ema pele...

He slowly kissed her neck and Masa sucked in a breath.

Masa:Don't do this H. Please don't.

Hayden:What if I want to?

Masa:It is wrong on so many levels..

Hayden:I'm not the one known to do what people expect me to do.

Masa used her hands to try and remove his hands but instead he held her hands.

Hayden's fingers traced her arms and Masa swore she felt butterflies in her tummy.

He tilted her head upwards and kissed her pink juicy lips. Fuck! He has wanted to do this for some time. Her lips were sweet. He turned her small body around and tightly held her close to him with his lips still attached to hers.

He broke the kiss and her lips parted softly as she looked at him with dazed eyes. His blood

raced at the innocent look she gave him and he felt so much guilt weigh him down while he looked at her. They said don't hurt her and he was about to do exactly that. I'm sorry baby girl. He thought to himself and he rubbed her chin gently and smiled. Masa blinked a couple of times and Hayden kissed her again. Slowly this time, taking his time to ravish her saccharine lips.

Hayden broke the kiss and just held her in his arms. So delicate.

He liked the feel of her in his arms. Masa kept her eyes down. She hated how much she loved this, she was doing exactly what she told herself she should never do. She used her fingers to touch her lips.

Hayden lifted her head up.

Hayden:Talk to me..

Masa:T-this...

Hayden:Is perfect at the moment. Don't overthink it okay angel?

He placed his chin over her head. He waited and listened. There was no noise upstairs.

Hayden:Smith? Avery? Ari?(shouting)

There was no reply. They must've fallen asleep.

He still didn't let her go. Was he coming on too strong for her?

Hayden:Sunshine?

Masa:Hmm...

Hayden:Are you strong?

That question left her confused. Strong in terms of what?

Masa:Hmm?

He kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:I was talking about physically...

He lied through his teeth and she didn't notice that.

He lifted her head up gently and french kissed her lips as he picked her up heading to the bedroom.

Hayden closed the door with his foot and

walked to the large bed, placing her gently on the bed.

Her hair covered his bedsheets and his guilt worsened, he shouldn't even play her like this but he wanted her. To taste her, even if it was going to be the first and last time. He swallowed it down as he laid on top of her.

He slipped his hands underneath her tee and felt her breasts. They fit perfectly in his large hands.

Hayden:Perfect..

He removed the tee and threw it across the room as he found her lips again and she wrapped her hands around his neck. His hands slipped between her legs and he held the elastic



of her panties pulling them down her legs.  
Thank God she wore a skirt too.

Her feminine scent was tempting. Very tempting as he placed his warm palm on top of her pussy..he got hard that his hard on was straining his pants.

He pulled the skirt down and licked his lips.  
Fuck!

He looked at her and he just kissed her forehead softly.

Hayden:Hey, look at me(softly)

He kissed her lips and #EXPLICIT

The Following Morning

Masa woke up and looked around. The way her lower body ached was testament to what happened the night before. The door opened and she covered her body with the sheets.

Hayden:It's me..

He walked in with breakfast and she sat upright.

Masa:Wh-

Hayden sat down next to her and held her hands.

Hayden:What happened last night was a mistake.

Masa just looked at him. It had been too good to be true. She shouldn't love him but she couldn't help it. What he said was all lies last night when he was over her...

Hayden looked into her eyes as he tipped her head over. He didn't see her reacting to what he just said.

Hayden:It's going to be awkward and can I be honest?

Masa cleared her throat. She was a big girl.

Masa:Yeah.

Hayden:It was weird knowing I was in the same place my uncle was. No offence.

Masa forced a bright smile.

Masa:None taken. Let me get going.

Hayden:I made breakfast.

Masa:It's okay. I have to prepare for the twins' birthday celebration. Where are the kids?

Hayden:You can go with them, they finished bathing.

Masa:Sure.

She got out of bed and looked for her clothes. Hayden swallowed. He expected her to scream at him for using her but she just agreed to whatever he said. That was him saving her and himself the heartache. And he knew after this, she won't let him and he paused. At the fact that another man will have access to her. Something stuck in his throat and he had to rub his chest, he didn't know if that will help.

Masa finished getting dressed and she had detached herself from it all. She looked for a brush in his room and brushed her hair.

Hayden:You're fine?

Masa:Peachy.

Hayden:I hope this won't ruin our co-parenting

relationship..

Masa:I love the kids as if they are my own.  
Whatever we did has nothing to do with them.

She looked at herself in the mirror and looked around making sure she didn't leave anything.

She walked out and Hayden rubbed his head. It was for the best.

He wanted to punch something but she was probably still in the house. He walked out of the bedroom in his jeans and no top..

He found her smiling with the kids and he looked at them. A whole complete family right here. Was he selfish to want it all without risking his heart?

He knew now that nothing lasts forever. He once said forever and always and she left. She died on him. He didn't want to break down again all in the name of love.

He would go for something safer and for the past week he has spent with Tessa he had realised that as much as she had the heart of the woman he loved and still loves dearly she was never going to be her. Not in a million years but that was safer because his heart didn't skip a beat nor did his blood rush when he was with her. He wasn't going to be hurt by anything she does and that was security for him.

He wasn't about to also make Masa the talk of the town, people talking about her going in between uncle and nephew as if a person can control who they fall in love with. He didn't think

he was going to be sane once people called her names, he would definitely go on a killing spree so to avoid such, he did what he had to do. He definitely saw love in her eyes last night and every moment of it he had craved to be at the receiving end of it but it wasn't possible.

Masa looked at him smiling. It was as if he hadn't dropped a bombshell on her.

Masa:Don't forget. Bye..kids let's go.

Avery and Ari held her hands on both sides and they walked out.

Hayden looked up.

Hayden:Fuck!!

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*53\*

At Masa's house

The kids ran to their rooms. Masa walked to her bedroom and she sat down on the bed. Did she love Hayden? Yes.

At the moment if he was to change his mind would she go to him? In a heartbeat but she had to love herself. He was right last night was a mistake. Boundaries were crossed that



shouldn't been crossed.

She badly wanted to cry but the tears weren't there. Had she gotten so used to hiding that she failed to show emotion?

She sucked in a deep breath. This chapter was closed. She was going to forget it ever happened. It was just a one night stand like the few that happened when she was younger and stupid. Hayden was never hers. His heart belongs to Reginah and as he used to say, Reginah was his Forever and Always. She was just a mother to his children and nothing more.

She went through her phone and saw some of the pictures she had with him and the kids over the years. She backed them in her iCloud before she deleted them from her phone.

She called Blair.

Blair:Hey.

Masa:Hi, is everything ready?

Blair:Are you okay?

Masa:Just tired. Should I get the kids ready?

Blair:Yes mam. People will start arriving around noon.

Masa:Okay, we'll arrive an hour after everyone has arrived. Bye.

She hung up and headed to the bathroom for a long shower.

At Hayden's place

He got ready in casual wear and sprayed his favourite cologne and he picked his car keys. It was hot but he wore that polo neck for a reason, Masa had left some hickeys on his neck and he realised that when he was shaving. It was kind of cute, if they were any normal couple he would've let the hickeys show and make her feel embarrassed in public when people asked about them. He let out a sigh. That was part of the impossible.

His phone beeped and he quickly replied Tessa.

Hayden:I'm on my way.

Tessa:Tell me when you arrive.

He unlocked the car and got inside.

Hayden:Alright.

He reversed his car and drove out of the yard as the gate closed. He drove off to Tessa's place.

At Tessa's place

Tessa tied her hair as she looked at herself in the mirror. What the hell was she supposed to wear for a kiddies party? She rolled her eyes. No wonder he didn't take her to his house.

He was like my kids are there. That is why they have a mother. She said to herself.

She took her bag. The jeans were fine and so was the off the shoulder top. If he deemed it inappropriate it was all on him.

She changed a thousand times and she didn't have the energy to change again.

She got his text that he had arrived and she walked out of her bedroom. It was the weekend and obviously her parents were home and she told them she was invited to a kids' party. She will bring evidence for that plus in two months she was going to school so cheers to the freedom of doing whatever she wanted in Gabs city.

Tessa:Uhm bye..

She walked out and slid the gate. She spotted his Mercedes and half ran to it. The door opened and she got in the front seat.

Hayden kissed her lips.

Hayden:Hey you..

Tessa:Hiii...

He drove off as she connected her phone to the car bluetooth system as usual.

Hayden looked at Tessa. She hadn't asked anything about the twins when she told him. Was he imposing so much responsibility on an 18 year old? Of course he didn't want her to mother them, but if their relationship was going to be something long term, she is bound to get used to the kids because they can't always stay with Blair or Masa when she is there.

Tessa:Uhm..you said they are turning four right?

Hayden:Six..

She touched her head. Yikes. She wasn't really paying attention when he went on to talk about

their ages. When he said he has kids her mind went on autopilot. She did the math and gasped at him.

Tessa: You had kids at 19?

Hayden: Yep..

She sighed.

Tessa: That must've really sucked, some girl showing up pregnant and saying you're going to be a father when you had school and had to live your life.

Hayden: The kids are actually a blessing..

Tessa: That's cute.. what did you say their names are?

Hayden: Smith Jr and Avery..

Tessa: Cuuutee...

She said. There was no way in hell she was

allowing herself to fall pregnant. She still wanted to live life to her fullest without the responsibility of kids.

Hayden drove through the traffic and when they finally arrived at the designated venue Tessa gasped. They were just being extra for a birthday for kids. It's not as if it will stick in their minds when they are 18.

Hayden: We have arrived.

Tessa: It's cute. For kids I mean.

They got out of the car as kids ran around the place with their parents conversing on the other side. Hayden didn't know what he would do without Masa and Blair's help.



Meanwhile Masa parked her car and looked at all kids in the back. She threw two blindfolds.

Masa:Smith, Avery wear those my sweets.

They did as she said and Ari looked at them. Arielle's birthday was like four months away from theirs and that is when she will be six.

Masa:I'm stepping out and going to open the door alright.

She got out of the car and opened the door as the kids slowly got out. She told the twins to hold hands and she held Ariana and Smith's hands.

She looked around and noticed that everyone was here.

Masa:Well follow me my people..

They did a pretty good job and she was the twins will be happy. Of course they each had different custom made cakes.

She arrived to where everyone was standing waiting for the little people of the moments.

Hayden saw her making her way to them and he failed to pull his eyes away from her. She was wearing casual but she always looked good in shorts, revealing those yellow thighs. He swore he spotted a pink spot from last night. Masa looked up and locked eyes with Hayden who had his arm around Tessa and she focused on what she had been doing.

Masa told Ari to go to her father and the little girl half ran to him.

Masa:Okay loviae..

She held both blindfolds and she removed them at the same time. Everyone screamed surprise!

The twins looked around and smiled. Avery held back tears. Hayden let go of Tessa's waist and picked her.

Avery:Happy birthday princess..

Tessa looked at the little girl. She looked so familiar. She shook her head and looked at their mother. That was the baby mama? She looked young.

She swallowed. Why was she suddenly jealous of her, then it clicked that time she and Hayden first had sex when her picture popped up as

Sunshine. What if she was going to use the kids to her advantage to try and tear the relationship apart?

She will cross that bridge when she gets there.

Hayden talked to the kids for a while as the DJ played music. Yes he came with Tessa and everyone could see that. He knew that half of the family was happy he was moving on.

Hayden stood up and looked at Masa once the kids went to their friends.

Hayden: Thank you so much.

Masa: Welcome.

Hayden: O sharpo?

Masa: Why wouldn't I be H? Let me go see if the

food was prepared well. Excuse me.

Hayden looked at her walk away and he walked back to Tessa.

Tessa:Is that your baby mama?

Hayden:Yes.

Tessa:She's beautiful.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:You can tell her yourself, she is not rude..

Tessa:I didn't say she is rude..are you sure there is nothing going on between the two of you?

Hayden:Absolutely nothing.

Tessa:Alright. She didn't come off as the baby mama to fight every woman her baby daddy dates..

Hayden could hear the jealousy in Tessa's voice

and he reassured her that there was nothing going on between the two of them. Blair just sat down watching everything. Cane sat next to her.

Cane:It was about time he moved on.

Blair:His Regina was everything to him but..

Cane:But what?

Blair:Look at him..

Cane did as Hayden talked to Tessa while they shared kisses here and there.

Blair:He doesn't look happy, one would say he is forced.

Cane:maybe because everyone is looking.

Blair rolled her eyes.

Blair:You know your nephew better than that. When he is with someone his heart allows him to be free around, the smile on his face is

genuine and le wena wa go utlwa gore that is happiness righy there.

Cane looked closely.

Cane:You're right.

Blair:You see..maybe he moved in for the sake of moving on not because he is invested.

Cane:He is hurting himself that way.

Blair:He is no longer a teenager, that is a whole grown ass man with two kids. He will figure himself out.

Cane:With time, he just decided to date. It won't work out at the very first attempt.

Blair:You have a point.

They went on about their conversation. It seemed as if everything was going as planned.

Hayden looked around and Masa wasn't among the crowds.

Hayden:I'll be back okay babe?

Tessa nodded and Hayden looked for the area where the food was prepared. It was far from the crowds.

He found Masa laughing with the caterers as they got ready to serve the food.

Hayden:Masa can I talk to you?

Masa ignored him, pretending like she didn't even hear him. Hayden walked towards her.

Hayden:Masa ke bua le wena..

Masa:I'm busy Mr Smith..

She said with a blank face and continued talking with the chefess there.



Masa:I definitely need the recipe..

Her:I will send it to you..

Hayden got impatient as he grabbed her arm forcefully pulling her up on her feet and walking a few feet from the caterers.

Masa:What the hell Hayden?

He smashed his lips on hers and a slap landed on his face.

Masa:What the fuck do you think you're doing?

Hayden:Mas-

Masa:Marete Hayden! O njele go sharpo, o ira eng yaanong? Ska tlhola o batla go nopelwa mo go nna...

Hayden:I'm so-

Masa:Nyori wa eng? Hayden o ska batla go ntira sematla. If I avoid you avoidega le wena

ska batla go ira matlakala mo go nna making  
me feel cheap...akere wa re go weird go  
nthobala o itse gore ke jelwe ke malomeaago?  
Ee tswa mo go nna..Yeses!

She walked away fuming, her façade was near  
cracking and she needed to regain her  
composure and detach herself from everything.

Hayden held his cheek. It burned. For a small  
hand she delivered one mean slap.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*54\*

At the party

Hayden walked to where the caterers were and  
Masa wasn't there. He hoped it didn't bruise.

He made his way to the crowds and spotted  
Tessa sitting down. Tessa smiled when he  
walked back to her.

She frowned as she held his cheek. It felt hot,  
like he had just been slapped.

Tessa:Are you okay?

Hayden:I'm good..

He sat down next to her as they talked.

The people serving brought food to everyone. Cutting cake was going to be the last thing on the agenda. People had dropped their gifts off when they arrived.

Masa picked Arielle.

Masa:Enjoying yourself baby?

She nodded.

Ari:Heavy..

Masa laughed.

Masa:No you're not.

Arielle just slidd down and made her way to Joy. Masa shook her head with a smile. Arielle was a blessing regardless of the circumstances she was made in.

A realization hit her as she stood there looking around. She had done well but she had been stuck on a crush for a whole six year.

He turned out to be a jerk and was that what she wanted now? To be his side while he flaunts his girlfriend to the world?

Surely she wasn't about to go down that route. Even now there were no tears in her eyes. Maybe something was wrong with her but she needed to love herself more than she loved him.

She shook her head remembering last year when she accompanied him to the desert race. Man she was his biggest cheerleader as he raced through.

She ran her hands through her hair as the familiar song that she had played in his car that day played. Memories that deserved to be buried.

Where was Tily when she needed her? But she sang along, it was her favourite song too..

I'm your biggest fan, I'll follow you until you love me

Pa-paparazzi

Baby there's no other superstar, you know that I'll be...

Your pa-paparazzi

Promise I'll be kind but I won't stop until that boy is mine.

Baby you'll be famous, chase you down until  
you love me

She just had to..

Blair:I took a video.

Masa:Then send it..

Blair looked at the short video, Masa was singing along with a huge smile and she was making hearts with her fingers.

Hayden saw Masa, that was one of her favourite songs. How he knew that? She had said it herself last year when she was cheerleading for him at the race. He sighed and turned to listen to what Tessa was saying but she was looking at Masa.

Well things at the party went as planned and the

twins were very happy.

Masa stood by the car talking to Cane.

Masa:Take Ari today, I need some me time.

Cane:And you look exhausted. Rest Masa! Rest!

Masa:Sure sure big guy.

She walked away and crouched in front of the twins.

Masa:Akere you guys are spending the night with daddy? I need to rest.

Avery:Okay mommy. We love you..

She said as she hugged Masa.

Masa:And I love you too.

Smith Jr:Thank you..it was an awesome



birthday.

Masa:Aaw, as long as you too are happy.

Blair stood behind Masa as she watched the moment.

The kids let go of her and ran to where their father was.

Blair:I'm sure Regina is happy wherever she is, you are taking care of these kids so effortlessly.

Masa:It's nothing.

Blair:Are you sure you're fine?

Masa:Yes. Let me help them clean up.

She said hugging Blair.

Masa:Go rest now..

Masa walked away.

Hayden looked at the twins and introduced them to Tessa.

Hayden:Avery and Smith this is Tessa..

Avery:Hi, you're pretty.

Tessa:Thank you Avery..

She said through her teeth.

Smith Jr:Hi..dad can we go?

Hayden:Sure...

They all made their way to the car and the kids got in the back while Tessa sat in front.

Everything seemed awkward with the kids around. She sighed. She'll get used to it eventually.

Later that evening

Masa parked her car at the house and she got out. It was then that the events of what had happened hit her and left her paralysed.

Her hands shook as she tried to open the door and the key fell down. She picked it up and finally unlocked it.

She got inside the house and closed the door, sliding down as tears burned at the back of her eyes. She was cheap. A harlot.

She had stooped so low. Uncle and Nephew. Both as one night stands. Way to go Masa!

She sobbed softly. She was back to square one, she was slowly becoming that girl she had said she didn't want to become again.

This was too much. He showed how much of a jerk she was and she didn't see it. He just wanted to sleep with her nothing else and those 'I love yous' that were exchanged in the throes of passion were fake and like the love sick puppy she was she had almost fell for it.

She needed to numb the pain, her chest hurt. It was burning and she couldn't breath.

She held onto the door as she stood up. She walked to the kitchen and took out a bottle of wine and walked back to the lounge. She

switched on the stereo, the noise would be good too.

Unfortunately a sad song played and she cried more as she opened the bottle and drank it from the bottle.

I put you first and you adored it  
Set fires to my forest and you let it burn  
Sang off key in my chorus cause it wasn't yours

She hated that she had put him first, his needs before her and the love was disappearing. She swore it was...Maybe hating him would force her to love herself more..

He slept with her and brought a girl the exact same day. She was so cheap. Used goods.

She wailed as she covered her face with her hands. Her heartbeat was not normal. It beat irregularly and she didn't want to go back to the hospital again. She hated it. She hated how when she felt too much the heart arrhythmia would show.

But it beat so fast that she was finding it hard to breath. It felt as if she was near fainting. That was why she didn't want to feel..

Masa:-

She struggled to breath as she held her heart but one thing she was sure of was that she was done pining for Hayden. He didn't deserve her and she wasn't going to allow herself to be used.

She tried to breath through her mouth but the heart race was getting worse.

Her hands shook as she searched for her phone in her pockets. She quickly dialed her mother's number which was on speed dial along with Tily's number before her eyes closed and she dropped the phone when her mother called back.

Ma Masa:Hello? Hello? Masa? Ngwanaka?

No response.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*55\*

At the hospital

Masa's parents paced up and down waiting for the doctor to say something.

The doctor walked out and found her parents.

Doctor:Family?

Ma Masa:Yes..

Doctor:It was her heart arrhythmia.

Ra Masa:Oh God! Is she okay?

Doctor:Does she still take her prescribed



medication?

Ma Masa:I have no idea, she is all grown and she has been fine. I don't know what's wrong. Is she awake?

The doctor nodded.

Ma Masa:Can I talk to her?

Doctor:Okay..we'll keep her for four days.

Her parents nodded.

Ma Masa walked inside the room as her husband stayed behind. At least the kids weren't there, he'll see when her mother leaves the room.

Masa looked at her mother who sat next to her, she tried to remove the oxygen mask but her mother held her hand.

Ma Masa:You need it. Are you fine?

Masa nodded.

Ma Masa:Your dad carried you okay?

She nodded.

Ma Masa:What happened? Why are your eyes puffy? Did something happen?

She shook her head and her mother sighed.

Masa's phone rang and she looked at the caller id.

Her mother took the phone and it was Tily.

Ma Masa:Should I answer her? She has been calling for the past hour.

Masa nodded as she looked up.

Ma Masa:Matilda ngwanaka..

Tily:Hello ma, is Masa okay?

Ma Masa:She is in hospital.

Tily:What happened?

Ma Masa:Her heart arrhythmia..

Matilda ran her hand through her hair. It was dangerous because it makes it easy for Masa to have heart failure and die.

Matilda:Is she okay?

Ma Masa:She is..she just woke up.

Tily:I'll call her later, I wish I was there. Bye ma.

Ma Masa:Bye..

She placed the phone down.

Ma Masa:I'll get you something to eat okay?

Masa nodded and her mother walked out. Her

father walked in seconds later.

That one look from her father broke her resolve as tears streamed down her cheeks. He just sat on her bed and removed the oxygen mask as she sobbed on his shirt. He didn't say anything and just for peace's sake she wasn't going to say anything about this.

She stopped crying and he wiped her tears.

Masa: Thank you.

Ra Masa: Want to talk about it?

She shook her head. She was stupid and it didn't make the pain lessen. She was done. Done and dusted. The only thing that was her concern was the kids and nothing else.

Her phone rang and she saw the caller id. Her father frowned.

Ra Masa:Annoying prick ke mang?

Masa sucked in a breath.

Masa:Hayden..

Ra Masa:Should I answer it?

Masa:Maybe something is wrong with the kids..

Her father answered it.

Ra Masa>Hello..

Hayden frowned hearing Masa's father over the phone and his heart skipped a beat.

Hayden:Dumelang, Masa o teng? I'm by her house and she is not there..

Ra Masa:She is not there..

Hayden:Oh. I wanted to run something important by her.

Ra Masa:She is hospitalized.

Masa:Dad!

Ra Masa:Oh sorry, you weren't supposed to know that. Bye..

He hung up.

Ra Masa:I didn't know. The doctor said you'll be here for four days. For observation.

She nodded as she wore the oxygen mask again and laid down.

Ra Masa:Should we bring the kids here?

Masa:No, I'll come up with a good excuse.

She said through the mask and her father nodded. He pushed her hair back and kissed her forehead. She smiled and closed her eyes.

Meanwhile Hayden drove to the hospital, he was going to check which one. She was fine earlier on. He wondered what was wrong.

He swallowed his guilt down as he parked by the hospital parking lot. He was about to step out when he saw Masa's parents get inside their car. He guessed right.

Once her parents had drove off he stepped out of the car.

He walked inside and he stopped by the reception asking about her room number.

Receptionist:And you are? Only family is allowed.

Hayden:She is my children's mother.

The receptionist had to hide her shock. So he has been in a relationship all along? He was becoming famous and everyone was aware of a certain Mr Smith.

She gave him the room number and he thanked her. He opened the door slightly and stood there looking at her with the oxygen mask on.

The last time he was in hospital he lost someone important and she was in oxygen machines, not even breathing on her own. He hoped it was nothing serious.

He walked inside and Masa's eyes fluttered open. She sadly looked at him. He noticed the swollen eyes and he swallowed.



She sat up straight and removed the oxygen mask.

Masa:Are the kids okay?

Hayden:How are you feeling?

Masa:O seile bana le mang?

Hayden:They are al-

Masa:That's irresponsible of you H. Go back home.

Hayden:But you're not okay..

Masa:And..(pausing to suck in a deep breath as her heartbeat started to increase)you being here is not good for me.

Hayden:I'm sorry.

Masa:Apology accepted. And don't visit me. Thank you..(softly)

She rubbed her chest as her hands shook a bit.

She wore the oxygen mask and laid down facing the other way.

He looked at her as she rubbed her chest and he swore he saw tears in her eyes.

Hayden:Sunshine...

She didn't respond and he slid his hands in his pockets as his guilt ate him up and finished him off while he was standing there. The fact that she wasn't even fighting now, just accepted his apology and decided to sleep. His throat dried up as he ran out of words and he stood there.

The doctor walked in and he looked at Hayden as he nodded his head.

He checked the monitor noticing how her

heartbeat was increasing rapidly as she laid there.

Doctor:Mam..

Masa opened her eyes. Her chest hurt so bad.

Doctor:your heart is racing again, let me call a nurse to bring ice water..

He walked out. He also had to insert a catheter ablation before the end of the day. Or else this may cause sudden death and it was easy to lose patients especially since her heart arrhythmia was fast heartbeats also known as tachycardia.

Hayden stood there watching as the machines beeped and the doctor walked in with a nurse holding a bucket full of ice water.

They helped her up and she dunked her head in the water. Her heart beat slowed down as they handed her a towel minutes later.

Doctor:Better?

She nodded.

The nurse walked out.

Hayden silently walked out. He was confused and he waited for the doctor to get out. When the doctor walked out Hayden asked him what's wrong.

Doctor:We are controlling her heart arrhythmia.

Hayden:I'm lost...

The doctor explained it briefly and Hayden sighed. It seemed serious but how come she never told him?

He walked to her room and she was fast asleep.  
He was fucking everything up at the moment.

He made his way out of the hospital and got  
inside his car.

At Tessa's house

Tessa sat in front of her laptop. She had been  
putting off this thing of researching Hayden but  
tonight she might just do that. His daughter  
looked so familiar.

Of course she wasn't going to tell him that she  
was not going to stepmother the kids. The little  
boy had an attitude. Ignored her and she rolled  
her eyes thinking about it.

She paused when she saw old photos of him with the pretty doctor. She read more into it and her stolen heart pounded so hard, as if it was not in her chest.

She went on to read. Those were the twins she was carrying. She remembered the time Reginah was happy with the pregnancy.

Her throat dried as she read about her parents being sent to jail for being accomplices for organ harvesting. Did it mean he knew she was the one who had the heart?

Her hands shook as she kept on reading everything. How was Masa his baby mama? Was there something happening between them

perharps? But he was Reginah's fiance.

But he was younger than her. It didn't even make sense for him to have dated an older woman. It didn't even...

She didn't want to think about it. She closed her laptop and laid down in bed. Thinking.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

3 MONTHS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*56\*

At school

Masa sighed as she rubbed her tummy. The cramps were getting worse and she had taken painkillers to ease the pain.

These days the kids walked to her car. She didn't have the energy to make her way to them.

Smith Jr sat in the front seat while the girls sat at the back.

Smith Jr:Are you okay?

He asked and she nodded.

Masa:Yes. Let me drop you guys home.

Avery:Okay.



Smith Jr:When is dad coming back?

Masa:Not sure...

He sighed and leaned back. Avery looked sad and Ari just hugged her.

Masa:He'll call.

Smith:He promised he would but he didn't.

Avery:I don't like Tessa.

Masa:That's not a nice thing to say baby..

Smith Jr:He doesn't spend a lot of time with us.

Masa:I'll talk to him..

Masa handed Smith Jr her phone and she sighed as she reversed. She hated it when the kids' were this down. The last time she called when she wanted to talk to Hayden about the kids, Theresa answered the phone and told her

that she wasn't even the kids biological mother she should stop calling Hayden.

She wasn't about to be insulted by a teenager so she backed off. This was hurting the twins who were so used to having their father's attention at all times.

The cramps got worse but she ignored them. She had to take the kids home.

When she arrived home, she parked the car and made her way inside the house where she found the helper.

Masa:Hey, I brought the kids.

Her:Hello guys..

They all high fived her and Masa smiled as she sat down a bit disoriented. She blinked several times. She was going to make it to the office. It was not a long drive. She frowned standing up and the helper gasped as the kids looked at her a bit scared.

Helper:Masa, you're bleeding..

Masa:Ble-

She felt the wetness as the cramps got two times worse.

Helper:Mam, let me take you to the hospital.

The kids just stood there scared as they watched Masa bleed, her white pencil skirt soaked in crimson.

Ari rubbed her eyes as Avery held Smith Jr tightly...

Masa:Gosh! Wh-who'll stay with the kids?

Her:I'll call their grandparents..the keys..

At this point in time Masa was glad that she had wanted a person who had a driver's license.

The helper helped her to the car as blood ran down her legs. Masa closed her eyes as the pain hit.

The helper quickly closed the door and used her phone to call Masa's parents to go to the kids.

Meanwhile Smith Jr held Masa's phone in his hands. He wasn't sure about what was happening to his mother. He knew he lost his

first mother but he wasn't willing to lose another one.

Avery:Do-(shaky voice)Is mommy going to be okay?

Ari sat on the floor as she rubbed her eyes trying not to cry.

Avery:Call daddy..

Smith Jr tried to remember the numbers Masa pressed to unlock it and he pressed them.

They could see the trail of blood and their small hearts pounded.

Avery grabbed the phone from Smith as she went through the names. She couldn't see the name daddy so she looked for that other name she couldn't read.

She clicked on it and it rang.

They all looked at the phone as it rang, Hayden answered immediately.

Hayden:Sunshine...

There was a bout of silence as Avery sobbed.

Avery:mo-mommy..

Hayden:Princess?

Smith Jr:Are you coming back?

Hayden:I have work champ, why is your sister crying?

Avery:Mommy is going to go to heaven like mommy mommy(crying)

Hayden frowned as he undid his tie.

Hayden:Smith what's wrong?

Ari sobbed in the corner alone with her small head between her legs.

Smith Jr:Mom was bleeding..

Hayden:What do you mean bleeding?

He said as he checked the time and stood up.

Smith Jr:Sh-she didn't look okay, when we got here her skirt was red..it was blood. Aunty took her to the clinic.

Even his voice shook.

Smith Jr:Bye dad.

Hayden:Smi-

The line disconnected.

Hayden:Fuck!

His phone beeped and a message from Tessa came through.

Tessa: Hello babe, are we still on for tonight?

He texted back. She was already in school at the moment and well he was here at the Gaborone branch and that meant he spent a lot of time with her when she was not in lessons.

Hayden: I have to go back, something came up.

Tessa: Okay. Can I have P4000?

Hayden: What are you using it for?

Tessa: It won't be a surprise if I tell you..

Hayden: I'll send..

He quickly went to his banking app and sent her 5k. He called the secretary and asked her to book him an emergency flight back to



Francistown, preferably one that was about to take off in an hour or less.

At University of Botswana

Tessa sat by the FD park as the money reported. She checked if her appointment was still on. They had said she needed 3k for the procedure and it included the antibiotics. Afterall it was just clots of blood. She was a medical student and she knew the risks.

She sent hearts to Hayden before she headed the cafeteria. Never again.

She won't be careless, after this she was going to get the implant. She was so not ready and if he doesn't know she was good.

.

.

\*

\*

Selo sa mometso as you sleep. Monday it is now.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*57\*

At Masa's house

Masa's mother arrived at the house and she was didn't want to believe it when she saw the trail of blood. She had had her suspicions this past month of Masa being pregnant but she didn't want to mention it in case it made her

uncomfortable so she kept it to herself.

The kids looked genuinely scared and it was up to her to comfort them.

All three looked at her when she walked in and their little red eyes were heartbreaking. She just passed by the blood trail and crouched before the kids.

Ma Masa: Mommy will be okay, I promise.

Smith Jr: She is not dead?

Ma Masa shook her head.

Ma Masa: Not at all. She is strong, can we go over to my house?

She asked and they all nodded.

Ma Masa:I'll make hot chocolate and popcorn, mommy will find us there okay?

They all nodded. She led them out of the house then to the car.

Ma Masa:Wait here for a few minutes.

She made her way back to the house and walked to the bathroom where she got cleaning gloves and a bucket and a mop. It seemed as if the kids were so scared when they saw her bleed.

At the hospital

The helper sat down. She didn't want to think it was that. She brought Masa to the hospital as fast as the traffic could allow.

Meanwhile Masa finally opened her eyes and she looked at the doctor.

Doctor:Hey...

Masa sat up straight feeling a pang of pain in her lower abdomen. She had to hear what the doctor had to say. She didn't know how long she was out for that matter.

Doctor:You've been out for almost three hours.

Masa just nodded.

The doctor sighed.

Doctor:I hate to be the bearer of bad news but mam, you just miscarried. When you got here it was too late..

Masa paused and looked at the doctor.

Miscarry? She shook her head. She wasn't pregnant. She knew her body and she wasn't pregnant.

Masa:Th-that must've been a mistake, I wasn't pregnant. I can't be pregnant.

Doctor:You were mam.

Masa looked the other way. She was pregnant. That statement on it's own scared her and she even lost the pregnancy before she knew it.

Doctor:Bu-

The door opened and Hayden walked in. Masa still looked the other way biting her lips with tears in her eyes. It was better she lost this bastard's child right?

Hayden:Are you okay?

Doctor:Uhm, sorry for your loss mam..

Hayden looked at Masa before it clicked in his head. Bleeding. She had just miscarried.

Masa used her hands to wipe her tears. It wasn't supposed to hurt. It's supposed to be some sort of relief but it hurt.

Hayden walked closer to her.

Hayden:Hey, Sunshine...

Masa just avoided his gaze. Her tears clouding her vision.

Hayden:Look at me..

He gently held her chin and it was not hard to miss the pain and anger in her eyes and he knew it was all directed at him.

Hayden:I'm sorry. I didn't kn-

Masa moved her head away as he let go of her chin. He didn't know what to do.

Hayden:I know it's my fault...angel I'm sorry..

Masa just looked at him shaking her head as tears streamed down her face.

Hayden:Angel....

Masa:Get out!

Hayden:I'm...

Masa:Get the fuck out of my hospital room

Hayden! Get out!(screaming with a cracked voice)

He walked out. Hearing her cracked voice broke his heart. He hurt her when she has been so



good to him.

He sat down on the waiting benches as he looked at the helper.

Her:Hello Sir.

Hayden:Hi, where are the kidsm

Her:Their grandmother took them.

He nodded as he put his hands over his face. This is the second time she has been in hospital and he had a strong feeling that the first time was also because of him.

He lifted his head and looked at the room. He stood up and walked to the door. He could hear her soft sobs and he swallowed. I'm sorry babe. I'm sorry...

Masa just looked at the IV drip on her arm as the tears choked her. It was God's plan right? She was already adjusting to him not being around and that had been something she needed so that she can try and heal and now that he had left a part of him in her and she miscarried. A huge sign it was not meant to be right? She asked herself with hot tears rolling down her face. She bit her lips to try and not make a sound but it was futile.

Masa:God why me?(crying)

A lone tear rolled down Hayden's cheek and he quickly wiped it away. He wanted to protect her and himself but he hurt her instead.

Hayden sucked in a deep breath and went to sit down.

Hayden:Uhm, you can go. I'll take care of her.

Her:Will she be okay?

Hayden:I hope so..

The helper nodded and stood up. Hayden leaned back as his phone vibrated. It was an 'I love you' message from Tessa. He ignored it and he sighed.

Maybe he should get her something to eat. Her phone must be with the kids.

He didn't know where the doctor went, he wanted to come back a few hours later.

He stood up and walked to the door. He opened it slightly and just stared at her lying on the hospital bed. He closed the door and walked away.

At Masa's parents house

Ma Masa sat down on the couch. The kids were too traumatised by what they saw and they ended up falling asleep.

She asked herself who Masa was dating. By what she had observed she had been single for the longest time.

A door knock disturbed her thoughts and she fixed her smartly wrapped doek as she walked to the door.

Ma Masa:Ke etla(I'm coming)

She opened the door and a wave of relief washed over her when she realised it was Hayden.

Ma Masa:Hello, I thought you were out of town..

Hayden:I'm back I guess..

Ma Masa:The kids are asleep. Uhm Masa is in hospital. Do you know the person she was seeing?

Hayden loosened his tie a bit.

Hayden:She was seeing someone?

Ma Masa:She was pregnant, a baby doesn't appear out of the blue..

Hayden rubbed his neck a bit.

Hayden:Not anyone I know..

Ma Masa:Strange..

Hayden:I'll pass by later and thank you for taking care of the kids.

Ma Masa:It's always a pleasure to have them.

Hayden:Can I have Masa's phone?

Ma Masa:Smith Jr was holding it, let me go get it.

Hayden followed her and Smith Jr was fast asleep holding tightly to the gadget. Ma Masa slowly pulled the phone away as Smith Jr turned. She handed Hayden the phone.

Hayden:Thank you.

Ma Masa:Alright.

At Letso's workplace

Letso scrolled through her social media, she never posted anything these days. Instagram being worse. She saw Masa's profile and she was glowing. She knew she was the one who had ruined their friendship.

She judged her and gossipped about her. Yes she fell pregnant and here she was not even sure she can have kids.

Her car was working perfectly and to think Masa didn't even hate her at all for anything. If it was any other person, they would've left her there just to spite her.

Well her final results didn't turn out to be what she wanted and she had to say bye to law school. Hell she didn't even qualify to study law at the University of Botswana. That was how

hard of a blow life delivered.

She checked her bank balance and she smiled. Maybe she should thank Masa for fixing her car by taking her out for lunch. She didn't have a huge bank balance but what she had was enough to make ends meet.

She dialed Masa's number. It rang for a while before it was answered by a deep male voice. She remembered it. She swallowed a bit.

Letso:Hello..

Hayden:Masa's phone hello.

Letso:Can I talk to Masa.

Hayden:She is unavailable at the moment.

Letso:When she is available tell her to-

Hayden:Sure.



He hung up. She frowned. He sounded so rude or was he stressed? Why was he answering Masa's phone?

At the hospital

Hayden looked at the food on the passenger seat as he held her phone in her hands. He tried to remember her password. He entered it and her phone unlocked.

He was tempted to go through her messages as he held it in his hands.

He sucked in a breath. It was her privacy and she was going to be offended if she found out he went through her things.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*58\*

At The Hospital

Hayden stopped by her room as the doctor was about to walk in her room.

Hayden:Doc when is she going to be discharged?

Doctor:We cleaned her up, all we need to do is another scan.

Hayden:Another scan?

Doctor:We were too late in saving the other baby, we just need to see if the other one is good.

He paused.

Hayden:She was carrying twins?

Doctor:Yes..

Hayden:Uhm will it be possible to discharge her later tonight?

Doctor:Yes, let me go do the scan...

Hayden nodded and the doctor walked away. He opened the door and walked in with the food stuff.

Hayden:Hey Sunshine.

She ignored him and he just placed the plastics

on the table.

Hayden:I brought food...

He guessed he deserved that. He sat down on a chair as she faced the other way. There was no way to get through to her and he didn't know how. He also wouldn't forgive himself after being a jerk to her. Well he was more than that and he didn't want to stress her into losing the other baby as well. The doctor walked in and Masa turned to look at the doctor.

Doctor:Feeling much better?

She nodded and sat upright.

Doctor:From now on, avoid stressful situations at all times and eat well.

Masa just nodded. Not quite sure she was following.

The doctor went to light the sonogram machine and Masa frowned.

Masa: Doctor what's happening?

Doctor: Still checking if the other baby is fine.

She sat upright. This was too much to stomach in a single day. She was honestly confused.

Doctor: You were carrying twins, you lost the other one..

Masa rubbed her teary eyes. Wow!

The doctor slowly did what she was trained to do. Masa silently lifted up the hospital gown as the doctor applied the cold gel on her tummy.

The doctor moved the wand over her tummy and they all heard the heartbeat. Hayden

secretly smiled as he saw the awe in her eyes and that small smile on her lips.

Doctor:Healthy.

Masa:Uhm how far along?

Doctor:3 months..

Masa:Okay.

She was handed tissue paper to wipe off the gel.

Doctor:I suggest another scan by the end of this week. Let me go get your supplements and minerals. Don't stress okay?

Masa nodded.

The doctor looked at Hayden.

Doctor:Don't let her stress and overwork herself, as much as the other baby is alive, it's still delicate.

Hayden nodded as the doctor walked out.

Hayden stood up and just kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:I know you hate me angel and I understand but thank you. Thank you so much...

Masa's lower lip trembled as she moved away from him. She wanted to hate him with every fibre of her being but she didn't. She hated all the hurt that he put her through and she blamed herself for letting him hurt her like that.

Hayden saw the tears in her eyes and he used his thumb to wipe them away. He ruined it. His perfect family. She hated him and now she was pregnant with his child. He was even scared that she was going to want to abort the child but she never mentioned that at all.

Hayden:I'll fix this okay?

It hurt seeing her hurt because she rarely showed her hurt or any other emotions she didn't want anyone to see. Seeing her raw like that, bleeding from the cut he made on her was a bitter pill to swallow.

Masa: Get out Hayden.

She said softly and he didn't argue with that. He walked out.

He decided to go to the only place that gave him peace.

At Gaborone

Tessa laid on the bed as the doctor restrained



her legs. She was not willing to be a mother at this young age. She had dreams, goals and ambitions to pursue. A baby would delay her progress as time went on.

Dr:I did explain the process mam..

She nodded. It was just clots of blood and not a fully developed human. A surgical abortion was better than a backstreet one even though both were illegal in the country. A girl had to do what a girl had to do.

An hour later, she sat down on the chair waiting for her antibiotics. It left her so weak, she was going to take a cab to school and sleep. A wave of guilt washed over her and she knew it was her heart making the guilt worse. Hayden didn't know and even if he did, she wasn't going to keep the child.

The doctor handed her the pills and tablets.

She slowly stood up holding her bag and walked out of the small facility. She opened her umbrella and walked a short distance to the stop. She felt so lightheaded.

She saw a taxi and she stopped it. She got inside and leaned back.

Tessa:UB please.

Taximan:Special?

Tessa:Yeah.

The man drove the taxi and Tessa rubbed her temples. They said there was going to be slight bleeding and she needed to rest.

She checked her messages and Hayden hadn't even replied. She sighed. He was a busy man or maybe he was going to check on her later.

At Reginah's House

.

.

\*

\*

I'm 45 minutes late. Blame Kings of  
Jo'Burg                      Go monate shem.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*59\*

At Reginah's house

Hayden sat on the bed and looked up.

Hayden:I messed up Sugar. I messed up so bad and I don't know how to fix it..

He placed his head between his hands. One thing he knew for sure was that he didn't love Tessa. He usually indulged her most of the times. The one he wanted to force his heart to not love was lying on the hospital bed and she hated him.

Hayden:She is pregnant and I know how fucked up the situation looks.(sigh) I don't want people judging her but I can't seem to want to let her go..

He licked his lips.

Hayden:I don't want to let her go, I don't think I'll be able to breath if she finds a man..

He chuckled. That was the funny thing about it, he broke her heart yet he wanted her to be his.

Hayden:I haven't checked on the kids yet. I'm sure they are scared. You're probably letting me make my own decisions so I can learn from them. I don't want to lose Masa but the fact that she might die too is what haunts me. I don't want to go under again, the grief was too much and some days I almost went crazy. I didn't believe that you were really gone.

He just sucked in a deep breath. He knew what to do at this point. He didn't think Reginah was even happy about the hearts he was toying with.

After an hour he got out of the house. He made his way to his car. Since she was being released tonight, he had to pack her clothes for her at her house.

At the hospital

Masa father walked into her room and Masa pulled her hair back. Soon it was going to show and questions and rumours plus judgement would flow around. Just like six years ago.

Ra Masa:Are you okay?

She nodded with red eyes.

Ra Masa:You don't seem fine. I heard what happened.

Masa nervously looked at her dad.

Ra Masa:I didn't know you were seeing someone.

Masa wanted to say she wasn't seeing anyone but then she was pregnant and a baby didn't miraculously grow in your womb.

Masa kept quiet.

Ra Masa: You know you can talk to us about anything, you are an adult now Masa..

She leaned back and looked at her dad before nodding.

Ra Masa: I'm sorry okay?

Masa nodded trying not to cry.

Ra Masa: The kids are okay at home, still traumatised.

Her poor kids.

Her father kissed the top of her head before opening the plastic.

Ra Masa:Who brought food? You haven't touched a single thing, you need to eat.

Masa sighed. It's not as if she was hungry.

Masa:I'm not hungry.

Ra Masa:You need to eat..

He took out the large tub of yoghurt and a spoon. He handed it to her.

Ra Masa:Eat, I'm not leaving until you eat..

He sat down and waited for her. She read the label. He brought her favourite flavour. She sighed and opened the tub before dipping her spoon in and eating.

Minutes later her father kissed her forehead before walking out.



Hayden walked in more than ten minutes later holding a small bag.

Hayden:Hey...

Masa didn't know how to ignore him when he was all over her. The doctor walked in.

Doctor:Mam you're free to go, I'll bring the medication in a few minutes.

Masa just looked at Hayden without saying a word. Hayden wanted her to say something. Anything. Her silence was deafening.

Hayden:I brought a change of clothes, I'll drive you home..

She still said nothing.

Hayden:Let me give you space to change..

He placed the bag down and walked out. It would be nice if she reacted, screamed or even hit him but her being this silent was just a recipe for disaster.

Masa just got out of bed and opened the bag. She held back tears as she got the clothes out and made her way to the bathroom. She removed the hospital gown and wore the tracksuit he came with. She held onto the wash basin as she looked at herself in the mirror.

Masa:O sematla...

She said to her reflection as tears rolled down her eyes. She sobbed alone in the bathroom. She wished she hadn't subjected herself to this.

She hated herself so damn much.

Hayden walked inside the room few minutes later and he heard her sobbing in the bathroom. He blinked a couple of times before he opened the door.

He found her on the floor, a sobbing mess. It was all on him. He burned it all down. Hayden bent down and helped her up, hugging her as she cried.

Hayden:I'm sorry that that I hurt you..

She broke the hug and hit his chest with her small fists.

Masa:I hate you! I hate you bastard!! You used m-me(crying)you used me and tossed me aside like a cheap tot...I hate you Hayden Smith!!

She cried more and he just held her in his arms.

Hayden:I know and I'll make it up to you. I'm sorry sweetheart. Fuuck! I messed up baby, I know I fucked up...let me correct myself.

Masa:I hate you so damn much(crying)

Hayden:I know angel.

He rubbed her back as she bawled her eyes out to the point of her heart racing. She gasped for breath and he rubbed her back.

Hayden:angel let's try to breath in and out..

He said and she did as he said, slowly getting her heartbeat to normal.

Hayden:I know I'm selfish and I hurt you and the kids. I'll fix my mistakes..just. Don't give up on me. Please!

He kissed the top of her head as he cleared his throat.

Hayden held her tightly as he pushed her hair back.

Hayden:I'm sorry angel..

Masa broke the hug and just walked out of the bathroom leaving him there. She wiped her tears as she sat on the bed.

Hayden slowly walked out with his hands in his pockets.

The doctor walked in and could feel the tension. She handed Masa the medicine.

Doctor:Come for another scan somewhere

along this week okay?

Masa nodded. She walked out and Hayden got the bag and took the medication from her hands.

Hayden:I'm not your favourite person right now angel and I understand that, let me help you so we can go..

Masa stood up and followed him with her arms folded.

She checked out of the hospital before silently following him to the car. He unlocked the car and opened the door for her.

As he walked to his side, his phone rang. He slipped it out and saw the caller id. He sighed

and switched his phone off.

He got inside the car and closed the door. He started the car and the whole drive was silent.

Too silent for him but he let it be, she had closed her eyes and leaned back against the car seat.

He finally parked the car and Masa opened her eyes. This didn't look like her house.

Masa:Take me home..

Hayden:Calm down.

Masa:I don't want to calm down, I don't fucking want to be around you..

Hayden calmly looked at her as he stepped out of the car.

He walked to her side and picked her up. Masa hit his back.

Masa:Let me go...fucking let me go..

Hayden:Babe calm down.

Masa:I'm not your babe dammit!(crying)

Hayden:Hey..I'm sorry..

He unlocked the door and stepped inside holding her and he threw the keys on the couch. He headed straight to the bedroom where he laid her down on the bed.

Hayden:Relax okay? I won't hurt you..

Masa just chuckled with tears in her eyes.

Masa:The last time you said that you said that you hurt me....you hurt me Hayden!

Hayden:I'll apologise each and everyday for that



Sunshine.

Masa just removed his hands and pulled herself to the corner of the bed. How dare he? How dare he?

Hayden just crouched before her.

Hayden:Babe...

Masa:Hayden fuck you! Fuck you!

He held her hands.

Hayden:I didn't mean all that I said. I just wanted to protect you and me..

Masa pushed his hands away.

Masa:I'm done with you Hayden. I swear I'm done. You can't break me again..

Hayden:I won't, Masa listen, I'm done with her I

swear...I won't fuck up what I have again..

Masa:You're nothing but a liar and a cheat  
Hayden.

Hayden:I'll apologise each and every day if you  
want me to, Sunshine all I'm asking for is one  
last chance..Please.

She looked at him and he looked so sincere and  
she remembered how sincere he looked the  
night before he said they were a mistake and he  
brought another girl.

Hayden saw the swirl of emotions in her eyes  
and he knew it was going to take a lot of  
begging and actions to convince her otherwise.

Masa:Take me home..

He sighed and stood up. He kissed her  
forehead.

Hayden:I can't do thag angel, let me prepare you a bath okay?

He made his way to the bathroom and at that moment Masa wanted to throw something at him. He disappeared into the bathroom and she looked around the bedroom. She quietly stood up and went to the lounge trying to look for his car keys.

She found them and walked out the door to the car. She got inside and she spotted her phone at the back. She got it and she entered her password. She went through her call log and sighed.

Hayden walked out and she wasn't there. He ran out of the bedroom and he heard the engine.

Hayden:Fuck!

He quickly ran outside.

Hayden:Masa you're not in the right state to drive yourself!(shouting)

She just reversed the car and drove off at a speed that was quite alarming.

He quickly took his phone.

Hayden>Hello....I want you to flag this car if you see it.....mhmm..call me when you stop it...thank you.

He hung up and sighed.

At University of Botswana

Tessa tried his phone once more and it rang but the call was cut short. She sighed and rubbed her tummy.

If he doesn't know then it didn't happen. That was what she told herself over and over again. She tried calling him again and he didn't answer. Was he that busy?

Maybe. She will have to be patient.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*60\*

On the road

Masa parked the car by a tree and she just called Tily.

Tily:Hello..

Masa:Hey..

Tily:You don't sound fine.

Masa:I'm not a lot has just happened a-and I-I...

Tily:Breath in and out baby..

Masa did as Tily said and she paused for a while rubbing her temples, feeling a slight headache starting.

Tily:Now tell me what happened.

Masa finally told her what she had kept from everyone for months. Matilda listened with judgement and when Masa stopped talking she cried.

Masa:Imagine what people are going to call me when they find out that I'm pregnant with Arielle's cousin's baby..hear how ridiculous that sounds.

Tily:The people haven't said a thing, you're the one judging yourself so harshly that you break yourself down. Let me send you an audio okay?

Masa nodded as Tily hung up.

Matilda sent the audio recording of that night. Masa opened it and listened to it all. She said all that? Minutes later Matilda called.

Tily:You love him and you're hurt...

Masa:I feel like a whore again and it's not a

good feeling. I hate feeling like I should hate myself...

Tily: You just lost a baby my love, go home and rest. Sleep it out, cry it out, mourn your unborn child and be thankful for the one that survived. Your sanity should come first. Think about yourself the next coming months, I'll drive over on Friday to spend time with you. Spend time with Ari and the twins. Make this whole pregnancy journey about you and come to terms with you. Masa you are not a slut nor a whore you hear me?

Masa nodded.

Tily: Now return that car, most probably the owner is looking for it and nicely ask him to give you space. How is that? Your hormones are all over the place and they will be till you give birth so calmly drive the car back.



Masa started the car and took a u-turn joining the other lane.

Tily:Are you there?

Masa:I'm still listening.

Tily:When you feel ready, which will probably be in a few months sit down and talk to him.

Calmly. But heal love and observe from a distance. Love isn't supposed to hurt, the ups and downs of love don't include breaking each other down and talk to your parents too, they are understanding people and I'm sure they won't judge you. Probably his family will judge you and paint you with a bad brush but that is life, just do you okay?

Masa:Okay.

Tily:At this point, we don't want to stress you into losing the second baby, make this pregnancy intimate. Just a family thing. Take

time off work if you need too and relax..

Masa nodded as she turned to the left.

Tily:No wine..

Masa laughed tearfully.

Masa:I know. I know..just six months left.

Tily:Ijakg..okay will call later my love.

Masa:I love you and bye.

Masa hung up and tried to remember the place.  
She reversed the car. She had passed the turn.

She turned on the street and drove inside the  
yard, parking his car.

She got out of the car holding her phone and  
the car keys.

Hayden stepped out when he heard the engine.

Hayden:At least you're okay..

Masa:Can you take me home? I'm not fighting  
Hayden, I just want to go home..

He looked into her eyes and he held her cheek.

Hayden:Okay.

Masa:Thank you.

She handed him the car keys and looked at him,  
expecting to see him go to the car. Hayden  
walked to the car and Masa followed.

He started the car engine and reversed.

Hayden:Sunshine?

She looked at him.

Hayden:You're not going to be alone throughout this pregnancy okay?

Masa:Okay. Thanks.

She closed her eyes and he drove silently. Yet another silent drive. He arrived at her parents' house and he sighed.

Hayden:Masa, I'm sorry okay?

Masa just nodded and they both got out of the car. They walked to the house and Hayden knocked.

Smith Jr went to open the door and he was surprised to see his dad but he saw Masa first. He hugged her legs.

Smith Jr:Are you okay?

Masa nodded.

Masa:Can I sleep first boy boy?

He let go of her leg and she nodded gratefully at the little boy before she walked inside where the girls were.

Hayden crouched to Smith's height.

Hayden:Hi champ..

Smith Jr:Hi..

Hayden sighed. He didn't want his kids angry at him because of the mistakes he made.

Hayden:Can I talk to you and Avery?

He just nodded and he walked inside. Hayden greeted Ma Masa and Ra Masa. He hugged the girls before Arielle ran off to her mother's room.

Avery held tightly onto her dad's hands, she

didn't want him to go again and not talk to them. Hayden got inside the room the three shared when they were all here. He closed the door while the twins sat on the bed.

He crouched before them and he could see the sadness in their eyes.

Hayden: I would like to apologise to you guys, I didn't spend enough time with you and you are probably angry.

Smith Jr: You stopped loving us.

Hayden: I didn't change, I can't stop loving you guys. I just had an error in judgement but I'm sorry.

Avery: I don't like Tessa.

Smith Jr: Mom said it's not nice to say that..

Hayden sighed. They blamed Tessa for his lack of attention on them. He lost focus of the

bigger picture. These two were his gifts from Regie and no one had no right to come between their relationship.

Hayden: Cerise?

Avery: Hmm..

Hayden: It's not a nice thing to say but I like that you are honest about how you feel princess. I'll do better.

Smith Jr: You won't forget us?

Hayden: Never ever.

Avery: Pinky promise?

Hayden gave her his pinky.

Hayden: Pinky promise..

The three of them hugged.

Hayden: I love you guys and don't forget that.

Smith Jr: We love you too..

Hayden smiled. At least his relationship with the kids was on the right track, he wasn't so sure about Masa.

Smith Jr:So Tessa...

Hayden sat between them and looked at them.

Hayden:Can I make a few things clear?

They nodded.

Hayden:Me and your mother are not seeing each other.

Avery frowned.

Hayden:Not in the way I was seeing aunty Tessa. We just share you guys.

Smith Jr:Oh.

Hayden:You understand? If I do find another



lady friend and I decide to marry her, she will be your mother as well.

Avery:And mommy can marry another guy?

Hayden swallowed a lump. The prospect of Masa marrying someone else didn't sit well with him but he nodded.

Smith Jr:I understand.

Hayden:Glad you do guys.

Meanwhile Ari cuddled next to her mother as she closed her eyes. Masa smiled in her sleep as she felt Arielle's small body next to hers. Her angel must've been so scared.

Ari:I love you mommy...

She said as she kissed her mother's cheek and

held onto her for dear life.

Hayden left the room after he bathed the twins and tucked them into bed.

Hayden:I'll pick you guys tomorrow.

They nodded as they closed their eyes. He walked out and quietly closed the door. He made his way to Masa's room and he saw her cuddled up with Arielle. He covered them with the blanket and he kissed Masa's forehead, unaware of the slightly ajar door. Ma Masa paused as Hayden lifted his head and pushed Masa's hair back.

Hayden:I love you okay? I'll pass by tomorrow.

He knew she probably couldn't hear him. Ma Masa walked away with the new revelation. She

had a lot of questions but if Masa didn't tell them, that meant she was, she ready to.

Hayden squeezed little Ari's cheek with a smile and walked out of her room. He said goodbye to her parents. Now he had another thing to fix.

At Hayden's house

He got inside his house and headed straight to the bedroom where he looked for everything that belonged to Tessa and placed it on the bed.

He walked out of the room and went upstairs where he picked a box and he ran down the stairs once more to his room. He carefully packed it up and sealed it. He'll have a courier service courier it to Gaborone.

He sat on the bed and sighed. He dialed Tessa number and placed the phone between his ear and shoulder as it rung before she answered.

Tessa:Hello(sleepy)

Hayden:Hey can we talk?

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*62\*

At Masa's house

Masa sat quietly on the carpet as she ate icecream. It was early in the morning and since there was no wine for her for almost a whole year, she will drown it out in icecream.

She brought the cold spoon to her lips as she switched between tv channels. Tears blinded her eyes. She was going to get fat again.

She rubbed her flat stomach.

Masa:Whoever you are don't come out looking like your father, I beg..

She continued eating her icecream. Her phone rang and she stared at the caller id before picking up.

Masa:Hello.

Hayden:Morning, I'm in town and I'm wondering what I should get you..

Masa lifted the tub of icecream. It was half empty.

Masa:Icecream. Lots of eat.

Hayden frowned.

Hayden:Okay, I'll see what to do.

Masa:Thanks.

She hung up and her phone rang again.

Masa>Hello.

Tily:Open the gate you moron.

Masa:Okay.

She hung up and pressed the gate remote, opening the gate for Matilda's car to go in.

Matilda parked her car and got out of it. She opened the door and found Masa on the floor with a tub of icecream.

Tily:Did you eat?

Masa:I'm eating..

Tily:That's not healthy for you or the baby, icecream is not breakfast.

Masa:The baby wanted icecream, ke reng nna?

Matilda rolled her eyes as she picked the half empty tub of icecream.

Masa:What are you doing?

Tily:You're going to eat a proper breakfast missy. Where are the kids?

Masa:With their fathers, I'm tired.

Tily:Okay.

Masa:Bathong Tily bring back my icecream.

Tily:You can't have icecream for breakfast.

Masa:It's fine, take it..

Tily:Good. You need a healthy nutritious breakfast.

Masa:Yes Dr, I hear you.

At the office

Hayden stared at all the paperwork he had to get through, he'll bring Masa's icecream later in the evening. He even signed off her leave days because he sure didn't want her breaking down in the office. She was getting better but he knew it will forever be etched on her that she lost their child. He ran his hands through his hair when the door opened.

Hayden:Good morning.

Reba>Hello.



He sat down and looked around the office. The boy had made a success out of himself and he was a young lad.

Reba:I thought around this time, we would hear wedding bells.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:I fucked up and she wants space and it's complicated.

Reba:Space..I hope whatever you did, it did not involve another girl?

Hayden:It did and now, it's all a big mess.

Reba:Give her the space.

Hayden:I'm trying to.

Reba:Anyway, back to business...

The two men sat there discussing their investments.

Later that afternoon

Tessa got off the bus and checked her phone. She wondered what her parents wanted to tell her.

She got into a taxi and directed it to her parents' house.

At Tessa's parents house

The taxi stopped outside and Tessa paid the driver before stepping out. She pushed the gate and walked inside. She was sure Tia was still in

school so she might probably find her parents.

She got inside and they were already sitting down. It was weird. She knew they expected her but it looked way too creepy.

Tessa:Hi.

Ma Tessa:Hello Tessa, sit down.

Tessa:I-

Ma Tessa:Sit down(through gritted teeth)

Tessa slowly sat down opposite them and looked at them.

Her mother sighed and clasped her hands together.

Ra Tessa:We have something to tell you.

Tessa:Okay..

She waited and her mother took the first step and started telling her about how she got her heart.

Tessa:I know.

Ra Tessa:We knew that you know, hence the attitude. What happened to the sweet Theresa?

Tessa looked the other way.

Tessa:She doesn't exist.

Ma Tessa:She does, we know what we did was wrong and we paid for that, but we wanted to save you. You could've died if we didn't get you a new heart?

Tessa sighed.

Ra Tessa:We were just looking out for your best interests...we are not evil. We admit we stole the heart but she was gone already when the heart was taken..

Tessa held back tears.

Tessa:Do you know how her fiance must've been feeling? Knowing someone out there has a piece of what he loved and still loves? I don't want to listen to her heart because I am not her. I will never be her, I loved her but I don't want to embody her. Everyday I fight my heart and my mind because my heart is not mine...do you know how hard that is? It's hard...

Ma Tessa:We can suggest therapy.

Tessa:It's fine, I learnt to live with it..

Ra Tessa:But a new heart heart just changed your whole personality..

Tessa:Because I'm not twelve anymore, I'm my own person. I'll cut off on the attitude but the sweet Tessa who was 12 who believed in happy endings doesn't exist anymore.

She wiped her tears.

Tessa:I'm me and I do me, it seems selfish but knowing how short life is I live for me and my happiness. I don't have to exactly confine myself to societal standards. Me having a tattoo or piercings does not make me evil. I'm not some demon child, maybe it's a phase but I want to put my needs first. Do me first before I put anyone first.

Ra Tessa nodded and held his wife's hand.

Tessa:But sorry for the judgement and disrespect. I'm responsible. I get good grades and I haven't turned up pregnant. I'm sorry okay..

She used both hands to wipe her face as she stood up to hug her parents.

Tessa:I still love you guys but in a different way

okay?

She broke the hug and fanned her face.

Tessa: Too much crying, can I go lie down?

Ma Tessa: Sure honey and please do seek therapy..

Tessa: Will try the facilities at school.

She walked to her room and laid on the bed. She rubbed her heart that seemed calm. Maybe an apology was what was needed? Should she apologise to Hayden for her parents' stealing Reginah's heart? Maybe.

At Masa's house

Hayden hooted his car in front of the house, she

might not appreciate him going in and out as he pleased. The gate opened and he drove in. His heart skipped a beat when he saw another car in the yard. He got out of his car and walked to the door holding the plastics. He knocked on the door and he heard Masa's voice.

Masa: Get the door!

He cleared his throat when he heard the door lock turn and the door opened. It was Matilda. He felt so relieved.

Hayden: Hello..

Matilda wanted to speak on him hurting Masa but Masa had told her to stay out of it and she was going to respect that.

Tily: Hi..should I call Masa?

Hayden: I just brought what she requested.

He said handing Matilda the plastics and she



took them.

Tily: Thank you. On her behalf. Bye.

Hayden: By-

She closed the door on his face and he just walked to his car.

She just needed space right? Just space.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOUR MONTHS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*63\*

At the hospital

Hayden helped Masa get off the bed. She was coming along just fine with the pregnancy and he was happy when she was a just a fur ball of happiness.

Masa:Thank you.

Doctor:Sure you don't want to know the gender?

Masa shook her head.

Masa:No, no...ke batla tah dah you have a girl or a boy when I give birth.

Hayden chuckled. She just had to say tah dah.

Masa:So everything is good?

Doctor:So far so good.

Hayden:That's good to hear doc.

The doctor handed them the scans as she

looked at them once more. Masa was talkative and it seemed as her man had made peace with that, he wasn't a man of many words. All in all they looked good together.

Hayden grabbed her bag as he wrapped his arm around her bulging waist.

Hayden:Ready to go?

Masa:Yes..

Hayden:Thank you doc..areye wena.

They walked out and she smiled.

Masa looked at Hayden through hooded eyelashes.

Hayden:Don't even think about it.

Masa:I hate you.

Hayden:I love you too angel, now keep walking.

Hayden had to admit that he had been groveling two months ago. They had finally sat down to talk and he heard her point of view. She had literally told him up front how hurt she was and he found out that he actually played a hand in making her view of herself worse.

That was the first time Masa had been honest with him, she had went on to tell him about her fears and how it was going to look like when it was revealed that they are seeing each other, worse he was her unborn child's father. He had to reassure her that she was not all that she called herself and it was going to be okay.

They got to the car and he opened the door for her before he handed her her bag.

Masa grinned at him and he bent down to peck her lips but it turned to something more. He

held the back of her neck as they kissed slowly.  
Hayden broke the kiss and rubbed her lower lip.

Masa:I want icecream.

Hayden:As if I'll buy you icecream...

Masa folded her arms as she closed the door  
and jogged to his side.

He got inside and looked at her.

Hayden:Sunshine?

Masa:Don't talk to me(sighing)

Hayden started the car and he connected his  
phone to the car system.

Hayden:How many more months left?

Masa:Two...Christmas is a week away.

Hayden:And you hadn't set foot in the office  
ever since you started showing.

Masa:I'm enjoying a peaceful and intimate

pregnancy with my loved ones.

He rubbed her hand before he kissed it.

Hayden:I understand. But next year the desert race akere?

Masa:I wouldn't miss it for the world(frowning)that's if my clothes still fit.

Hayden just smiled. A week away for Christmas and he was thinking of taking her to a getaway, just a few days for her to relax. A babymoon if you would call it that.

Masa found Hayden looking at her and she smiled back. He wasn't going to mess up again this time.

Masa:Babe?

Hayden:You want something from me what is it?

Masa:We are craving icecream.

Hayden:Bathong, okay you'll icecream when we get home. How is that?

She smiled.

Masa:Perfect..

The whole drive back home was nice, his songs playing in the background and Masa looking relaxed.

At Hayden's house

He stepped out of the car, walked to her side and opened the door for her.

She stepped out. Now she didn't have the energy to deal with the sugar rushed energy

levels that toddlers had.

Hayden:I'll take care of the kids.

She kissed his lips.

Masa:Thank you...

They walked inside the house and all the three kids rushed to them. Avery as always wanted to touch her tummy. She was excited they were getting a baby, it meant that mommy's lying down and asking worked.

Hayden:now let mommy rest, she's tired.

All of them:okay.

They walked up to their rooms and Hayden led her to the kitchen.

Masa sat down on the high chair as he took out



a bowl and icecream. She smiled.

Masa:I like you.

Hayden:Just this once..

He filled the bowl and placed a teaspoon inside before handing it to her.

She started to eat her icecream right away without wasting any time.

Hayden just started taking photos of her and she put her spoon down before smiling for the camera.

Hayden's heart stopped when he saw the way she was looking at him as he took the picture. How does one person look at the other like they are their whole world and still manage to act normal. Masa's lips parted to reveal a smile and he sucked in a breath before taking more photos. She just used the spoon to hide her

other eyes as she smiled widely.

Masa:Done?

Hayden:Not yet love?

She went back to eating her icecream and the camera was intensely focused on her.

Masa:Ke video?

He chuckled and nodded.

Masa:Okay ubm...

She tried to think of something to say while eating but nothing came to mind and she laughed.

Masa:Uh..

Hayden:You're cute.

She blushed as she tucked her hair behind her ear. He stopped the recording and tipped her head over looking into her eyes.

Hayden:Mine?(deep voice)

She nodded. He was very possessive of her. Very and it came to play at the oddest times.

Hayden:Good. I love you sweetheart..

Masa:I love you..

He just brought his thumb into her mouth as she sucked it gently before he removed it and rubbed her lower lip with the wet thumb. He can't exactly fuck a pregnant woman senseless but soon. Patience was a virtue. Their eyes locked for the longest time and he found himself drawn more and more into her. His body reacted the best way it knew how and his erection was straining him.

Masa broke the eye contact and focused on the icecream. She stirred it before she looked back up at him and he was still looking at her with a devilish smile.

Masa:What?

Hayden:Nothing..

Masa:Borrow me your phone..

He handed it to her and she gave him the phone.

Masa:Password.

Hayden:You do know you can add your fingerprint to have easy access to it..

Masa:I don't want to invade your privacy.

Hayden shrugged as Masa headed straight to his gallery.

Masa:What the?

He assumed she found some pictures she didn't see him take.

Masa:Uh..wow!

She just went to Facebook and logged off of his account before she logged in hers.

She last posted photos of herself before she fell pregnant. That was how very private this little pregnancy was.

She went through the photos Hayden had took of her, just showing her face and top body. Her tummy was out of sight.

She picked her favourite 3, captioned them then posted. She did the same for Instagram and went to his WhatsApp where she sent herself the pictures.

Masa:Done. Take.

Hayden took it from her and she got off the high chair making her way to the sink with the bowl in that blush pink dress that fit her like a glove.

He just followed her and wrapped his arms around her.

Masa:Oh(feeling his hard on her butt)

Hayden:If it's a boy can I name him?

Masa:okay..

Hayden:Thank you Sunshine. Nervous yet?

Masa>About?

Hayden:Giving birth?

Masa:The stitches are the worst. They take bo six weeks to heal my guy..

Hayden:I'm sorry..

Masa:It's fine, I just hope I won't have a c-section, a natural birth is better because a c-section has a lot of risks.

Hayden:I hear you angel..

He rubbed her tummy and she looked up at him smiling. He was glad that when she forgave she

did it wholeheartedly with no thoughts to revenge, he wouldn't be able to take it seeing her with another man besides himself.

At University of Botswana

The counselling facilities

Tessa looked around awkwardly. She had finally decided to come after her roommate also said a mouthful. She hated to admit that her roommate was right.

She waited to be called inside or whatever they did when they wanted to talk to you. Her name was called out and she stood up.

She was led to an office and she opened the door. She was a bit surprised to find young people. Not young young but she thought that like in English countries the counsellors would be people in their fifties or sixties.

She sat down on the couch where the lady was sitting down.

Her:Hi, you must be Theresa?

Tessa:Tessa, people call me Tessa.

Her:Nice to meet you..if you're comfortable with me I guess I'll be your psychologist.

The lady said with a smile and that was how she broke the awkwardness.

.

.



\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*64\*

At University of Botswana

Tessa listened as the lady spoke. She was soft spoken and she made a lot of sense. She sighed.

Her:Tessa this might take months to deal with but we will deal with it okay?

She nodded.

Tessa:Uhm thank you. Is our session over?

Her:Yes.

Tessa: Thank you and bye.

Tessa stood up and walked out the door. She hoped she was on the right path.

She walked to her block and she searched herself for the keys. What if her roommate was not there? Or she forgot the keys in the room? Oh well.

She greeted the security guards before verifying that she lived in that block. Tessa walked up the stairs to the top floor and made her way to the room.

Tessa: Knock-knock.

Voice: Who's there?

Tessa: A ghost..

Voice:Wena kana.

She heard some shuffling before the door lock turned and the door opened.

Voice:Everyone meet my roommate Tessa.  
Satan!

Tessa laughed pushing her off.

Tessa:And my roommate the devil's incarante..

She walked inside and sat on the bed looking expectantly at Tessa.

Her:How was it?

Tessa:It was not bad honestly. The lady was nice and she made me see a few things.

Her:You see. You see. Heal Theresa, heal...

Tessa:Yah neh. Did you do the assignment?

Her:Ke emetse wena..You're the smart one..

Tessa:I'm tired.

Her: Tomorrow you will be at the school clinic.  
Did you see the rotation?

Tessa: I saw it and I wish they could change it.

Her: It is what it is..

Tessa: Let's do the assignment, on Saturday I want to go out.

Her: Out where?

Tessa: Black, want to join me?

Her: Why not? It's been a long week.

They first bumped as Tessa got off her roommate's bed and got her books from her desk.

At Hayden's house

Masa laid on her back on the bed as she went

through the comments on her pictures.

Comment 1:Ke nko ya pregnancy..

Comment 2:Can I get someone who looks at me like how Masa is looking at the person taking pictures

Comment 3: I see pregnancy. Bona marama a teng..

Comment 4: Bo Masa ke di smile tsa lorato le topetswe, go rough mo department ya know your worth bazakes find me a man

Masa went on to read the fifty plus comments most of them being people assuming she is pregnant. A notification popped up, she smiled. He just reacted on the pictures. Each and every one of them.

Masa just started typing. She read it all over

before she posted.

"Bathong tsa pregnancy ke di utlwa ka lona baitsanape ba feisibuku .

Anyway, drink water and mind the business that feeds you "

Hayden walked in holding his phone reading her latest post.

Hayden:Makgakga a kana..

Masa:No Hayden. Batho ba rata dilo tsa batho, I didn't post my pregnancy because I don't want people to know. Not many people like you and I learnt that the hard way, someone out there might be jealous just because I post nice pics a bo a ntshwarela ha pregnancy yone ye..

Hayden:I hear you..

Masa:Mmhm...

Hayden:apola ke go sidile.

Masa:The kids won't walk in?

Hayden:No, I was with them a while ago.

Masa sat up right and removed her dress. She was left with her panty and bra.

Hayden:Get rid of the bra and panties too..

He said as he unbuttoned his shirt. Masa gave him a skeptical look.

Hayden:Masa..

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Apola tlhemma..

He removed the shirt and was left in his sleek pants. He had always taken care of his body and she thought she saw an eight pack there

and a new tattoo but maybe it was her eyes. She unclipped the bra letting it fall and she hooked her fingers on both sides as she pulled down the elastic.

Hayden walked into the bathroom and opened the cabinet taking out some lavender oil and jojoba oil before he got a small bucket, opening the hot water tap and filling it.

He walked out with that and he sucked in a breath. She had to relax her body but fuck she looked too delectable. If he could split through her pink flesh and hear her soft moans again. He closed his eyes before he walked to the bed. She looked at him surprised.

Masa:Uhm what are you doing?

Hayden:Threw the jojoba oil bottle in the water so it can get warm.



Hayden:Lie on your back so I can start from there. She did as told and he opened the lavender oil bottle and he got the jojoba oil one from the water. Wiping his hands shortly after. He poured the warm oil in his hands and added a bit of the lavender oil for it's sweet scent. He started from her neck, massaging it with his oily hands and Masa closed her eyes.

Hayden:Babe, this is called a tantra massage. It helps you relax.

Masa:Ohh!

Hayden:Mmhmm..

He worked on each of her hands, massaging them with the oil and Masa moaned softly. His hands were good.

Hayden poured more oil on his hands, moving

them to her breasts, being delicate so that she doesn't complain about the pain that comes with them being sore...

He poured the warm oil around her navel as it flowed down to her pussy lips. She opened her eyes and looked at him before closing her legs.

Hayden:Hey, keep those legs open angel.

His voice forced her to obey and he worked his way down, spending time massaging her pregnant tummy and he smiled when the baby kicked and Masa laughed softly, he continued massaging as he went down avoiding that one sensitive area as he picked her leg. Massaging her from her toes up to her thighs, his fingers passing by her nether lips like butterflies as he moved to the other leg, giving it the same attention.

Masa whimpered as Hayden helped her sit up right and sat behind her as he massaged her back, his hands trailing to her nether lips but not quite reaching there.

Masa felt the familiar wetness pool between her legs as Hayden moved back to her oversensitized nipples and she threw her head back moaning softly.

Hayden moved back and laid her down gently before he was on his knees in front of her, slowly opening her legs.

He poured more oil in his hands and he finally touched her apex and she moaned.

He gently rubbed her clit, feeling how wet she was and he chuckled. Her body had lost all the tension and she was as relaxed as she could ever be.

He stopped and worked on her thighs leaving her whimpering.

Masa:H..

Hayden:Relaxing isn't it love?

He kissed her inner thighs and looked at her. He pecked her lips and she brought her hands around his neck breathing against his lips.

Hayden:What do you want angel?

Masa:Make love to me...

He smiled as he kissed her back, more fiercely.

Hayden:With pleasure my love..

And in quick work, he got rid of his pants and boxers, making sweet love to Masa who was

screaming his name on top of the sheets.

At the end of it all, he had to rub her back as she sobbed on his chest.

Hayden:Sunshine?

She sobbed some more. He just rubbed her back with his other hand in her hair, massaging her scalp.

Masa:That was beautiful..(crying)

Hayden:You are beautiful..

Masa:I mean...You really really love me? The future and old me?

Hayden:Each and every inch angel, don't doubt me.

Masa nodded. It seemed out of this world.

Hayden held her close as he thought about the

family meeting that was awaiting him since he sent the letter asking to pay for damages and magadi. And this small one here in his arms didn't know anything, he was going to keep it that way till everything is finalized.

He kissed the top of her head and looked up thinking. He knew everyone was shocked and her parents and the other family members are going to call him out on it. He has never went with societal norms and he knew most of them must've held their opinions to themselves after they found out he had been planning to marry a woman six years older than him. He expected them to still keep their opinions to themselves in this case.

Masa cuddled more into him and he spooned her.

Hayden:are you asleep angel?

Masa:Mhmm..

He just lifted her leg up and slowly slid inside her and she moaned.

He gently pumped in and out of her as she moaned softly half awake, half asleep. He came inside of her and slid out, kissing her back as his cum leaked out of her small pussy and he grinned.

Masa turned to face the other way and he let go of her, he needed to check on the kids and probably make dinner for them while Masa slept.

Hayden:I love you..

She nodded as her lips parted slightly. He pecked her lips and got out of bed, quickly wearing his boxers, pants and tee. He watched her curl herself into a ball holding her tummy. He smiled walking out.

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*65\*

At Hayden's house

Hayden sat on the floor playing monopoly with the kids.

Ari:Jail!

Avery:Go to jail daddy!

Hayden laughed as he moved the shoe piece across the board to the jail box. Smith jr threw



the dice on the board and he counted how many boxes he was going to move to.

Hayden:Let me bring popcorn ans icecream. No cheating guys!

The girls smiled sweetly at him and he lifted an eyebrow as he stood up. As he walked away they started whispering among themselves.

In the bedroom Masa tousled alone on the large bed before she opened her eyes and looked around. Stretched and yawned ignoring her throbbing bean. She got out of the bed and she saw his shirt on the floor, she wore that and went to pick some yoga pants from the wardrobe. She walked out and found Hayden with the kids playing monopoly.

Avery:Mommy can join us.

Hayden:That's not fair.

Masa:Are you all having icecream?

Hayden:Ng ng..

Masa:Is there some left?

Smith Jr:We're not sure..

Masa:I'll go check. Thank you..

She just passed them and walked to the kitchen.

Hayden stood up quickly following her and before she could open the freezer her picked her up.

Masa:H..

Hayden:You had some earlier on.

Masa:So?

Hayden:I saved you our dinner, you can't eat icecream the whole day.

Masa:Ntlogele ee..

Hayden:Food first and we'll reconsider the icecream issue.

Masa:Fine.

Hayden:O bogoma waitse..(You're stubborn)

Masa:Icecream ya mma icecream H.

Hayden:I need you to eat food Sunshine.

He kissed the top of her head and she smiled.

Hayden let her go when he heard his phone ringing.

He walked to the bedroom and he picked it up.

Hayden:Hello..

Cane:Hayden, they scheduled the meeting for tomorrow.

Hayden:Why wasn't I told earlier?

Cane:They just told me..

Hayden:So..(sighing)ba ira ka bomo, dilo tse o

bolella motho nako e le teng. Were they angry?(they did it intentionally, such things are said well in time)

Cane:I couldn't tell the meeting is not here in Francistown.

Hayden:Shit! Urg...okay. thanks.

He hung up and sighed frustrated. They did this intentionally. He had to leave here and go to Serowe at this time of the night? This wasn't fair.

He walked out of the bedroom and walked to the kitchen where he found Masa eating the food he had left for her.

Hayden:Babe?

Masa looked up and swallowed before she answered him.

Masa:Hmm..

Hayden:I have to go somewhere okay angel, I'll be back latest the day after tomorrow if not tomorrow evening.

Masa frowned. At this time of the night?

Hayden saw the distrust swirling in her eyes before she masked it and smiled at him.

Masa:Okay.

He walked to her and held her hands.

Hayden:I don't want to leave you here alone but I have to okay babe, if you need something just call okay?

She nodded. He kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:it's something important babe, I'm not lying.

Masa:I never said you're lying.

Hayden:But your eyes are saying a different

thing, babe I won't hurt you again. I know better.  
I'm sorry okay, angel we're good right?

Masa:Yeah.

Hayden:Good. I'll be back before you know it.

He kissed her softly before he walked out and talked with the kids. Minutes later he headed to the bedroom so that he could shower and pack some clothes.

Masa just stared at the food. It had suddenly lost taste. She pushed the plate away and stood up, taking it with her so she can empty the food into the trashcan.

Masa walked to the lounge and yawned.

Masa:Hey loviaes, time for bed.

They left the game and all ran upstairs and she started putting everything away. Hayden walked out in fresh clothes and his cologne filled the atmosphere. She hated to admit that she was jealous. He literally can have any girl he wanted, one who is not flawed and is perfect. Anywhere he went, his presence was felt and with his big body, perfectly sculpted, he was a temptation and well no sane woman wouldn't hesitate to look at him more than once.

Hayden saw the worry on her face. She was getting worried over nothing.

Hayden: And babe, you don't drive yourself. You know that right?

Masa nodded.

Hayden: I mean it Masa.

Masa: Ee rra ka utlwa.

Hayden: Good, stay away from the keys and I'll call my driver to come pick up the kids for school, if you need to go out, tell the driver okay?

Masa: Okay.

Hayden: Or call a cab but I prefer the driver.

Masa: Okay.

Hayden: Stay safe for me and I love you okay?

He held her tummy as he leaned in for a soft kiss. He pulled back but kept his hands around her stomach.

Hayden: bye angel.

He pecked her lips once more before he let go of her completely and picked his bag. Hayden walked out and Masa just locked the door.

She sat down on the couch leaning back. How was she going to tell her parents? All they knew was that she was pregnant and many times she



had refused to tell them who the baby daddy was. She ran her hands through her hair and looked around the house. She was going to be lazing around like always. The nursery was locked because Hayden didn't want her to get in and start trying to work on it, overtiring herself.

She heard the gate open and just like that his car reversed and sped off.

Masa: Trust him. Hayden loves you.

She said to herself. She just hoped her insecurities don't mess this up for her.

The following morning

Masa lazily got out of bed and she checked her phone. She had to get the kids ready for school.

After a good hour, the kids were gone and she just walked to the bathroom where she took a long shower.

At Letso's workplace

Letso paused as she looked at the pictures Masa had posted and her status thereafter. She had been meaning to call though, she just didn't call since that time Hayden answered the phone or maybe he didn't tell her.

She dialed Masa's number.

Masa looked as her phone rang and she frowned.

Masa:Hello, something wrong with the car?

Letso:I never got to properly thank you, I called and uhm the person who answered your phone said he will tell you.

Masa:Oh. Okay. It's okay. It was on me.

Letso:Please, I feel I haven't thanked you enough. Please!

Masa:Okay..

Letso:Thank you, I'll tell you the venue.

Masa:Sure..

She got off the phone and continued with what she was doing.

When she was done with her hair, after laying all the edges, she put the puff extension on her hair and applied her lipgloss. Her phone vibrated and she read the message from Hayden.

Big Bear: Goodmorning and I love you

Masa smiled as she replied him.

Masa: Hugs and kisses.

Big bear: Send a picture..

Masa: Masa left the chat † † ♀

Big bear: Angel..

Masa: Fiiine!

She sent him pictures and he sent hearts.

Hayden: Thank you angel.

He went offline and she stood up calling the driver.

At the mall

Masa removed her shades as she got inside the store. She ran her manicured fingers over the baby clothes. That's why she hadn't bought a lot of things. They didn't know the gender. So what she had bought already was white and yellow.

She picked a few cute rompers and picked a basket as well. She walked to the till to pay and left the shop holding the plastic bag. She pressed her phone while holding the plastic with another as she made her way to the restaurant Letso had said she'll be at. She removed her shades and the man who was about to walk out paused as he removed his shades. He fixed his suit jacket that was tight around his buff body. He sat on a chair in front of her, a gentleman never asks does he.

Him:Hi..

Masa looked up from her phone as she almost

jumped. Startled.

Him:I didn't want to scare you, I'm sorry.

Masa:I-it's ok-okay(confused)

Why was she confused?

Him:I'm Katso.

Masa:Okay. I'm waiting for someone.

Katso:Keep you company while you wait?

Masa:If I say no?

Katso:I still won't leave till your said company shows up...

Masa:Okay.

She continued pressing her phone as Katso laughed in disbelief. Most ladies usually fell at his feet and she didn't pay much attention to him. Kats took a good look at her and noticed

the bump. Oh! She was pregnant.

Katso:Hope the baby looks like you, you are beautiful.

Masa smiled.

Masa:Thank you.

Her smile disappeared. He noticed she didn't even have a ring. Single mother? Well he was going to find out.

Katso:Is the father in the picture?

Masa:Isn't that a little too personal Katso?

He smirked.

Katso:You remember my name?

Masa rolled her eyes putting her phone down.

Katso:Ka tswa o le makgakga gore..Apparently di yellowbone di makgakga..(You must be rude, apparently light skinned girls are rude, very

rude.)

Masa:Le re buisa thata waitse..(You make us say a lot of things)

.

.

\*

\*

\*

I was a sobbing mess for real

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*67\*

At Serowe

Hayden listened to the elders go on and on



about morals. When they were done, Masa's father spoke.

Ra Masa: Hayden are you sure about this? Traditionally this looks wrong on all accounts..

Hayden: I'm sure. I really love Masa (chuckling) though it took some time to realise those feelings.

They all kept quiet. He wasn't backing off at all.

Elder: Well I guess we will set another date for the damages and magadi separately, most probably the beginning of the year.

The people from Hayden's side of the family agreed.

Elder: This meeting is dismissed.

The people quietly stood up and Hayden checked his watch. He can still drive back home

now. He stood up and was about to walk out when Ra Masa called him. He stopped in his tracks and walked to him.

Ra Masa:You have guts..

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:I suppose that's a compliment.

Ra Masa:Take care of her.

Hayden:I will..

He patted his shoulder and Hayden said his goodbyes.

At Hayden's house

Masa sat on the couch and closed her eyes. The kids will be back in an hour or two so she had the house all to herself. She was usually

this bored since Hayden would be at work and the kids at school. She got tired of tv and feeling this heavy everyday.

She rubbed her tummy and tried not to think about what people will say when her baby daddy's name is revealed. She didn't want to think about it at all. It was stressful as it is and having to explain that to her parents as well was another issue she was avoiding.

Masa:Baby for my sake I pray you look like me through and through because go rough for mama neh..

At Kgosi Investments

Katso sat on his office chair and scrolled down her pictures on social media. She was beautiful

and he noticed she had other kids on the pictures too. Three to be exact. He went to her about and it said she was just 23. A bit too young for three kids but it was okay he guessed. He wondered what she did and all.

His office door opened and he quickly placed his phone down.

Reba sat on the chair and looked at him.

Reba:Your mind has been preoccupied pretty much the whole day.

Katso:It's nothing.

Reba:I assume it's a girl.

Katso smiled. She was perfect.

Reba:Aah, I see..

Katso:She is rude and pregnant.

Reba's smile disappeared.

Reba:She probably has someone in that case.

Katso:I didn't see a ring on her finger although it is quite strange.

Reba:Strange that?

Katso:I'm not sure if she has kids. Three for that matter.

Reba shrugged.

Katso:She is only 23, too young for 3 kids really at that age and she is pregnant.

Reba:That's why I say maybe she is taken.

Katso:We'll see. Let me get back to work.

Reba:Sure.

At University of Botswana

Psychologist:And we are done for today.

Tessa:Okay.

Psychologist:Think about it okay?

Tessa nodded standing up on her feet. A certain part of her felt guilty for what she once said to Masa that time now.

Masa had never been rude to her not even once. She went through her contacts to see if she still had her number, she had stolen it from Hayden's phone that time. She clicked on the contact and bit her lower lip as she walked down the stairs and went to sit by the chaira outside. She called her. It rang quite a few times before she answered it.

Masa:Hello..

Tessa:Hi, it's Tessa.

There was silence and Tessa sucked in a deep breath.

Tessa:I wanted to apologise for what I once said to you months back, it was uncalled for and I'm sure I offended you.

Masa sighed.

Masa:It's okay. Thank you for the apology.

Tessa frowned.

Tessa:You're not mad.

Masa:It happened and it's in the past right?

Tessa:Yeah. Thank you and I'm so sorry knce again. You didn't do anything wrong, I was the wrong one.

Masa:Okay. Bye.

Tessa:Bye.

She hung up and Tessa was confused. She

didn't scream nor call her names though she had be so mean to her, she didn't even insult her...how big was her heart? Well she knew if it was hed, she would've gone off before actually considering the apology. She sighed. As long as she was forgiven, at that time she meant harm but not anymore.

Tessa looked around and stood up. Maybe when she has dealt with everything, she will apologise to Hayden for what her parents did. She felt he deserved that apology. Right now she had to pack her stuff and go back home for the vacation.

At Hayden's house

Masa looked at her phone again. Wondering where Tessa got her number but she let it slide



and stood up. She was so tired, can they skip the part where she has to make lunch and she orders food instead? Her feet were killing her and she wanted to lie down.

Arielle ran down the stairs all changed and sat next to her mom on the couch, this had been their last day of school. She placed her head on Masa's tummy.

Ari: Can the baby hear me?

Masa: Yes baby..

Ari: when are we seeing the baby?

Masa: soon.

Ari: Okay.

Masa closed her eyes yawning, she hated this. Always lethargic. The twins walked downstairs and found Arielle and Masa sleeping.

Avery:I'm coming with a blanket, the baby must be cold.

She walked to her room and came back with her pick blanket and covered them with the blanket.

Smith Jr:Let's not make noise.

Avery:I'm going to play in my room.

She walked back to her room and Smith Jr sat down on the carpet and reduced the volume on the tv, looking for a show to watch.

Three hours later, Hayden parked his car outside. It was so quiet he thought that maybe they were out but he was wrong. When he opened the door, he found Masa sleeping on the couch and Ari on top of her. Smith Jr was on the carpet fast asleep. He closed the door

slowly and he walked upstairs to Avery's room. She was also fast asleep as well. He quietly covered her up before getting out of her room.

He went to the lounge and picked up Smith Jr making sure not to wake him up and took him to his bedroom followed by him coming back and picking a sleeping Arielle too.

When he walked downstairs he picked Masa up. She unconsciously wrapped her arms around his neck and he walked to the bedroom carrying her. He placed her down and she opened her eyes yawning.

Hayden:Hey angel. Sleep okay?

She nodded and let go of his neck. Hayden kissed her forehead as she closed her eyes. She was still sleepy. He covered her up with the fleece and walked out, taking his phone.

Hayden:Hello..uhm is the reservation still there?

Voice:Yes sir(typing)

Hayden:Okay thank you.

Voice:Thank you for doing business with us sir.

Hayden:Of course.

He hung up and called the designer Blair had strongly recommended.

Hayden:Hello, is the dress ready? Can I pick it up tomorrow?

Her:Of course.

Hayden:Thank you.

He hung and slipped his hands in his pockets. Just a week away from home since she never goes anywhere and she was in her last trimester, meaning she can give birth anytime.

No wonder she was always tired like this. He wasn't going to make her pregnant any time soon. Maybe after three years or so but after this one, he wanted to enjoy his wife. He grinned. She wasn't his wife yet but saying it felt so good. He looked at his hands, her ring on his finger too?

Knowing she had been here all along and he couldn't see that she belonged with him? He shook his head. He walked to the kitchen and he could see she didn't touch a single thing. It was clean, he was too tired to cook. Maybe he will order in today.

.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*68\*

At Hayden's house

Masa woke up and stretched her body rubbing her tummy. She got out of bed trying to remember who brought her to bed. Her mind was still fuzzy as she walked out of the bedroom barefoot.

She got to the lounge and found Hayden reading for the kids. She had to admit that he was a great father, really hands on.

He looked up from his book and smiled.

Hayden:Hey you. Come sit here..

She walked to him and sat in between his legs on the carpet. He kissed her neck.

Hayden:Hey. I missed you.

Masa:Same.

He chuckled and continued reading for the kids who asked him questions and he answered them.

Hayden:You have pretty smart kids.

Masa:Whatever. I'm tired(yawning)

She placed her head on his thigh as he continued his conversation with the kids.

Masa:uhm did they eat?

Hayden:Yes. Can I make you something?

She shook her head and looked at the kids.

Masa:Can you go to town with me?

Hayden:What do you want to buy?

Masa:Christmas gifts..

Hayden:Okay angel.

Masa:mmhm..babies what are you getting me for Christmas?

They all looked at each other.

Ari:something.

Avery:A gift.

Smith Jr:A present.

Masa looked up Hayden.

Masa:I also want gifts from you. All of you.

Ari:Did we do something wrong?

Masa:No, I just want gifts.

Hayden:We hear you angel(laughing)You look like you would kill us if we don't get you gifts.

Masa:I would but your child is going to make it



impossible.

Smith Jr:Daddy can we talk to you?

Hayden looked at all three of them then Masa.  
He stood up as the kids walked to the dining  
room.

He bent down to their level.

Smith Jr:Will you help us buy a gift for mom?

Avery:We have mo-money. I think..

Ari:In the piggy bank.(frowning)is it enough?

Hayden:you guys saved up?

They nodded.

Hayden:Tell you what, when mommy goes to  
sleep we'll count the money and tomorrow  
morning before she wakes up we go to town  
okay?

They all nodded.

Hayden: Now think of what mom would like, don't forget you also have to buy presents for your grandparents, your aunt and your uncle. Ari don't forget to buy for aunt Joy too and your dad.

Arielle frowned again.

Ari: Will the money be enough?

Hayden: Trust me angel, it will be enough. Now run along and come up with ideas.

They all ran to their bedrooms and Hayden walked back to the lounge where Masa was still sitting on the carpet.

Hayden: I should feed you two. Are your feet swollen?

She nodded.

Hayden: Kill me if I impregnate you again.

Masa: Trust me, I will castrate you.

Hayden:You're always tired and now you're moody. Stand up,let's go eat my pregnant cow.

Masa:ke tiao clapa. Pregnant cow ke mang?

He laughed.

Hayden:Yep. Moody as hell. Stand up my love.

He helped her up and she shook her head.

Masa:Pregnant cow? Wow!

Hayden:Sorry. Come eat.

Masa:A pregnant cow? Kgomo? Me?(teary)

She was starting to sound heartbroken.

Hayden:Baby?

Masa:I'm a cow these days. Wow!

Hayden:Angel, I was kidding, I'm sorry.

Masa:No it's fine. Ke kgomo akere(wiping tears)

Hayden held her hands.

Hayden:Babe I'm sorry okay. You're not a cow, you're beautiful okay?

She removed her hands from his.

Masa:Keep your food.

Hayden:Sunshine..

Masa:Mxm!

She walked to the bedroom and he sighed making his way to the kitchen. He just took the food that they had left for her and he poured juice into a glass. Maybe icecream will also cheer her up.

Minutes later he walked inside the bedroom holding the tray and he placed it on the side table.

Hayden:Babe come eat.

She ignored him as she pressed her phone.

Hayden:There is also icecream for you.

Masa put her phone down and reluctantly took the tray.

Hayden:Thank you.

She didn't answer him, just silently ate her food.

Hayden walked to the dresser and got rid of his clothes. He walked back to the bed and sat next to her. He watched her eat her food till she got to the icecream.

Hayden:Are you full?

She ignored him as she indulged the icecream she is usually limited from eating.

When she was done she placed the bowl on the

tray and got out of bed, taking the tray with her.

Minutes later she walked back in and laid on her back, taking her phone.

Hayden:Sunshine? I'm sorry. Are you upset?

He kissed her cheek.

Hayden:Hmm babe? Daddy is sorry okay? I didn't mean it angel..babe look at me.

He lightly kissed her lips.

Hayden:I missed you.

Masa:I'm tired.

Hayden:I wasn't talking about sex but anyway you responded. I'm sorry okay?

Masa nodded.

Hayden:You're not a cow, you're my cute little whale.

Masa just picked the pillow and hit his face with it.

Masa:Hayden I hate you.

Hayden laughed and held her waist.

Hayden:I love you too woman.

Masa:Mxm!(laughing)

Hayden:I love holding your small body in my arms...bathong you're small, are you sure the baby will come out of that small..

Masa:Tshek Hayden!

Hayden:I just want to know.

Masa:kana mme go botlhoko. I swear if you don't hold my hand..

Hayden:I will.

The following morning

Masa woke up all alone in bed and she groaned. The house also seemed quiet. Too quiet if you asked her. She was lazy to get out of bed with her swollen feet. She couldn't wait to give birth, she was tired of the swollen feet and the tiredness.

Masa:Two months left right baby? Mmhm..

She turned to her side and picked up her phone, replying to Tily's WhatsApp messages. She saw her mother online and she sucked in a breath.

Masa>Hello

Mama:What do you want?

Masa:I'm just saying hello I'm still your daughter am I getting Christmas clothes too?

Mama: Raya monna wa gago a go rekele.

Masa:Which man? What does he have to do with you buying me Christmas clothes?



Mama:ah ha. You have a man.

Masa:yoh yoh mama. Go sharpo.

Mama:I know where you live.

Masa:Bye †

She placed her phone down and finally got out of bed.

At University of Botswana

Tessa hugged her roommate.

Her:I thought you said Black on Friday.

Tessa:I wanted to go but the parents said I should go home. I did say I'll do better.

Her:Alright. Have a safe trip roomie and see you next semester. Did you submit?

Tessa:Yep. Just this morning.

Her:Lucky.

They hugged yet again.

Tessa:Bye and please miss me.

Her:I won't.

Tessa rolled her eyes laughing as her roommate helped her with loading her bag into the cab. Tessa got inside and waved at her roommate. She was done for the semester. Like done done.

She was going home and her psychologist had recommended they have online appointments too so that she keeps track of her progress over the holidays.

The driver drove out of the school and Tessa looked out the window. She didn't want to bump

into Hayden though at Francistown.

At Hayden's house

The kids ran into the house as Hayden dialed the house help's number to stay with the kids.

The kids were sure about their gifts and he was happy. Although he was sure that by tomorrow afternoon, Masa and him were going to take a flight out of Francistown. She didn't know that yet too.

He walked to the bedroom and he found her in one of his shirts.

Hayden:Did you take a bath?

She turned to look at him. How did he manage

to look so good each and everyday with minimal effort.

Masa:yeah..

Hayden:Do you want to change or we can go?

She stood up in her tights and his shirt.

Masa:Is it okay?

Hayden:You look good.

Masa:I know you're lying but okay.

She brushed her hair back and slipped her feet into some comfy slip ons then she got her handbag and phone.

Masa:Let's go, if I get tired you carry me. Let's go to Game first then other shops.

Hayden:Okay mam.

At the mall

Hayden pushed the trolley as Masa pointed to a nice set of pots.

Masa: Get those. I've seen my mother putting them on her status a few times.

Hayden picked the pots and placed them in the trolley.

Masa: This is easy. Anyhow my feet are killing me.

Hayden: Should we pay for these and go back home?

Masa: It's good for now.

Hayden: Okay. Let's go angel.

They paid and the plastics along with the wrapping paper were put in the trolley.

Hayden:Done, you don't want to eat anything?  
Wimpy is right there.

Masa:Nope..I like your cooking.

Hayden:So you'll be confined for how long?

Masa:Since it's not my first born, just for three months.

Hayden:Okay.

They pushed the trolley to the car and Hayden loaded everything inside.

Hayden:Done. Let me go put this back and you get in the car.

Masa did as he said and she started to press her phone. It beeped with a message from Facebook and she opened it. It was a hi and she read the name. Katso. How the hell did he get her Facebook name? She ignored the message and placed her phone down.

Hayden opened the car door and got inside.

Hayden:Well let's get going pretty lady.

With that he started the car and drove off.

At Hayden's house

Masa laid down on the couch as Hayden got the stuff from the car.

Masa:Thank you.

Hayden:Don't mention it.

When Hayden was done he checked the time. He did get the dress when he went out with the kids, the flight was booked and he made reservations at the hotel. It was all set, all he

had to do was make that pretty lady pack her clothes so they can go for their babymoon.

Hayden:Babe..

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:I love you okay?

Masa:Ee rra.

Hayden:Can I ask for a favour from you?

Masa:Sure.

Hayden:Can you pack my clothes for me?

Masa turned her head.

Masa:You're leaving?

Hayden:Yes. A trip with this certain lady I fell for a couple of months ago.

Masa:Oh(low voice)

Hayden:Can you do that for me?



Masa:uhm s-sure.

Her voice came out as a low whisper. She got up from the couch and quickly walked to the bedroom where her tears finally rolled down her cheeks. She was a fool. Again. She should probably leave with her dignity intact.

She took her bag and started packing her clothes inside while fighting back the tears. She paused and sat on the bed wiping her tears away. She wanted to scream at herself for being such a dimwit but she didn't have the energy to.

She stood up and continued packing her clothes, it was not that much because she never left the house a lot too.

The door opened and Hayden stepped in.

Hayden:Did you pack my bag?

Masa:You can do it yourself, I'll call the driver to come pick me up.

She said avoiding eye contact.

Hayden:Look at me.

He walked closer and held her chin forcing her to look at him. She had been crying.

Hayden:is something wrong babe?

Masa:uhm just let me go. We are not doing this again.

Hayden:What again?

Masa:You playing me then finding another woman.

Hayden:what wo-oh.

He looked over her shoulder and at least she

had packed her clothes. He should pack his.

Hayden: Tell you what, I'll drop you off then okay?  
Let me start packing.

She shook her head with tears in her eyes.

Masa: You jerk!

She walked out and he chuckled. He should make it fast. Masa sat on the couch fighting the tears. He was such a bastard.

Hayden walked out with his bag and her suitcase a few minutes later. He had managed to put her dress in his bag too. He walked to the car and opened the boot, placing the bags there.

He walked back to the house.

Hayden:Let me say bye to the kids okay?

Masa wasn't even listening to him and he jogged up the stairs to say bye to the kids. They will be back in time for Christmas so it was not anything hectic.

He walked downstairs and Masa was not there. He walked to the car and found her inside. He opened the door and got inside.

Hayden:Buckle up.

She did so and faced the other way holding her phone. He started the car.

At Francistown Airport

Masa just looked at Hayden. She was lost. He

was supposed to drop her home then go on a trip with "the woman he fell for".

Hayden:We are here.

Masa:What's going on?

Hayden:We are flying out.

Masa:But yo-you sa-said...

Hayden:And you like jumping to conclusions. I'm going out with you silly.

She blinked a couple of times.

Hayden:For what is worth don't assume stuff, what do we do when we are not sure about something?

Masa:We talk.

Hayden:Exactly.

He wiped her tears away.

Hayden:O setete Masa.

Masa:I'm not. Where are we going?

Hayden:You'll see. Let me get the bags okay?

She nodded.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*69\*

At Maun International Airport

Hayden dragged their luggage to the car he just rented as Masa followed behind.

Hayden:Do your feet hurt babe?

Masa:Not that much. Thank you for this trip.

Hayden:Anything for you. Come kiss me.

Masa:Keep moving.

Hayden:Mxm.

He unlocked the car and placed the bags at the back.

Hayden:Done. Now come kiss me.

She just walked to him and stood on her tip toes to peck his lips. Hayden just held the back of her head and he deepened the kiss. He broke the kiss and rubbed her lower lip.

Hayden:I love you mami. Have we ever gone out on a date before?

She shook her head.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:I should do better.

Masa:I don't have clothes for a date.

Hayden:Don't worry about it, let's go so that you can slip into a hot tub with me and relax.

Masa:That sounds so relaxing.

Hayden:It is.

Masa:Don't even think of doing anything else.

Hayden:You underestimate my ability to control myself.

She smiled as he opened the car door and helped her get inside before he got inside too.

At Cresta Maun Hotel

Hayden checked them in and he handed her the keys as he pulled their luggage. Masa smiled.



He actually did this for her to relax. That was so thoughtful of him, she never demanded anything from him because she didn't want to seem like she was too much or anything like that. They took the lift and it went to the top floor. They got out and walked along.

Masa:Stop. I think this is the room number.

Hayden looked at the number.

Masa:Apparently it has one of the best views.

Hayden:We'll see.

Masa:The lady at the reception desk said that mme.

Hayden:Unlock the door baby.

Masa:Okay.

She struggled a bit but she did open the door

and she walked in.

Masa:It's spacious.

Hayden:Lots and lots of space..

Masa:Look at the view..

She walked to the window.

Masa:Urg man!

Hayden held her from behind and nuzzled her neck.

Masa:Can I prepare the water?

Hayden:So I can pack?

Masa:yup. I love you too.

She removed his hands and she got to the ensuite bathroom.

Masa:Cool! How long are we here for?

Hayden:A week.

Masa:This is gonna be a stress free week.

She rinsed the bath tub before she put a stopper and she filled it with warm water. She was sure she brought her bubble bath right?

Masa:Babe the bubble bath in my bag e teng?

Hayden:In a sec.

He walked inside and handed it to her. He shook his head.

Hayden:So I have to smell like vanilla and strawberry?

Masa:Just this once.

She poured it in the water and she made foam.

She just got rid of her clothes and slipped inside the bathtub. She closed her eyes and Hayden just walked inside holding his phone, he placed it a distance from the bathtub

He got inside the bathtub splashing the water on her face and she opened her eyes.

Masa:Ng ng..ooh!

She said as she looked at him.

Hayden:Stop gawking, tla ga ke go ja.

Hayden positioned himself behind her and he placed his hands on her tummy.

Masa sighed contentedly and placed her head on his shoulder.

When the water was starting to get cold, Hayden looked at Masa who seemed to have fallen asleep. He didn't want to wake her up but there was no way he was going to get her out of

the water without her waking up.

He slowly placed her head down and tried to get out of the water. She opened her eyes and he picked her up.

Hayden:It's okay. You can sleep angel.

She closed her eyes again and he got a big towel and wrapped it around her.

He placed her on the bed and he wiped himself before he got on the bed and covered them with the blanket.

The following morning

Hayden woke up first and he looked at her ring finger. He didn't know how he was going to pop

the question, Masa's mind was always making up impossible scenarios and he wanted her to feel special but also for it to be a private moment since she preferred private.

He got out of bed and walked to the wardrobe where he checked his suit jacket. He took out the ring and held it in his palm.

He sat on the bed and held her hand. He slipped the ring on her finger and snapped a picture before he slipped it off when she started to murmur in her sleep.

Hayden: Guess I have to be smarter because you're smart.

He went to put the ring back before he slept next to her and pulled her close.

At Tessa's parents house

Tessa was woken up by Tia.

Ma Tessa:Let her be, o tswa University.

Tia:You don't let me sleep till late.

Ma Tessa:She's from university, she needs sleep.

Tessa covered her head with the pillow.

Tessa:Tia listen to mom, I'm from Uni and you're being a little rascal.

Tia:Mom she called me a rascal.

Ma Tessa got out.

Ma Tessa:O tla go betsa, nna ga ke di tsene.(she will beat you, I'm not getting involved)

Tia inhaled as her mother walked out. She wasn't even defending her.

Tessa: Get out of mt room! I need to sleep gosh.

Tia rolled her eyes getting out and Tessa could finally catch up on her much needed sleep. Tia wanted to disturb that nice peaceful sleep of hers.

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*70\*



At Maun

Masa's eyes fluttered open as she felt the other side of the bed. Empty.

She heard the running water of the shower and knew immediately that it was Hayden. She yawned and stretched her heavy body, feeling the slight kicks of the babe that was in her tummy.

Masa:Soon.

She said and slowly got out of bed. She was already naked so she just walked to the bathroom where she filled the bathtub.

Hayden:Come join me. I won't make you stand for too long.

He knew how her feet were always swollen and also he didn't want her to slip in the bathtub. Masa closed off the water and trotted to the shower where his shower gel filled the space, mystified and all.

Hayden:Morning.

He kissed her jaw and she slightly moved her face back to allow him more access.

Masa:Goodmorning.

Hayden:How are you two?

Masa:We're good.

Hayden lathered his shower gel on the sponge and he started to move it across your back.

Masa:why yours?

Hayden>Last night you made me wallow in your vanilla and strawberry scents.

Masa:Payback?

Hayden:Whatever you want to call it.

Masa:We didn't talk to the kids last night.

Hayden:I brought you here to relax Sunshine okay?

Masa:Okay.

When they were done, he walked closely behind her and she opened the wardrobe.

Hayden:I have plans for the whole day for us.

Masa:Oh. What should I wear then?

Hayden took out the dress and Masa's jaw dropped.

Masa:It almost looks like a weddig dress.

Hayden:It's not.

Masa inspected the strapless dress that had a blue leteise and it flowed down in two thick layers of blue lace similar to the colour of the leteise.

Masa:How? When?

Hayden:Wear it love, indulge me.

Masa:Okay.

She wore the dress as she watched him get ready and he wore a shirt that had collars matching her dress.

Masa:Couple goals.

Hayden:Call it what you want.

She rolled her eyes laughing as she looked at her hair. She tied her hair into a nice low puff and she laid her edges.

Masa:And?

She turned to face him as she applied clear gloss on her pink lips standing up.

Hayden's breath was knocked out from his lungs. She was glowing alright and she looked every inch like a pregnant bride though she didn't know it herself.

Masa:Kana I should do my eyebrows and apply makeup similar to this?

Hayden:N-uhm you're perfect.

Masa:Sure?

He nodded and she pulled the dress up a bit. Fuck! She was gorgeous and that dress was made for her alright.

Hayden:Well I can't wait to show you off.

She raised an eyebrow and he grinned at her moving closer till his hands were wrapped around her. Masa had to admit that he had

really strong arms and them holding her like that, his cologne invading her senses. Just him being him scared her because she still didn't feel worthy of his love and she always felt like he would meet someone better and toss her aside as easily as he did when Tessa showed up in the picture and she would be broken, this time she was going to be left shattered in pieces dare he does such a thing.

Meanwhile Hayden's mind scrambled with ideas. He didn't know how to pop the question and if she will agree, sometimes he saw the way she looked at him and he could tell she didn't trust him. Not after the Tessa incident. He will earn back her trust though. He needed to.

At Francistown

Katso stared at his phone. Masa hadn't responded to his message. He sighed. He liked her and he refused to back down.

He got up from the chair. He needed fresh air. To clear his mind. Why the hell didn't he get her friend's number, he could've been asking for Masa's dials right now.

By the time he was out of the building, he made his way to the car. Maybe he was going to park it somewhere in town and take a stroll around. Sounded like a marvelous idea.

Letso walked out of the store, she had simmered on what Masa had said about her starting a business and also trying to further her education. How Masa didn't hate her still baffled her.

She bumped into a hard chest and moved back, holding her phone carefully so as to not drop it.

She looked up. That guy from the other day. Katso smiled. His ancestors were with him alright.

At Maun

Hayden held Masa's hand as they walked to the boat cruise.

Masa:As odd as it seems, I've never been on one before.

Hayden:Well we get to have three hours to ourselves.

Masa:Niice.

Hayden:Let me be your tour guide



mademoiselle.

Masa smiled as she moved her fingers to her ear, forgetting that she had tied her hair back.

Masa noticed that the table was carefully set and they weren't exactly alone, they did need someone to serve them.

Masa:You planned all of this?

Hayden:You deserve to be spoilt..

They finally sat down and the boat started to move. She giggled holding his hand.

Masa:We won't drown?

Hayden:Have faith in me woman..(laughing)

Masa:It's the boat I don't trust Mr Smith..

Hayden just shook his head laughing as he

removed the lid and Masa's mouth watered.

Masa:Okay..I can dig in but..

She picked the bottle that was on ice. She read the label and looked at him with a small thank you that she mouthed.

Hayden:It's non-alcoholic you know that right?

Masa:You never let me touch it.

Hayden:Just for today baby..

Masa:What's the celebration for? It's not even noon.

Hayden:I know you're not used to being spoiled.

Masa:Mxm.

She heard the camera snap and she looked up surprised. She wanted to talk as the man took photos. Wasn't he a waiter?

Hayden grinned at her.

Hayden:Let's eat babe..

She grabbed her fork and knife and ate while she occasionally put it down to pose for the photos, she might as well look good as she ate.

Hayden poured the non-alcoholic wine in her glass and handed it to her. Masa swirled the red liquid which was basically juice and she lifted her glass to Hayden's as the camera shuttered.

Hayden:To us..

Masa:To us..

Their glasses clinked and he placed his glass down to softly kiss her lips, slowly, softly and Masa couldn't help but moan in his mouth. They had completely ignored the man taking photos

of them. When Hayden broke the kiss he licked his lips and held her chin up looking into her eyes.

Hayden:Ka go rata autwe?(I love you okay?)

Masa:Ee rra(softly)

Her soft voice caressed him and the submissive tone it had turned him on. No matter how much she tried to act tough, she was just soft hearted and she listened. He smiled slowly as her pupil's dilated.

The photographer aka the waiter who was a professional photographer snapped more photos as they were in their own little bubble. Love was beautiful and him being assigned to snap photos by a man of Mr Smith's calibre was an honour.

When they finally snapped out of their bubble Masa looked down smiling and Hayden smiled at her. Was her lucky or was he lucky? A second chance at love again? He was going to take this one with both hands.

Hayden:Stand up babe..

She did and picked up her wine glass as he held her from behind with one hand and his glass with another as they stood by the rails. They watched the water ripple and he kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:Enjoying it?

Masa:Mhmm..and the air is so fresh, like so fresh..

Hayden:You're fresh.

Masa:I know what you're thinking..

She turned to face him and he stole another kiss.

Hayden:Have fun my baby..

He held her neck. Such a tiny human being.

Hayden:Are you sure I don't crush you when were having sex?

Masa:Dirty minded..

Hayden:Answer the question.

Masa:You're heavy but you keep most of weight off me..

Hayden:Wa re how long do stitches take to heal?

Masa:Ng ng..

Hayden:How long?

Masa:6 weeks..

Hayden:Well..

He thought about it.

Masa:Whatever you're thinking of, just forget it.

Hayden:Calm down..

Masa rolled her eyes as she watched the water, completely at ease and relaxed with this man.

At Francistown

Letso:Thank you, I should get going.

Katso:Can I get your number?

Letso:Sure.

She gave it to him and got going. Katso grinned.

Next step was getting Masa's number but there was something interesting about Letso too.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*71\*

At Maun

Masa posed holding the wine glass for some really nice shots.

Hayden allowed her the moment for her



individual pictures and she looked happy and glowing. He smiled as the photographer stopped.

Masa grinned at Hayden and he gave her a thumbs up. His soon to be wife.

He then joined her as he held her tummy and kissed it.

Hayden:I love you two okay?

Masa:Okay.

An hour later they were done and the photographer promised to send the pictures as soon as possible.

Hayden held Masa's hand as they got out of the boat.

Hayden:I would've asked for a pilot to fly us to the delta but because you are heavily pregnant my love, I'm not risking it.

Masa:Spoiler..

Hayden:We'll do it soon. Come.

She quietly walked with him as he led her to the car they came with. She wondered what other activities he had planned for the both of them.

Hayden quickly looked at her ring finger. He would do that soon.

Later that day

Masa closed her eyes as they massaged her back. Hayden looked at her. It was supposed to

be solely her spa day but she insisted they do it together and for him to keep her company.

When the masseur was done, they wore their gowns as they got their faces done.

Hayden:A face mask?

Masa:Good for the skin baby. Babe pass me my phone.

Hayden handed her her phone and Masa just checked the time before handing it back to him as she closed her eyes. The staff left them alone in the room and Masa opened her eyes. Hayden chuckled looking at her and Masa smiled.

Masa:You look weird. Hand me my phone.

He did so and she started taking pictures of him.

Hayden:Masa!

Masa:You look cute in that.

He got up and just picked her up. They walked to the mirror and she kept on taking pictures.

Masa:Pose for the camera baby daddy.

Hayden:Masa wa seaba gompieno.

Masa laughed and he held her waist and looked at her butt. He just held it and Masa rolled her eyes. He let go of her and got his phone from the table and he went through his playlist and he picked the song.

Masa turned to look at him. She just took a mirror selfie video as she danced slowly against him and he laughed holding her bulging waist

Baby mamas this is is your song

Being pregnant for way too long

Now tell the dj to turn it on

If she your baby mama, she gon do that mama

If she go put it on you, she gon do that baby  
mama

She laughed as she tried to twerk on him as heavy as she was and Hayden laughed getting hard.

Hayden:Masa fotsek, o ntshwarisa nopa!

Masa:Yes, I'm pregnant!(singing along)

Hayden:Ke tshwerwe ke nopa tlhemma wena.(I'm horny)

She laughed and leaned back against him. She almost touched his face when she remembered he had a face mask on and she touched his shoulder instead.

Hayden:I love you okay?

Masa:Yes sir.

Hayden:After this, we are going out to eat okay?  
This is very uncomfortable.

Masa:But it does your skin a whole lot of good.

Hayden:The things you people do.

Masa:Nice right?(grinning)

Hayden:Weird and unsettling. I'm never doing  
this face mask thing again.

Masa:we'll see.

As they stood like that facing the mirror,  
Hayden just placed his hand on her stomach.  
He badly wanted to know the gender but mam  
here wanted to be surprised. Ta dah! She had  
said.

Hayden:So after the we-

He paused remembering that she had no idea.

Masa:After what?

Hayden:Never mind..

The door opened and the beauticians walked in.

Hayden:Thank God. They need to take this thing off.

Masa shook her head laughing. Hayden just walked back to the bed, hand in hand with Masa. He had a lot of surprises for a single day that's for sure.

Once they were done and all dressed up in their clothes they made their way to their room and Masa half threw herself on the bed.

Masa:We are eating in or out?

Hayden:Out.

Masa:I'm tired..

Hayden:Indulge me this once okay?

Masa nodded as Hayden helped her to her feet and walked to the wardrobe with her.

Masa:I don't know what I should wear now, this trip caught me by surprise.

Hayden:Can I say I have you sorted milady..

Masa:Who helped you?

Hayden:I shall never reveal my secrets, that one I had it specially designed for you.

Masa:Oh man(getting teary)

Hayden:Now, this I saw in passing and I thought of me.

Masa:You think of me?

Hayden:Everyday love.

He picked the dress and Masa hugged him.



Masa:It's so beautiful. Thanks. Help me out of this one.

She gave him her back and he unzipped it. He ran his fingers over her satin skin and she turned to face him, standing on her toes to plant a kiss on his cheek before she got out of the dress.

Hayden changed clothes as he watched her struggle with the side zip. He helped her, squeezing her breasts a bit and he just held her chin. He bit her lower lip seductively and chuckled deeply before he licked her lips. He put a leash on himself and looked into her eyes. Masa swallowed. There was a hidden dark promise in his eyes and she was sure she didn't want to know what it was. He took a step back and she breathed. She didn't even notice she

had stopped breathing and she just tucked her hair back. She had finally freed it from the tight puff.

Hayden:Ready to go?

Masa:Uhm yeah.

She took her phone and gave him her hand since he was doing the whisking her around and she had no idea where they were going to eat.

When they were already down, Hayden led her out to a secluded area and she could see the fairy lights at a distance. He really knew how to make things happen.

Masa gracefully walked besides him as she heard the soft strum of the guitar or was it a violin? She wasn't even sure, she has never

been good with instruments.

When they walked closer, she saw many more lights and a table specially set up for two and it was elegant. He didn't have to spend so much on her really. She looked up at him as her lips parted, she wanted to say something but she didn't. It had a simplicity to it, just soft music playing in the background and the table. Hidden from people, it offered privacy too.

Hayden pulled the chair back and she sat down. She gave him a soft smile and Hayden sat down opposite her.

Hayden:It's still non-alcoholic.

Masa:Yoh yoh! It's your child mme.

Hayden:And I love my child too for your information.

Masa smiled as Hayden lifted the lid and she smiled at him.

Masa:Are we going to have icecream?

Hayden:Babe..

Masa batted her eyelashes at him and he face palmed.

Masa:I guess that's a yes..

Halfway through the dinner, the people playing instruments whom Masa couldn't see changed the tune and she could hear the male voice singing. She looked at Hayden as he helped her up on her feet.

Hayden:A dance with a pretty lady.

Mass:One of my favourite songs..

He held her waist and she placed her head on his chest as the unseen male sang Shawn Mendes' Wonder.

Hayden whispered softly in her ear as they shared the intimate jokes, with Masa giggling in between. Was this love true and pure or was it a figment of her imagination? Will he wake up and decide that he is bored of her? She asked herself as they danced. The song ended and the soft guitar played a soft melody. Hayden held her hands and kissed them.

Hayden:Babe?

Masa:Hmm?

Hayden:I know at some point of our relationship, I did you wrong. I hurt you, fuck! You landed in hospital because of me..

Masa bit her lower lip and held back tears.

Hayden:angel I know I hurt you and after the hurtful things I said to you, you forgave me. Hell you didn't even consider an abortion though I acted like the bastard you continuously said I

was and took me back. Babe..

He held her chin and looked into her eyes, seeing unshed tears.

Hayden:Babe I love you, I thought I would never love again but then you came along. I was scared to love again because what I love is always taken away from me, my father and Reginah and I wanted to love you from a distance, I don't know if I was protecting me or hurting myself more but if I don't try how sure was I going to be that you were the one?

Masa's breath hitched in her throat as her heart beat irregularly in her chest and she tried to breath still looking at him. A heartbeat skipped between the both of them and Hayden slowly went on his knees. Both of them, not the traditional way of being on one knee. He took out the ring case and looked at Masa who had

her hands over her mouth with tears streaming down her face. She was such a crybaby. He mused. His crybaby he guessed.

He opened the case and the diamond ring sparkled in the moonlight.

Hayden: Be my wife, allow me to promise you better or worse. To be my peace. I broke your heart but I'll put it back together for as long as it takes...

The second that passed between them seemed like eternity before Masa sobbed softly with her hand on her mouth. She wasn't expecting that. Never expected marriage from him. She loved him. Too much she mused. She extended her hand and Hayden smiled. Relief washed through him and he slipped the 24k gold and diamond ring on her finger. He kissed her hand

and stood up.

They shared an emotional hug as she cried on his chest.

Masa: You want me? Make a wife out of a person people called a whore?

Hayden rubbed her back. She needed therapy too.

Hayden: You are not angel. You are not okay? Thank you, I love you okay?

She nodded as she held onto him for dear life.

The following morning

Hayden woke up finding her ring hand splayed over his tattooed chest. He chuckled and looked at her, watching her breathing softly with



slightly parted lips. He grabbed his phone and just took a picture of her hand over his chest and he chuckled.

Masa turned and opened her eyes. He rubbed her chin.

Hayden:Exhausted?

Masa nodded as she turned and placed her head on his chest, falling back to sleep.

Hayden just posted that particular picture of her hand over his chest on Facebook with the caption being 'She said yes Officially off the market'

He placed his phone away and looked at Masa. He hoped this one wasn't going to be taken away from him by the clutches of death.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa went through her social media and paused seeing Hayden's latest post. He just posted a hand with one hell of an expensive ring over his chest. Just that only picture and no face. She didn't know what that feeling was but she quickly buried it and she went to the comments section. It had been posted two hours ago and there were more than a hundred comments on it.

She read the comments and she was surprised seeing the names of some of the people she had to come to know as the biggest players in Botswana's economy.

Rebamedi Kgosi:Mshianame

Maduo Reba Kgosi: † ♀A wedding to attend.  
Congrats partner.

Daniel Taylor: Ehe ke the groom and businessman of the year.

Angel Sethunya Romano: An Italian wedding?  
Just a suggestion † ♀

Lefika Mason: kante weren't you single? waitse men are tricky.

Blair Smith: Tell her I want to see her. She is very tricky that one, I just a word.

Cane Smith: Mrs Smith Dude can we see her, we don't want to see how expensive your ring is Mr.

Tessa wanted to type a congratulatory message but she stopped herself. She paused seeing Masa's comment, for a moment she had thought it was Masa but that time Hayden had assured her that they were just co-parenting.

Masa: Congratulations big guy. She is one

lucky lady †

She paused and went to Masa's profile. She saw the new dp and she clicked on it. She had posted a picture of herself holding a wine glass on a cruise. She was pregnant. Another part of her felt guilty for the abortion but she knew she wasn't ready for a baby. Masa looked so beautiful and she was glowing. She didn't see a ring on her hand.

She read the caption.

' Ee, bundle of joy is on the way. This has been a peaceful pregnancy. Difficult at first because something traumatic happened too . Moving forward it has been very intimate and I stopped going to the office, just focused on family and close friends who have been with me through this pregnancy.

my mother is still going to kill me if she dares sees this post, she still doesn't know who the baby daddy is and I'm surprised I kept it from them. My parents have been my support system from day one and to Tily thee godmother. Always there. Baby daddy thank you and for tending to my needs. Well see you guys on the flip side.'

She was gorgeous. She also saw her post shortly after the pregnancy photo.

' Baby daddy won't be posted till further notice and lona ba bo I knew it, calm down le tla lowa'

Tessa got off Facebook and sighed. She laid on her tummy and went to her YouTube to watch

videos.

At Maun

Hayden and Masa laid on the couch as she cuddled into him. Hayden kissed the top of her head as she picked which movie to watch.

Hayden:Mrs Smith?

Masa slowly looked at him, it was weird to hear him call her that but in a good way.

Hayden:I love that and I love you.

Masa:I love you more baby..

.

.

\*

\*

\*

A YEAR LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*72\*

At The Office

Hayden placed the family picture back on his desk as his PA walked in.

Hayden:Morning Luna.

Luna:Morning Sir, your schedule has been cleared for the weekend.

Hayden:Is she around?

Luna:No. HR said she asked for an unpaid leave.

Hayden nodded and dismissed Luna who walked away. She still had a few things to wrap up this side. The kids were with the nanny so they needed to go to Serowe for their bride. He smiled alone spinning in the chair. Maybe he had a few hours to spare in the office and wrap up everything before he left.

At Serowe

Masa sat down on the bed as she turned the ring on her finger. She was fidgeting and she didn't know if everything was going to go according to plan. She straightened the dress she was wearing as she stood up and looked at herself in the mirror. It wasn't too tight was it? She needed to respect everyone. She can be a wife even though everyone doubted her. Her



doek was tied smartly with no inch of her Brazilian weave showing though she wanted the strands to show so that she can be fashionable or she will do that when they take her to Bobonong? Maybe.

The door opened and her mother walked in.

Ma Masa: You look beautiful but you don't have to look so bridey, if that word exists. Your in-laws are coming tomorrow, breath baby.

Masa: Bo rakgadi ba go re...

Ma Masa: To hell with them, bao ke baloi.

She removed Masa's doek and let her hair flow down her back and she smiled.

Ma Masa: Batho, the baby made you glow more.

Masa: My babies bathong. I should check on them.

Ma Masa:Don't panic, remember your heart too.

Masa sucked in deep breathes.

Ma Masa:We don't want to lose you baby.

Masa:I'm good. Let me go help, I should go help right?

She kissed her mother's cheek and walked out. Her mother shook her head. She only hoped her husband's sisters won't sabotage this for her baby girl. That was her only wish.

As Masa stepped outside, the sun hitting her supple, clear and yellow skin her phone rang. She checked the skirt pockets and took her phone out.

Masa:Hello.

Tily:Hey there, how are you feeling?

Masa:A panicking mess.

Tily:Breath. Breath.

Masa:Kana mo lapeng bo rakgadi le di cousin...

Tily:Breath Hayden's angel. Breath. It will all go as promised.

Masal pray to God it does. I have to go sis, love you and bhe.

Tily:Bye.

Masa walked to the back of the house where her cousins were starting the fire. She looked at her manicured hands and her nails before she clasped them.

Masa:Can I help with anything?

Her older aunt's daughter rolled her eyes.

Masa:Kesa can I help?

Kesa:As if we need your help, akere o lekgarabe

wena.

One of her cousins elbowed her and Kesa rolled her eyes.

Her:That's not nice.

Kesa:But true..

Masa just decided to slip away. Maybe she should be in the room and stay away from everything. For everyone's sake. As she left there were mumurs and the other cousins looked at Kesa.

Kesa:She is gone, if she wanted to help she could've made herself useful.

Cousin 1:Kesa is right.

The other one shook her head.

Cousin 2:I don't even know what Masa did to

you guys.

Kesa:Whatever.

The other three cousins kept quiet and went about their work.

Masa's phone rang and she smiled.

Masa:Babe..

Hayden:How's my angel doing? I know you crack under pressure but babe keep it all together okay?

Masa:I'm trying.

Hayden:Okay angel. I love you okay?

Masa:I love you more.

Hayden:I miss you.

Masa:Patience okay love?

Hayden sighed.

Hayden:Okay babe. Bye.

He hung up and looked at the picture once again. He found himself smiling alone biting his lip. He couldn't wait to hold that tiny body in his hands and maybe if she permits, finally slide into her warmness. He was sure she was tight as hell down there, it's been a whole fucking year and he has been really patient. Like really patient, for her.

Luna opened the door to Hayden's office.

Luna:Sir there is someone looking for you, she insisted and I to-

The person walked right past Luna and sat on his office chair. Hayden dismissed Luna as his mind noted down to warn Luna to not let

anything of this sort happen again. Hayden leaned back on his chair and delivered a heart stopping smirk. His shirt was folded back revealing his veins, tattoos and obviously one could see how fit he was. Buffer than the last time the person had seen him.

Hayden: To what do I owe this visit?

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Next one to follow later and can I go ahead with that live session I promised? †

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*73\*

At Hayden's office

Hayden waited for her to speak but she swallowed a bit, taking in how good he looked in just a span of a single year. The more she attended therapy, the more she had come to realise she loved him and that she tried to act indifferent because of he was. Who he was to the person who was born with her heart.

Tessa:Hi.

Hayden:Hello, can you get straight to the point?

She guessed that maybe her pushing him away from his children had been a bad idea or Masa had told him? She forgave her so easily.

Tessa:I came to apologise.

Hayden nodded.

Tessa:I know who you are, uhm I'm sorry that



my parents stole Reginah's heart. If I knew, I would've not wanted it because it was illegally obtained. I guess that's why you broke up with me?

Hayden:Tessa?

Tessa:Rra?

Hayden:It's not your fault. You were a child and your parents are..well adults, they knew better. You shouldn't even be apologising on their behalf. They knew what they were doing.

Tessa:But still...

Hayden:And I didn't break up with you cause of the heart. I had my reasons. We were not compatible.

Tessa pushed her hair back and smiled.

Tessa:I went through therapy this past year, uhm I rediscovered myself again and came to a few revelations about myself.

Hayden:And I should know because?

Tessa sucked in a breath. She had thought this through, she looked at his ring hand and there was no ring. Ever since that engagement post, there have been no posts. Even of the anonymous fiancée.

Tessa:I came to realise that I actually do love you. I saw my wrongs. I was too blinded by rage and some other mental issues I won't mention.

Hayden sighed.

Hayden:Don't do this to yourself Tessa..

He stood up as he put his hands in his pockets.

Tessa:Hayden I thought about it and I genuinely do. The past year and few months we've been apart, I grew up.

Hayden:I have a woman I genuinely love,

wholeheartedly.

Tessa stood up and pulled down her tight skirt walking up to Hayden. She was surprised she had gained a little height too but she could never be taller than him. His cologne enticed her as it wrapped around her like warm velvet.

Tessa: Tell me you can't give us a chance again..

With that she kissed him and before she could deepen it he held her back.

Hayden: I'm trying to be nice Tessa, I have a woman I love.

Tessa: Hayden!

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden: If you think using sex against me will work, trust me it will work. I will fuck you like a whore against the office walls, on my table and still dispose you like a slut because that's what

side chicks do want right? Then go back to my wife and keep you hidden like a dirty secret. I love my wife very much and I'm in no position to kill her with shenanigans.

He let go of her hands and she rubbed her wrists. She swallowed her pride and looked at him.

Tessa:What if? Hayden listen to me..

Hayden:Now you want to be delusional Theresa, I'm a married man. What we had ended more than a year ago. Stop grasping on straws.

Tessa slumped on the chair and looked at Hayden.

Tessa:What if I'm to become your second wife?

Hayden stood still and looked at Tessa.

At Serowe

Masa laid on her back as she went through her baby's pictures. He was such a cute thing and her worst fear had been confirmed. He 100% looked like Hayden.

Masa decided to call the nanny who answered immediately.

Nanny:Hello boss..

Masa:Hey, can you give the kids the phone.

Nanny:Of course ma.

She walked up the stairs and handed Smith Jr the phone.

Masa>Hello...

Smith Jr:Hello mom, we are behaving..

Masa laughed. When he said that he wanted to cover his tracks.

Smith Jr:I'm with the baby..

He said gently fighting him off as he tried to take the phone from him.

Masa:Where are your sisters?

Smith Jr:Playing in Avery's room.

Masa:Don't let him get the phone, he will throw it against the wall.

Smith Jr:He was fine when he was really really small but he cried a lot too.

Masa laughed.

Masa:Bathong! I'll come home soon okay?

Smith Jr:Okay. Love you.

Masa:I love you guys more.

The nanny made her way to Avery's room and

handed them the phone. They squealed as they spoke to their mother. Masa laughed. These kids gave her life. She wasn't going to waste any precious moment with them.

Masa:I love you my lovies, I will call later okay?mommy loves you guys. Bye.

She hung up and laid on her back. Okay. This was going to go according to plan. Yeah.

At Hayden's Office

Hayden broke the silence and laughed.

Hayden:Tessa go back to therapy please.

Tessa's heart broke into tiny pieces. He did not just say that.

Hayden:For your sanity. Focus on school and let

the adults do what they do best. You see the woman I'm marrying? I don't deserve every inch of her and I'd be damned if I break her again..

Tessa could feel and see the way he spoke of her. The way his eyes lit when he mentioned the woman he was marrying. One she didn't know. She did not know her nor did he offer her name or let it slip.

Tessa stood up with a sad face.

Tessa:Think about it Hayden.

Hayden:Get out!

She quickly got out before he lost his temper and she closed the door behind her. She leaned against it and breathed in and out. That had been very brave of her.

She walked away pulling down her skirt and



took the elevator down. She must've gotten the PA in trouble.

Meanwhile as Tessa walked out of the building, a lady in a sun hat walked in and Tessa paused before shaking her head and walking away. She had probably read too many fairytales growing up.

The woman asked at the reception as politely as she could and she was answered. She took the elevator and tried to memorise what the receptionist said. She had lied about her being here for a meeting.

The elevator stopped and she stepped out. She saw the office and it stood out anyway.

She knocked on the door and opened before he said open.

Hayden:Lu-

Hayden paused as he looked at he cursed under his breath. His day couldn't get any worse could it?

Hayden:Wena? Get the fuck out before I call security.

Her:Hayden but I'm you...

Hayden:Yei, yei...I don't care..move.

The roar of his voice shook her as her fragile heart beat in her chest.

Hayden:Before I count to five you should be out and trust me I will kill you with my bare hands if I still see your face in my office. La ntlwaela waitse!

She quickly got out and fell down as she scrambled to the elevator breathing hard.

Hayden sucked a breath. Right now Masa's soft hands in his hair would do because this day turned shitty real fast. Maybe he should get going right now.

He packed his stuff in the bag and he picked his phone up. If he called her, she might pick up from his voice that he is stressed and she was already stressed enough as it is.

Later that evening

Masa's phone rang as she ate with the family. She looked at everyone and Kesa rolled her eyes.

Masa:Excuse me, I have to take this.

She picked her phone up and walked to the bedroom.

Masa:Hey..

Hayden:Hello angel, I'm outside.

Masa's eyes widened.

Masa:You know the ru-

Hayden:Rules are meant to be broken. I need you angel. Please.

It was the please that tore at her heart strings.

Masa:Give me ten minutes go tswa ka plan ee.

Hayden:Alright. I love you.

Masa:I love you more.

Masa walked back to the table.

Masa:uhm, I think I'll have an early night.

She said picking her half filled plate taking it to the kitchen. She scrapped the food off the plate into the dustbin before she washed it. Her mother walked in and she pretended to yawn as she stretched her body.

Masa:So aah ti-tired(fake yawning)

Ma Masa:Sleep, tomorrow is going to be a long day.

Masa yawned again before saying thanks. She walked to her bedroom and she looked around. She walked to the wardrobe and picked out the old teddy bear.

Masa:This will do...oh God be with me!

She said as she wore a gown over her pyjamas, it was a bit chilly outside so she will be okay.

She placed the teddy bear inside the blankets and covered it, making sure to switch off the lights too. Masa walked to the windows and there were no bars.

Masa:Perfect.

She opened the window and the cool breeze blew the hair strands. She almost left her phone but she walked back and slipped it in her gown pocket.

She slipped one leg out, when was the last time she did this? A long time ago when she used to go out for parties when she was here. She was young, wild and reckless.

When she had safely got out using the window she walked to the gate and carefully opened it. They were going to put a padlock on it later and she was sure whatever Hayden had to say

would be over.

She dialed his number as she walked away from their yard.

Masa:Where are you?

Hayden flashed his car lights and she walked towards that direction. She got to the car and the door was opened for her. She got inside and the air was warm.

Masa:Hey(softly)

Hayden:Hey. I booked into a guesthouse, mind if I drive there?

Masa:Sure.

Hayden:Thank you for coming.

He was about to start the car when she placed her hand on his.

Masa:What's wrong? Smith talk to me.

Her soft touch. So soft. He picked her hand and squeezed it before kissing it.

Hayden:We'll talk when we reach a comfortable place okay angel?

Masa:Okay.

Hayden:You're beautiful.

Masa smiled.

Masa:Flattery will get you nowhere my love.

He finally smiled and kissed her hand again. He held onto her hand as he drove, looking at it and kising it every now and then.

.

.

\*

\*



\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*74\*

At Serowe

Hayden drove for a good 20 minutes before he parked his car outside the small guesthouse. Since he was going to have to return her back home.

They got out of the car and he chuckled holding her waist.

Hayden:Pyjamas love?

Masa shrugged as Hayden pressed the intercom and the gate opened. They walked

inside and he opened the door. He nodded his head seeing the receptionist. He walked to the room and slipped the key out of his pockets. He led her inside the room. Masa looked around.

Hayden: This was the biggest they had. Are you hungry?

Masa: I'm okay for now..

Hayden: Okay.

He sucked in a deep breath and looked at Masa. He didn't deserve her did he? He was a fucked up soul and he has done a lot of bad things, things that would run the risk of ruining him. He had blood on his hands and he didn't deserve an angel like her. Standing here, he figured that he also didn't deserve Reginah too.

Masa walked close to him and placed her

hands on his cheek. There was something about the softness of her touch.

Masa:Hey big guy, talk to me..

He wrapped his large arms around her as she leaned into him.

Hayden:Thank you for coming.

Masa:You needed me, for worse or for better love.

Hayden placed his chin on top of his head as the day's events flashed in his head. Things he had learned to live way past and it surfaced. The woman who single handedly crushed into Reginah's car and the one who has her stolen heart. And like he had been avoiding thinking too much about Reginah because it got to him. Masa placed her hands on his chest and looked up at him.

Masa:Something is wrong, talk to me. You always force me to talk when I don't want to..Come sit down.

She held his hand and she sat on the bed making him sit on the carpet. She placed her legs on either side of his shoulders and ran her hands in his hair. She felt him relax under her touch and she continued doing that.

Masa:Baby what's wrong?

Hayden sighed as he held her wrists.

Hayden:I don't want to stress you, your presence is enough..

Masa just held his sharp jaw and lifted his head and looked at him.

Masa:I won't be okay tomorrow if you don't tell me.

Hayden:Today was crazy.

Masa:I'm listening.

Hayden went on to tell her the events of today, omitting the part where Tessa attempted to kiss him. He didn't want to make Masa upset.

Masa:She is out?

He nodded.

Masa massaged his shoulders gently.

Masa:How does it make you feel? You're not being entirely honest..

Hayden:I don't want to feel again..

Masa:Talking through it helps a lot darling.

Hayden sighed standing up as he ran his hand through his hair. Masa stood up too as he

walked across the room.

Hayden: The pain came back and it hurt like hell Masa, the hollow ache that I try to ignore hurts so bad I feel like I'm going to sink..

Masa's heart cracked hearing his cracked deep voice. He has never really cried or anything for as long as she knew him..

Hayden covered his face with his hands. Tessa with Reginah's heart, the woman who ended his whole lifeline in a single car crash and took his children's mother even before they knew her..

It hurt so much, he bit his inner cheek till he felt blood and he felt her small hands wrap around him as his eyes burned.

Masa: You don't have to explain, I understand.

Hayden: I'm okay, I've been okay these past

years..

He said trying to convince himself that he was fine.

Masa:You're not..baby you're not fine..come sit.

Hayden:I'm good. I'll get over myself..

He blinked back the tears that burned his eyes. He hasn't cried about this in years. It shouldn't hurt like this.

Masa just led him to the couch and sat down, forcing him to sit down. He placed his head on her lap and just rubbed his cheek.

Masa:It's okay if it's overwhelming. It's a traumatic experience that will always be there..

Hayden:I've been okay(teary)

Masa:There is no need to put up the walls around me..

She just rubbed his back too, soothing his heavy heary, softly as she would a child as he inhaled her softness. Masa just hummed a song, it seemed sad and her hums soft they got to him as the tears rolled down his cheeks. Masa didn't seem to mind, she continued humming softly for some time till she heard his sobs. He didn't want pity, just someone to be there for him, she understood that his pain hit him out of nowhere with his mother coming back, a mother he hasn't seen in years. The sole cause of his pain, it was bound to happen and rightfully so.

His quiet sobs broke her heart as she hummed softly though. She had a feeling so peculiar that this pain would be forevermore. It was something that wasn't go away on his part and she stopped humming sucking in a deep breath.



Knowing that anytime, the hollow feeling will dwell in his heart, catching him by surprise and he takes the road down memory lane, hurting more.

She resumed her humming rubbing his back as his tears soaked her gown. She placed her head on his back.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa went through Hayden's timeline for the fifth time ever since she left his office. Tears blinded her, she hadn't been a little demon to him too right?

There was no photo of his wife and maybe he had said that to keep her off, most people

marry within a year and he didn't have a ring on his finger. He had the money to marry. And she had actually done her research on polygamy, it was legal if done at the traditional courts.

She placed her phone down and just thought about it. She didn't want to text him, she still had his number or was it her sabotaging heart that yearned for him? She thought about it but she has learned to differentiate her real emotions from what the heart wants this past year and it was her who wanted him.

She wiped her tears and sighed. She should move on. Heck, she tried it a few months ago and the funny thing was that she compared him to Hayden. She had found herself unconsciously saying Hayden never did this and that and he did this...

She stood up and walked to the window and watched the darkness covering the city as everyone slept and her restlessness still keeping her awake.

At the guesthouse

Masa watched him close his eyes and she contemplated whether to go back home or not. She was about to stand up and he opened his eyes. He looked at her and she held his cheek, feeling his 5 O'clock shadow.

Hayden:Stay the night..

She just nodded and they stood up, walking to the bed. He removed his clothes and was left in his boxers before he peeled the warm blankets

and they settled in.

He just held her tightly, his huge hand slipping underneath her gown and pyjama shirt. The warm space between her breasts being where he settled his hand. Masa let him and he closed his eyes. Hoping thag she won't be taken away from him. Like his father and Reginah, at the hands of the woman he had failed to believe birthed him yet hurt him in ways that he himself failed to heal from.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*75\*

The following morning

At the guesthouse

Masa woke up first with Hayden holding her tightly. Tears blinded her as she ran her fingers on his arm. She knew she might get in trouble at home but Hayden needed her and he was the actual reason why they were going to be people asking for her hand in marriage.

He opened his eyes and smiled.

Hayden:Hey.

Masa:Morning. Are you good?

He sucked in a breath and just kissed her

forehead.

Hayden:Better. Thank you.

She cuddled more into him and he smiled. It wasn't his usual smile that reached his eyes.

Hayden:I don't deserve you. Angels like you...

Masa kissed him all over his face till he chuckled.

Masa:Never say that love. I love you big guy..

Hayden finally laughed as Masa kept kissing his whole face.

Hayden:I'm glad you don't have lipstick on your lips.

Masa:It would've made it better.

Hayden:I want you to stay here for a while longer but they are going to complain right?

Masa:It's okay, I want to make sure you're okay.

I'm used to being called names anyway so it won't make any difference.

Hayden frowned. He wanted to delve more into that when she kissed his lips.

Masa:After the formalities simmer down, we'll talk akere?

Hayden:Yes Mrs Smith, we'll definitely talk. I guess I should let you go now?

He said pouting and Masa laughed.

Hayden:You're like a little doll in my hands and warm too. We should probably get up though.

He just turned them, making her lay on top of him.

Hayden:How long for them to finish so that I can whisk my wife away?

Masa:I'm not sure an-

That was when it registered that he said wife.

Hayden kissed her lips and smiled. He just held her and got out of bed.

Hayden:We should get you home before they notice don't you think?

Masa:Yeah..

He put her down on her feet and quickly got dressed up before picking up his car keys and walking out with her.

At Masa's parents

A door knock sounded on Masa's door.

Ma Kesa:Masa?



There was no response. If only this girl knew they were doing her a favour. After all her whoring she gets to have a husband?

She tried to open the door but it was locked. She sighed and walked away from the door. She should get up soon and get ready before she embarrasses herself before her in laws.

Kesa just sat in the room looking at herself in the mirror. Masa had been the unruly child and now everything went well for her. She got to study abroad, got a job the moment she graduated, fell pregnant and is getting married into money. Why was it that the villains got the good things? She had made it her task to be the perfect daughter and her mother used her as an example for good behavior. Masa's behaviour was never one people usually spoke of but here they were. Her magadi negotiations about to take place.

The books lied. The good girl never got it easily. She had spent more than a year looking for a job and she hadn't found one. Pride had stopped her from asking Masa too. She might feel as if she owed her something. She rolled her eyes as she did her makeup. Maybe she will be beautiful. More than the so called bride herself and Hayden will see that he made a mistake, Masa is nothing but a whore. Just because she had money it didn't make her any less of a whore.

Meanwhile on the road Masa watched Hayden's veined arm on the steering wheel as his other hand softly rubbed her thigh. He was a sight that's for sure.

Hayden:I can walk you inside..

Masa:It's okay.

Hayden: You have no idea how you're going to get in do you?

Masa: Nope.

Hayden: I figured.

She leaned back and lazily looked at him.

Hayden smiled at her before facing the road again. They still had a lot to talk about. Maybe counselling will do.

Masa's phone rang in her gown pocket and she looked at Hayden as she took it out.

Masa: Yikes!

Hayden: ke mang?

Masa: Mama..

Hayden: You're on your own.

Masa: I'll get you for this.

She breathes in and out before answering.

Masa: Hey mom.

Ma Masa: Where are you?

Masa: In my room.

Ma Masa: I unlocked your room unless o le molo'i and turned yourself into a teddy bear.

Masa: I'm the teddy bear.

Masa's mother didn't want to laugh since this was a serious matter but she laughed.

Ma Masa: You have ten minutes to get here.

Masa: Yes mam. Thank you.

She hung up and looked at Hayden.

Masa: How far?

Hayden: We're about to arrive.

Masa:Alright.

Hayden parked the car a few houses away and Masa laughed undoing her seatbelt.

Masa:ba tlo ntshega, ka di gown maphakela a kana..

Hayden:You look cute.

Masa:only you'd say that.

She kissed his lips and she held on, deepening it holding his cheeks.

Masa:I love you okay? I love you baby boy..

Hayden chuckled kissing her back.

Hayden:Ke motona mo wena Masa..

Masa rolled her eyes and sat on top of him.

Hayden:Oh. You could've done this to me last night and I wouldn't have resisted.

Masa looked him straight in the eye.

Masa:If you feel like you can't do it, any of this.  
Stop all of it.

Hayden frowned searching her eyes to see what she meant.

Hayden:Stop what? The wedding?

Masa nodded.

Hayden:Why would I stop it?

Masa:I-

She paused and faced the other way for a few seconds before looking at him.

Masa:If you feel unhappy at any point, you are free to walk away. I love you okay?

She kissed his cheek with a smile and got off

him. She took her phone and got out of the car and walked in her sleeping clothes to the yard. There was no use of sneaking into the house when almost everyone was awake. It was just a few minutes past seven. She was used to the names so it wouldn't be anything new that was said about her. It seemed as if everything about her was wrong.

She opened the gate as some of her cousins snickered seeing her. She just walked to the house and passed her aunt. Ma Kesa shook her head with disgust and disdain etched on her chubby not so beautiful face. Masa just made her way to her bedroom and she bumped into Kesa who looked beautiful as if she was the one whom they were negotiating for today.

Masa:Morning..

Kesa shook her head.

Kesa:Can't really make a wife out of a whore...

Was all she uttered before walking away. Masa just opened her bedroom door and sat on the bed. She wasn't going to cry. She was to get ready and look the part. Yeah. She convinced herself as she walked to the bathroom which was not in her room like at her house.

Meanwhile at the back of the house Ma Kesa beamed with pride as she looked at her daughter.

Ma Kesa:Maybe they might change their minds and like you, look at you. All beautiful and you are not promiscuous.

Kesa smiled.

Ma Kesa:But either way, you can be nice to your cousin.



Kesa: for what?

Ma Kesa: Hayden is a virile young man and maybe since Masa will be focused on showing that she is a good person (a grim look on her face) she might ask them to consider your job application.

Kesa thought about it.

Kesa: Maybe.

Ma Kesa: Some things you have to be cruel to get them.

Kesa nodded, knowing that good things rarely happened to good people.

In Masa's room

She had tied her head wrap skillfully, as tendrils of her beautiful weave were exposed around her face. Her high cheekbones prominent, soft pink

lipstick on her pink pouty lips. She had gone easy on the makeup, the rebel in her wanted a smokey dark look but she opted for a natural subtle look. She stood up in the dress and twirled around. Perfect length. Not that she was going to do anything. Just maybe serve them, passing here and there. She wasn't really needed but she wanted to look fine for today.

Her bedroom door opened and her mother smiled.

Ma Masa:You're stunning.

Masa:Will they allow me to at least take tea or scones?

Ma Masa laughed.

Ma Masa:Uhu, think the groom will be there?  
That's why o kgabile jaana gore a go bone?

Masa:Yes.

Ma Masa: Maybe I might make a mistake and ask you to take water.

Masa grinned.

Masa: I love you.

She half ran to hug her and Ma Masa pushed her off laughing.

Ma Masa: I'm praying that you didn't make another child, God knows how your son is a difficult thing to deal with.

Masa: My son is not a thing and he is your grandchild.

Ma Masa: Le dire le tseye bana ba lona..

Masa shook her head.

Masa: Admit it that you're bored without my babies entertaining you. And tell me I'm the best mother in the world. Tell me! Tell me!

Ma Masa:Okay bye.

She walked away and Masa laughed. She loved that woman.

She patiently sat in her room as she kept walking to the window to pull the curtain back, they will come. She sighed and looked at her feet. She didn't know why she felt inferior when she was with Hayden. It must've be that feeling that comes once in a while, so heavy that she has a past and that it really taints what she is at the moment. The image of her young self always failed to leave her and at some point, she had waited for Hayden to leave because of her past. Call her a whore in an argument and tell her how she used to be a desperate little thing. She had waited, waited for him to find a reason to leave but he hadn't.

Nervously, her fingers twitched as she walked to the window again and she saw cars. They were here? Wow.

She sat on the bed and breathed to regulate her heartbeat.

.

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*76\*

## At Masa's parents

Hayden did want to be present and he hoped he will steal a glance at Masa. The elders from his side walked ahead of him and they sat down. He saw the look his future mother in-law gave and he had to hide the embarrassment. He wondered what story Masa had spun to keep herself out of trouble.

Elder: Before we proceed, re tla kopa pulo molomo.

Hayden's uncles looked amongst themselves before one of them slipped a hand in his auit jacket and placed a bundle of cash on the floor. Masa's uncles looked amongst themselves and looked at the Smith delegation. The Smith's held their stare but Masa's family didn't back

down. They ended up removing another bundle of moneh, placing it next to the other one. They smiled.

Elder:We can proceed.

Meanwhile in the room Masa nervously stood by her room door. She wanted to hear what was happening. Let them make this easy for her. She couldn't clearly hear what was being said but her mother passed and smirked.

Ma Masa:Shems.

Masa:Mama what's happening? Bo uncle ga ba ba tsenye dingalo akere?

Ma Masa:Patience.

Masa wanted to bite her nails but she looked at the perfect manicure on them and sighed.

Masa:I hope this goes well.

Ma Masa:Don't worry that fragile heart of yours.

Masa:Okay. Oh God! Hayden o teng?

Ma Masa shrugged.

Ma Masa:Maybe..

Masa:Mama!

Ma Masa:Sit down and wait..see you on the flip side.

Her mother walked away and Masa walked to her bed. She texted Hayden.

Masa:Are you here?

She waited for a few minutes for a reply. Her phone finally beeped.

Big Bear:I know you're obsessed with me

Masa: † ♀You didn't answer the question.



At the lounge Hayden quickly put his phone away as he listened.

Uncle 1:Our daughter is educated. She went abroad and stu-gatwe ke eng mole ga madi?

Everyone had to stifle their laughter.

Ra Masa:Bachelor of Sciences in Financial Engineering.

Uncle 1:Gone moo(laughing)ebile she gave you your photocopy..

Hayden's uncles agreed and Hayden nodded chuckling.

Uncle 2:We charge a high bargain for our daughter. O bone gore o montle jang?  
Yellowbone ya mo lapeng.

Hayden's uncle laughed now.

Uncle 2:0 montle akere?

Hayden:Ee rra(smiling)

Masa's mother saw that as an opportunity to go to the bedroom to call Masa.

Ma Masa:Take tea or anything. You have two minutes to go and come back.

Masa:You love me don't you?

Ma Masa:I might change my mind..

Masa quickly stood up and reapplied her lipstick. She calmly walked to the door and threw a smile at her mother.

Masa walked to the kitchen, catching a whiff of Hayden's cologne. She found Kesa in the kitchen. This time she decided to mind her

business and shut up. She opened the fridge and got the water jug. Kesa ignored her as she placed the scones and tea on the tray.

Kesa walked away to the lounge and fixed her smile. Making sure she spotted Hayden and placed the tray in front of him bending. Hayden tried to hide his shock. What was going on?

Uncle: This family has a lot of beautiful children.

Uncle 1: That is why she gave him a beautiful child.

Hayden laughed and covered his face.

Hayden: Bathong..

Kesa paused. His voice sent vibrations to places she had no interest in deliving information about. She swallowed and looked at him. He was hot, how the hell did he fall for a

slut like Masa?

She looked the other way as she stood upright. She smiled again and walked away. Masa calmly added lemon slices to the water, mint leaves, ice and a drop of honey. Something he always liked, especially when he was going to the office and she would prepare his water. Diligently everyday.

She placed glasses on the tray and walked to the lounge. Hayden lifted his eyes laughing and his smile faded as he took in his future bride.

† ♀Look at me. He thought to himself but she didn't, she still kept her head low as she placed the glasses on the table and walked away. His first instinct was to follow her but then there were in the middle of the negotiations.

Masa leaned against the fridge as she picked another tray and placed the water jug on top before she calmly made her way to the lounge with her head low. Hayden kept his eyes on her, predatory. At this point he wished he was telepathic and tell her to look at him.

Masa just poured the water in a glass and bowed handing him the water. Their fingers brushed and he made sure it was intentional.

Hayden:Babe look at me(whispering)

The elders acting oblivious to the sudden tension in the room as they poured tea and served themselves the scones. Masa did look at him and he swore under his breath. She stood upright with her head low and walked away. Hayden watched her walk away till she was out of sight. More than ten minutes later he realised she prepared the water the way he

liked it.

Masa laid on her bed and texted Tily.

Masa:So far so good.

Godmother:You like worrying over nothing.

Masa:Well, I can't wait now..

She circled her engagement ring on her finger and smiled alone.

Godmother:How is the family treating you?

Masa:Excluding my cousins and this one aunt who I swear has a vendetta against me? Good.

Mom is an angel.

Godmother: You actually believe your mother doesn't have her own plans?

Masa:I know she does mom for you. Any new suitors lined up for you?

Godmother: Does your husband have any cousins?

Masa: Well I haven't exactly met all of them, ke tla bona ko kgorosong.

Godmother: Update me and I'll tell you if I want them

Masa: † ♀ Wena kana. Sharpo.

Hayden's text reported.

Hayden: After we're done, make your way to my car.

Masa: What if I don't want to?

She waited for a few minutes before he texted back.

Hayden: It wasn't a request angel.

She swore she could actually hear him saying that in her ear and knowing she had no choice but to obey. She placed her phone down and stared at the ceiling. It was happening. She had to calm herself down. So after this she can start sending out wedding invitations. Obviously she is going to post the wedding pictures after the wedding. She stared up at her ring, admiring how the diamond shone in the sun rays that had somehow made it inside her room.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa sat on the edge of the bed. He hadn't even considered what she had asked of him. She should cut her losses and get over him. Yeah. That would work.

Her bedroom door opened and Tia sat next to



her on the bed.

Tessa:And?

Tia:Well I want to buy something.

Tessa raised her eyebrows.

Tia:Okay, mom won't give me money for icecream and a new bag so..

Tessa chuckled.

Tessa:Nice try..

Tia:I really need the money..

Tessa:At what cost?

Tia:Anything...

Tessa smiled.

Tessa:Well you can clean my room for hundred bucks? Enough for your budget?

Tia smiled.

Tia:More than enough. Thank you. Should I start now?

Tessa:Be my guest..

She said standing up with her phone in hand. A walk will do in this quiet neighbourhood, she mused.

At Serowe

Hours later after the negotiations were over, Hayden's family left the yard and Hayden thanked his uncles for delegating on his behalf. They all smiled nodding. Hayden walked to his car and he sat inside waiting for Masa to show up. He checked the time and the sun was just setting, the different hues of orange made the sunset a beautiful sight to behold. His mind

went back to the time in Maun. The safari drive and she had screamed when she thought an elephant was going to come near the car. They had a tour guide but women were dramatic like that. Minutes later she was posing a few metres away from the elephants as the sunset made her look more beautiful. Okay je can finally say he had a wife. A whole wife. The feeling was out of this world. His car door opened and his eyes shifted to that direction. He gave her a knowing look.

Hayden:Mrs Smith hi..

She still had the head wrap on as she smiled shyly. Her lips were clear of the lipstick she wore earlier on and they were just smeared with what he suspected was her favourite lip balm.

Hayden:Sit on top of me.

Masa:B-

The look he gave her told her that she knew better than to argue with him. She sat on top of him and his hands slipped underneath the dress, as he started stroking her thighs.

Hayden:You're beautiful.

Masa:Thank you.

Hayden:And mine..all fucking mine right angel?

Masa:Yes..

Hayden:Good.

Masa:I kn-know that look.

Hayden:Which look?

Masa:That one(swallowing)

Hayden chuckled as he softly kissed her lips, she responded same time his member jerked and Masa tried to move but he quickly held her waist as his arms felt like steel around her waist.

Hayden:Fuck! Can I at least feel it?

Masa:H..

Hayden:Babe it won't hurt, I promise..sale ke  
itshwere for a whole year ke sa utlwe bokhukhu  
joo...hmm...

Masa:Not here babe..

Hayden leaned back, his hand slipping between  
her thighs.

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:I won't take long ao mma..

.

.

\*

\*

\*

# FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*77\*

Inside the car

Masa looked into his eyes and kissed his lips.

Masa:A little bit more patience love.

Hayden could see that she didn't want to even compromise. He was close yet so far, he knew he could move her panties aside and fuck her senseless in the car but she said no, in not so many words. He had to respect that.

Hayden:Okay.

Masa:Ga ke gane.

Hayden:Whatever you say angel.

Masa:Are you angry?

Hayden:Sexually frustrated and no I don't want a blow job or a hand job. Thank you.

Masa:Ba-

Hayden:It's okay, I'll wait...

Masa:Hay-

Hayden:Have you touched yourself?

Masa:As in...

She trailed off before it finally clicked.

Masa:No.

Hayden:Keep it that way.

Masa:Ee rra.

She should probably sit on her seat because he was getting hard and her being on top of him wasn't even helping.

Masa:You're not angry with me?

Hayden:No. Not at all..

He picked her up and placed her on the seat. The sexual tension still very much palpable between them. Masa looked at him as her eyes slid to the tent in his pants. Hayden opened the window to try and breath. How long would he have to wait? He asked himself. Meanwhile Masa counted the months. Will he be able to wait for an extra month or two? Just that?

Masa:I think I should get going..

Hayden:of course.

He kissed her cheek before pecking her lips.

Hayden:I love you.

Masa:I love you more.

She got out of the car as the light wind whipped the strands of her hair as she looked around.



Hayden looked at her. He will have to wait. Hopefully not too long, he wasn't going to fuck up bu cheating. He knew she would walk away without a second glance and he would lose her forever.

He waited for her to walk back to the yard before driving off.

Masa walked to the yard. It seemed as if everything went well and the following week she was going to go to his home village.

She walked into the house and headed straight to her bedroom where she sat on the bed. The door opened and she frowned seeing Kesa.

Masa:How may I help you?

Kesa:I came to apologise..

Masa raised an eyebrow and Kesa had to maintain a humble exterior.

Kesa:I said some offensive things to you unnecessarily and there is tension in between us when we are supposed to be family.

Masa flashed a bright smile.

Masa:Cool. Apology accepted.

Kesa:Just like that?

Masa:Yes. You saw the error of your ways and you apologized.

Kesa grinned.

Kesa:A hug?

Masa smelt her attire and how it reeked of Hayden's cologne, she also just didn't want to hug her.

Masa:I'd rather not. Thank you though.

Kesa:No hard feelings?

Masa:None at all.

Kesa walked out. Had she forgiven her or had she seen that her apology was not sincere? Either way, it was not yet over.

At the guesthouse

Hayden laid on the bed as he scrolled through their pictures together. Surprisingly how intimate their relationship was, brought about peace. He slowed down when he got to the pictures of them with face masks on. He had to admit that she practically forced him to do that, that exact day. He just made the picture his WhatsApp dp.

He went to Facebook where he posted the picture captioned ' Gents, she made me do this. I swear '

He smiled and went back to his gallery. He chuckled watching the video Masa had sent him of Smith Jr with the baby. But they got used to the baby and soon all his three siblings were protective of him. His small family.

But no matter how much he tried to distract himself with the picture he needed release. Quick release, at the mere image of her under him and moaning, he got hard. Fuck!!

Hayden:why babe? Why?

He could be fucking her to oblivion right now, tearing his pussy apart, that sweet thing

between her legs belonged to him and rightfully so and making sure he left a mark.

He got out of bed and headed to the bathroom. He was sure his hands were tired of the same routine, having to jerk off in the shower and then no sweet pussy for him. Yep.

She literally had him by the balls and didn't even know it.

At Tessa's parents

She paused when she saw Hayden's latest post. Oh that was the woman in his life. She was pregnant too. She couldn't exactly see her face because of the face masks but yah. They looked happy. She just got off Facebook and

switched off her lights.

At Masa's parents

Masa struggled to sleep that night and she ended up waking up with her phone in hand. She dialed Hayden as she quietly made her way to the kitchen. She opened the fridge and grabbed a can of juice.

His phone rang till it sent her to voicemail. He was probably sleeping. Masa walked out of the kitchen and was about to reach her room when she heard hushed voices. She got closer to the room and listened carefully. She had nothing better to do. She listened on, disappointed but not surprised. She didn't know what she ever did to these cousins of hers. She never stole their boyfriends, hell she wasn't even smarter

than most of them, she didn't even know how she passed her form five too. She shook her head. Either way, none of her family members were going to enter her house, why start when she is married when they never dared when she was really single? Stupid.

She got to her room and closed the door softly.

Masa:Oh so help me God.

She finally uttered as she opened the juice can.

.

.

\*

\*

A WEEK LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*78\*

At Bobonong

Masa sat down in the room full of elderly ladies. Traditionally she was Hayden's wife and was expected to act accordingly. The legal aspect of the marriage would be dealt with in a week before they had to deal with the actual wedding ceremony. She had had time to plan the wedding so everything was going according to plan.

Aunt: We are here as your in-laws and parents.

Masa nodded.

Aunt 2: Tota ngwanaka, marriage is no child's play. You are going to take a vow to stand with that man for the rest of his life. That means that you are no longer a single woman, you pass



your decisions past him. He is the head of the house.

Aunt:And if your husband wants to sleep with you, let him. It is your duty to ensure that he is well fed since you're his wife.

Masa's face heated as her aunt said this.

Aunt 2:And you're already doing a stellar job with the kids, but just don't let the nanny take over everything. Some might end up wanting to take your husband.

Ma Masa:And relatives. Some are really dangerous the minute you let them inside your matrimonial home, so be really careful.

The other aunts spoke and Masa's mother looked at her finally.

Ma Masa:All I can say is that, if it gets too much you know where home is. If he lays a hand on you, our arms are wide open. Don't forget that you have your parents too.

The ladies nodded in agreement.

Ma Masa: Being married does not mean you should stop taking care of yourself a bo o itatlhelela. Most women tend to put their husband's needs above theirs and lose themselves in the marriage, turning to be people they are not. Masa don't be that person.

Masa: Ee mma.

A huge part of Masa was glad Ma Kesa couldn't make it. With what she knew, she couldn't be able to tolerate her.

Aunty: And do not wholly depend on Hayden. A woman must have her own things in case things go south. Not that they will but things change but just in case akere ngwanaka?

Masa: Ee mma.

Ma Masa:Ke tseela gore o re utlule.

Aunty 2:She did and you raised her well.

Ma Masa smiled looking at Masa. Masa had been a little spawn of satan but she wouldn't trade her daughter for anything. The way she had grown and matured was really remarkable.

Ma Masa:Thank you.

Meanwhile outside the men talked to Hayden who was paying attention to every little thing they said.

Uncle:As I was saying, mosadi ga betswe, ke galase wa thubega.

Uncle 2:Exactly, o mo laya hela sentle.

Hayden was really amused, he had to hide the amusement from his eyes.

Uncle 3:If she is disrespectful, wa jewa.

Hayden:oh God!(trying not to laugh)

Uncle 2:Whether it is in the morning, afternoon, at work, she needs to know who her husband is at all times. Women tend to think we are soft because we let them get away with everything. That thing between your legs ke yone thupa ya lelwapa.

Hayden:Ee rra.

Uncle:whenever you have problems you feel we can't handle, we are all here. As advisors and possible mediators akere re go nyadisitse.

Hayden:Ee rra.

Uncle 2:Well I think our job is done, he should get his bride.

They laughed.

Uncle 4:Le ene o tsere o montlenyane gore.

Hayden:I know(smugly)

They dispersed as they prepared to take his wife to him. Well she has been serving them for the past few days and they have been keeping the two apart, with no interactions whatsoever.

In the room Masa was in, the ladies walked out leaving Masa with her mother. Masa hugged her mother.

Masa:Thank you.

Ma Masa:We have to prepare for later, take a bath and smell good.

Her mother was about to walk out when Masa called her.

Masa:Mom?

Ma Masa:Yes?

She fiddled with her hands.

Masa:Uhm...

Ma Masa walked back and sat next to her on the bed.

Masa:I have never said this but sex terrifies me.

Her mother gave her a questionable look.

Masa:After Hudson's difficult birth, I can't bring myself to do it.

Ma Masa:Have you explained it to rraagwe Smith?

Masa sighed.

Masa:I just told him I'm not ready.

Ma Masa:Talk to him, I'm sure he'll understand.

Masa just nodded. Hayden had been with her, more than 24 hours of labour contractions. She had almost gone through a c-section. Almost.

She had been scared, at the thought of dying knowing that her kids are young and Hayden having to raise a newborn on his own. She closed her eyes. And how she cried when they decided for an episiotomy plus she had the help of an epidural. It was really crazy in that room.

Ma Masa saw Masa's face, how it actually scared the living daylights out of her.

Ma Masa: Get ready. I think almost everyone will be there later okay? And I mean everyone.

Masa nodded as her mother walked out. She walked to the mirror. It wasn't even about how her body had been out of shape, just how it was a horrific experience for her in the labour room. After she had healed fully which in her case, she took more than six weeks to heal because they found out she hadn't been stitched up correctly.

She sent a text to Hayden.

Masa:I love you.

Big bear:Okay Mrs Smith. Look pretty for me.

Masa:Yes sir.

She smiled a bit placing her phone down. She will update Tily later on in regards to his cousins. Maybe they will meet at the wedding ceremony and get on.

Meanwhile at Francistown

At Letty's house

She walked out of the yard and she saw Reginah's house. The gate had been pad locked and she was sure living next to this house was going to bring memories. More than 7 years of



not seeing the real world. Hayden had grown so much.

He was his father's replica and that scared her, now that he had matured and he still hated her with passion. Even more now that his children didn't have a mother. Would he allow her to meet his kids at a certain point in her life? Or she would still be the wicked witch of the west?

No one had bothered to check on her at prison or even at the asylum. That's how she knew they didn't care, the past month she had been out she had been trying to gather the courage to see him and he threw her out like a dog. His own mother. She didn't have anything to her name at this point. Just the clothes and the house. Letty walked inside the yard and closed the gate, pushing it to close it. Maybe he

needed to calm down and she will try again to reach out. All those lonely years showed how she was actually the villain in the story.

At the Smith's

Hayden sprayed his cologne on his shirt and he glanced at his reflection in the mirror. He was going to be given his wife. He smiled.

Masa wore the leteise and the head wrap. Of course it was a different one and for this one, under sunsets, there was a photographer to capture the moment. Her blue heels had been made to match her leteise and she was sure she didn't need that much make-up but it helped that they had a makeup artist to work her magic. If it felt like this then she didn't want to imagine how the actual wedding day would feel like.

She glanced at her reflection in the mirror and smiled. She took selfies of herself and she grinned. She was beautiful. She really felt beautiful and not what people called her.

She lowered her head as the elders came to get her. She didn't dare lift her head to look around. She gracefully walked in those heels following the elders.

Hayden smiled sitting down as he saw her fine legs. Blair was busy keeping the kids at bay when she saw Masa approaching. She was beautiful. Tears blurred her eyes. Aaw man. They were a cute couple together and they made a cute baby together too.

Hayden stood up as the ladies started with their ululations and Masa blushed still looking down as the ladies showed her around. She could finally sit in meetings because she was no longer a single woman and that meant Hayden would too and not work like the other boys who were yet to marry.

Masa could smell his cologne as they moved closer and in seconds her soft hand was in his large hand.

Hayden:Hey Mrs Smith(deep voice)

Her heart beat in her throat and she looked up at him with a shy smile.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*79\*

At the Smith's

Hayden smiled lifting her head up.

Hayden:I love you.

Her cheeks heated and he laughed pulling her to him and kissing the top of her head as the people ululated.

Hayden:Finally my wife..I love you.

Masa:I love you too(softly)

He held her in his arms. Masa held him, enjoying his arms. He literally swept her off her feet as he picked her up and she squealed.

Masa:Oh God!

Hayden:Urg man!

She held onto his neck with a grin. She was happy and she was going to allow herself to enjoy this, her moment. Their moment.

When Hayden walked around carrying her she had to hide her face in his chest.

Hayden:Can I finally show off my wife now?

Masa:Yes.

He laughed kissing her forehead again.

Hayden:You're difficult woman...I love you.

Masa saw the kids from a distance and shook her head.

Hayden:I can't wait to dodge the big guys and say my wife said no..

Masa laughed hitting his chest.

Masa:Bathong H.

He shrugged still carrying her. He kissed her lips before he placed her down on her feet and still held her close.

Masa:This is our worse or for better? Our till one takes their last breathe?

Hayden:Our happy ending..

Masa grinned.

Masa:Well it's not going to be an easy road but here, just between us two, no witnesses, under the perfect sunset blossoming with colours. Promise me that you will be there for me. I'm not one of the best people out there and I know at some point you might tire but I want that assurance.

Hayden held the back of her neck and brought his lips down on hers, gently rubbing her back with the other hand.

Hayden: This is where the story starts. I want you, all your pretty moments and not so flattering outbursts.

She laughed and hit his chest, harder than the last time and he pretended to wince.

Hayden: You have my word. I love you Masa. If I hurt you it won't be intentional but I will still be there for you.

He didn't dare say it will be forever and always. Last time, he lost a person when he thought like that but he knew he loved Mass and he hoped she understood too.

Hayden: Dare I say, you're spending the night in my bed?



Masa nervously laughed it off as she faced the sunset and Hayden sensed her discomfort. He held her from behind. At this point, they had forgotten there was a photographer who had already taken countless photos of them.

Hayden:Something is bothering you Sunshine. Talk to daddy..

He said as his voice caressed her.

Masa:Nothing..

Hayden:Masa?

Masa sighed. When he started calling her name...

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Let me in. What's going on in that pretty mind of yours?

Masa:I'm sorry.

He frowned still holding his wife.

Hayden:What for?

Masa:I denied you uhm..sex and you waited the whole year. I-I just couldn't bring myself to do it.

Hayden went silent for a while before she went on.

Masa:After Hudson's difficult birth and just-

Hayden closed his eyes. He had been scared there, he thought he was going to lose her right in the labour room and he couldn't fathom that. At that point watching her cry on the bed with no sign of the baby coming out for over 24 hours, it had just finished him. He had been starting to think that he was cursed and that any woman who carried his child was going to die. He squeezed her hand.

Hayden:I hear you..after almost losing you and

seeing you go through all that, I'm not getting you pregnant again.

Masa:Contraceptives are not a 100% safe an-

Hayden:Babe I know. Trust me. I'm sorry you went through that to bring my baby to earth.

Masa:Your baby is just something else.

Hayden:He has your eyes.

Masa:No he does not. I despise your good genes, he is literally your second copy after Smith Jr.

Hayden:Are you on any contraceptives?

Masa leaned against him.

Masa:We're good? Ga ke dire ka bomu H. Sorry.

Hayden:We are, now answer my question.

Masa:The injection. I want to insert the loop too. Is it cool with you?

Hayden:It is.

Masa:Do you think you'll be able to wear the condom with me?

Hayden shook his head.

Hayden:Hell no! Masa I'm not wearing rubber with you. You're my wife Masa...

She sighed.

Masa:But we know all contraception is not 100% safe and I might fall pregnant.

Hayden:I'm still not using a condom with you Masa and I'm not going to further discuss that.

She sighed. Maybe she might tie her tubes? Urg she'll talk to him as time goes on but God knows she doesn't want a baby in the next five years.

Later that cool evening

It was a small celebration and the festivities were outside when Masa made her way to her room. She found Ari sprawled on the bed.

Masa:sweetie?

Arielle woke up hearing her mother's voice, she was a bit disoriented as she tiredly rubbed her eyes.

Masa just walked to her and picked her heavy body, placing the back of her hand on her head. She was burning up.

Masa:Are you okay baby?

She placed her head on her mother's shoulder weakly.

Masa walked out and she bumped into Blair.

Masa:Hey, has she been feeling like this?

Blair:We took her to the clinic and they gave her medication to take for the fever. It's still

persistent?

Masa looked at her first born in her arms.

Masa:Why didn't you tell me?

Blair:Because you're doing what you're doing now. You're worrying Masa.

Masa sighed as she walked to the kitchen, spotting Hayden holding Hudson. Hayden just walked to where she was heading and Hudson lifted his small hands when he saw his mother.

Masa:Sorry baby..Your sister needs my attention.

Hayden:Is she ok?

Masa:Gatwe a fever. I want her to eat something then get the medication from Blair.

She rubbed Ari's head.

Hayden:She looked fine earlier.

Masa:Yeah..Hopefully she will be okay by tomorrow.

Hayden:I hope so..hey princess.

She lifted her head with a little smile and Masa just looked at Hayden.

Masa:She didn't smile at me.

Hayden:Whatever. You'll be fine okay honey?

She nodded.

Hayden:Bring her here, take your son.

Masa just let Arielle slid down her as she got Hudson from Hayden and her baby boy beamed touching her cheeks.

Masa:wena kana.

He giggled making his baby sounds and Masa had to laugh a bit.

Hayden gently picked Arielle and walked away

with her.

Hayden:Cuddles and snuggles?

She nodded placing her head on his chest  
meanwhile in the kitchen..

Masa:Wena what am I supposed to do with you?

Hudson just smiled revealing his two teeth and  
touched her face again.

Once everything had died down and Masa let  
the kids stay with her mother, who was only too  
happy to be surrounded by the four kids. Avery  
and Smith Jr had went on to tell her mother  
everything that has been happening. Avery  
being the one who seemed to spill more tea.

Masa:Avery wa bua bathong.

Avery waved her off.

Avery:Mama I'll tell you tomorrow..



Masa:La nkoba?

Smith Jr:Bye mom. Grams as we were saying...

Masa walked away as Hudson crawled to his big brother and laid on his back next to him.

Masa walked out of the room and felt arms around her waist.

Masa:How is she?

Hayden:She's okay and asleep.

Masa:Thank you.

He looked over her shoulder and laughed.

Hayden:They always have something to talk about.

Masa:Tell me about it. They kicked me out and got comfortable talking to mom.

Hayden:Then let me whisk you off..come.

He held her hand and they walked outside the house. He led her to the back, as a castle came into view. She knew it was his, he always preferred his space but she had never been inside.

Hayden opened the door and led her inside still holding her waist.

Hayden:Then next week you're legally mine?thank you.

Masa turned to look at him.

Masa:For what?

Hayden:Loving me, my kids as if they were yours even before we got together and after I fucked up. You never let our differences affect our kids. I love you Mrs Smith.

He said letting go of her and locking the door.

Masa's heart skipped a beat.

Masa:We're alone?

Hayden:yes mam..come here..

No. Not that voice. She dutifully walked to him and he lifted her head up before he kissed her lips. Each second of the kiss was getting heated and he just ran his hands behind her back. He picked her up making her wrap her legs around his torso.

A whole year without sex? Without feeling her? He was going to make it count. Each and every second of it. He walked into his bedroom and he sat down with her on top of him, they didn't break the kiss as he slipped his hands underneath her dress and he felt the shudder.

Hayden finally tore his lips away and looked at her now swelling lips. He had to give her a choice and not coerce her into doing what he wants when she didn't want the same.

Hayden:Should I or should I not love?

She looked into his eyes and touched his cheek. He had been so patient and hadn't pushed her. The elders' advice rung in her head. The longer she withholds it, he might go for someone else thinking that he doesn't want to bother her with that and who's heart is going to break when it's like that?

Hayden:Baby?

She closed her eyes and kissed him back and he groaned in her mouth.

Hayden held her cheeks, turning them and she was underneath him.

He held her hands above her and laughed.

Hayden:You're beautiful you know that?

She nodded.

Hayden:Your body is for my pleasure angel?

He purred with a deep voice that sent chills down her spine.

Hayden:Hmm..I can do as I please?

She didn't like that tone. She didn't like it at all but she nodded.

Hayden:thank you angel.

He kissed her again, slowly, their tongues touching in between the tongue kiss. He let go of her hands and went for her zip. He helped her shimmy out of the dress and smiled in delight like a lion happy about his next meal. Masa

swallowed a huge lump, unable to breath while her body sent a different reaction down to her most sensitive parts. She was praying it was the sweet lover who made love to her when she was pregnant because she didn't like that glint in his eyes. Not at all.

His fingers traced her midriff and circled there. Teasing to go lower but then moving up again, she gasped, she hasn't been touched in a year.

Hayden:Beautiful look at me.(deep voice)

She did as his fingers carelessly pulled down her lace panties down her smooth yellow legs and she kept her eyes solely on him. Hayden crumpled the small piece and threw it on the mat before looking at her.

He opened her legs with one hand and chuckled seeing his favourite part of her anatomy glisten. He hasn't even started yet.

His fingers just trailed in between her thighs and stopping just when he was about to touch her. Masa released a soft moan and he looked at her. He was already controlling himself as it strained his pants.

In seconds he had pulled her to the edge of the bed and #EXPLICIT

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*80\*

## At The Smith's

Masa cried softly as she tried to walk to the bathroom in his room but failed after a few steps. She sat back down on the bed. She had duties around the home to perform but her aching body wasn't allowing it.

Masa: Fuck! (under her breath)

She paused for a moment and looked at the prick who made her immobile sleeping peacefully with his handsome naked self out on display. She breathed in and out before she tried again. Her thighs hurt so bad but she had to wake up, she didn't even sleep a wink but here she was. She wanted to suffocate him and while she was glaring at his sleeping face he opened one eye.

Hayden: Morning wifey..



She wanted to punch him but the way his morning voice caressed her, sending tingles all over her body.

Hayden:Easy woman, don't kill me in my sleep..

He said reaching for the small of her back and pushing her into his muscular body. He kissed her lips softly and she felt him go hard.

Masa:No! No! I need to be making breakfast for the people.

Hayden:Stay in bed. I'll talk to them on your behalf.

Masa:I don't want to be labelled the lazy daughter in-law.

Hayden:Can you walk?

He asked running his knuckles under her eye bags.

Hayden:And you look tired. You shouldn't even

be slaving over a stove.

Masa:I'll manage..

Hayden chuckled and got out of bed, picked her up and headed to the bathroom. He placed her on the toilet seat and ran warm water for her.

Hayden:I love you okay?

Masa:I love you.

When the tub was full he poured bath salts before he gently deposited her inside. The warm water plus salts stung her and she winced as he held her shoulders so that she doesn't get out of the water.

Hayden:Sorry angel, sit in there. I'll use the shower.

He kissed her neck softly sucking on it as she finally relaxed in the water.

Hayden:Comfortable? Do you want me to hold

your hand babe?

She laughed softly and looked up at him.

Masa:Go take a shower, I'll be okay.

He pecked her lips one more time before heading to the shower.

Hayden was the one who carried her out of the bathrubb and to the bedroom. She felt better but it still hurt.

Hayden:I still say, let me deal with them. You'll do those measly duties tomorrow or the day after that.

Masa:Babe..

Hayden raised his hands in surrender.

Hayden:Okay Mrs Smith, call on me if you want me to bail you out.

Masa:I will(smiling)

She looked at Hayden then frowned.

Hayden:I had your clothes moved here.

Masa stood up and she felt that ache between her legs and her already painful thighs but she walked through the pain making her way to the wardrobe. Hayden just raised an eyebrow. She was in pain alright.

Hayden:Your walks are funny.

Masa:I know darling..

She picked out the dress and a head wrap to wear. Hayden carefully watched her get dressed as he wore his tee and silk pants.

Hayden:Eat first before you leave the house.

Masa:It's almost seven..

Hayden:Way too early if you ask me, we should be laying in bed and chilling babe.

Masa pecked his lips.

Masa:Something we might do later?

Hayden nodded.

Hayden:Eat something then..

She smiled and slowly walked out. Hayden followed closely behind her. She opened the fridge and looked around. Nothing seemed appetizing for her. Hayden didn't want to listen to his libido right now, baby girl needed a break but damn she was good and still looked good. He moved his head in her direction as she opted for water. Trying to ease the pressure, Masa leaned against the counter and curiously looked at her husband. Her husband. She blushed and looked down.

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Rra?

He just walked to her and trapped her against the counter.

Masa drank her water looking at him from her long lashes and Hayden's hands moved to her boobs and the fact that he blatantly did so cracked her up and she kissed his lips.

Masa:As much as I'm in pain right now, I promise that I will tend to your needs later.

Hayden slipped his warm hand inside.

Hayden:Oh?

Masa:Ye-uuh..

He flicked her already hard nipple.

Hayden:I love seeing you like this...

Masa just nodded, unable to form words.

A door knock sounded on the door and Hayden applied more pressure on her areolas and she moaned softly.

Voice:Ko-ko?

Hayden:Dumelang..

Voice:Hayden?

Hayden:Ma?

The person outside paused as Masa bit down her lip.

Hayden slipped his hand inside her skirt, his hand slipping inside her panties and he felt the warm flesh. She must be sore too, that he knew. His thumb flicked on her clit and she moaned.

Voice:Hayden?

Hayden:Ma?

Voice:Is our new bride up?

Hayden:Yes. She is in the kitchen.

Voice:Masa?

Masa didn't know how she was to answer with Hayden rubbing her clit as she was about to answer he plunged his two fingers inside and she moaned a little louder.

Masa:M-aaah...m-

Voice:You're needed in ten minutes.

The aunt decided to walk away as Hayden did quick work of what he was doing. Her sweet juices filled his hand and he kissed her lips as he looked into her dazed eyes. Okay. He should probably give baby girl a break, she said she has house duties to tend to and he just wants her besides him. Nowhere else. Heck, he didn't even want any of them to taste her food and get



any ideas about his wife.

Masa opened her eyes and her husband kissed her lips again. He grinned. He could smell her come all over her and he was sure she could.

Masa:I should change first..

Hayden:You can still do that tomorrow. I'll say you're tired or something..

She just looked at him and gently pushed him away from her. She walked out and Hayden followed her. There was no way to change her mind? Her watched her change her underwear and clothes. He headed to the bathroom to wash his hands before reapplied his cologne in the bedroom.

Masa:See you for breakfast at the main house.

Hayden:Okay..

He kissed her and looked into her eyes.

Hayden:I can bail you out angel.

Masa rubbed his chest.

Masa:Bye love..

She walked out and he smiled alone, grabbing his phone.

At the main house

Masa awkwardly looked around. Not everyone was up and she had to make breakfast for everyone.

Aunt:Are you okay?

Masa:Yes..

The aunt looked at her and walked away. What did Hayden do to the poor child? She stifled a laugh.

At University Of Botswana

Tessa checked her social media as she was getting ready for her lessons.

She had wanted to unfriend Hayden but she couldn't bring herself to do that. His recent post was a reason why she should've done that.

She scrolled down the pictures he just posted and she laughed in disbelief. The woman he had told her not to worry about. Apparently they were co-parenting and now she is the Mrs

Smith? She chuckled reading his post.

'I can finally introduce Mrs Hayden Smith to the public'

Pictures of him and Masa looking so in love and she had a good guess who was Masa's baby daddy. Him. So she was pregnant when they were together? He cheated on her? Wow! Such a bastard. It happened over a year and a half ago but it hurt that he had already found a replacement or better yet the replacement had been waiting. One wrong move from her and she clawed onto him. Just because she was good with kids which weren't even her own kids.

She went to Masa's profile and there was nothing on her part about her being engaged. She shook her head. Wow!

She went off Facebook and just grabbed her school bag. She had a lesson to attend.

At The Smith's

Masa served Hayden his food before she walked out of the dining room and headed back to the kitchen. Ignoring how it seemed as if everyone knew about what happened last night. Even her mother laughed at her face just because she walked weirdly.

Uncle:Can she cook everyday? Bathong ngwetsi ya rona e itse go apaya.(our daughter in-law knows how to cook)

Hayden:She won't be cooking everyday, le batla go lapisa mosadi wame?(you want to make my wife tired?)

They laughed. He really was happy to have his wife.

In the kitchen Masa sipped on the coffee as she thought about what to make for lunch for her in-laws. She will figure it out right?

.

.

\*

\*

\*

A MONTH LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*81\*

At Masa's house

Masa sat down as Matilda walked inside her bedroom with a glass of wine.

Masa: Don't get me drunk before the wedding tlhemma..

Tily: Married woman. I'm so happy for you. You have come a long way though you still let what people say get to you but you have come a long way.

Masa: I've accepted that people talk an-well I'll live.

Tily: Drink up and drink. Spend your last night as a bachelorette.

Masa laughed flashing her hand before her face.

Masa: Technically I am married Matilda.

Tily:Whatever..

Masa:I miss my babies.

Tily:Don't be a mother, just for these coming weeks and enjoy yourself. You have been with those kids for the longest time.

Masa:I know. I know..

Her phone rang and she frowned not recognizing the number.

Masa:Hello.

There was silence for a while before the person spoke.

Voice:Wow!

Masa:Tessa?(a bit surprised)

Tessa:You were sleeping with Hayden while he was with me?

Masa:I'm sorry. Excuse you?(calmly)



Tessa:Just waiting for us to break up so that you can use the kids, really Masa?

Masa:Stop! What the hell are you talking about? Get my pretty name out of your mouth.

Tessa:And I can't believe like a fool I fell for it.

Masa:Baby girl, calm down. Drink water and study. Older men bring babies and you don't want that, just get my name out of your mouth and don't call me again okay sweetheart? Nwa metsi and rest nana.

She hung up and blocked her number. Tessa was about to speak and she dialed the number again but it didn't go through. She sounded so conceited and rude. That sweet act that she put up was fake in other words. Her instincts were right but Hayden still hasn't called her up about that offer. Maybe she could remind him. A whole month she tried to accept that it was

Masa. Someone he told her not to worry about and she is pregnant when they are together and she was a med student so she sure knew Masa had long been pregnant. Just wow.

Meanwhile Matilda looked at Masa.

Tily:Where did that cold chill come from?

Masa:People are annoying. I'm a nice person Tily but now bo 'you stole my man' really? Can't a person relax without people throwing words her way?

She said sipping her wine.

Tily:You are right..more wine?

Masa:Yes please.

At Letty's house

She saw the pictures of her grandkids on Masa's Facebook profile. The woman he was marrying was beautiful and she was young. Younger than him. That surprised her at first but then it set that maybe Regina had been a phase and her wanting to tear them apart had only made him want to prove that it wasn't a phase.

Her grandkids were beautiful and the boy looked a lot like Hayden. Like Hayden's dad. The question she asked herself was who was the little girl who looked like Hayden's fiancée? Maybe she came with the kid but she looked familiar. She sighed. She was going to need a lot of courage to face Hayden once again.

Ask for forgiveness though she can't actually

forgive Cane, he took her down. That company wasn't his to begin with and she still hated him for it. She wondered how she was going to make him pay but not leading anything to her. She brought her hands together and she couldn't come up with anything at the moment.

At the office

Luna sat in her small office as she cleared her boss's schedule for the next coming weeks and making sure to reschedule the important meetings. The last time she nearly lost her job because uninvited people walked inside his office.

Her phone rang and she quickly stood up with the planner in hand.

She walked to Hayden's office.

Luna:Sir, you called for me?

Hayden:Yes..

He went on to explain what it is he needed and she nodded.

Luna:At her house?

Hayden:Yes and call the driver to pick the kids up today. Drop them off at my place.

Luna:On it sir.

Hayden:Thank you Luna.

She stood up and walked out. People with money can just snap their fingers and everything will just appear. Lucky.

Hayden closed his filea and leaned back dialing

his wife. It felt so good to say that and to think he worked till the very last day before their wedding. She was not happy about that. Not at all.

Hayden:Mrs Smith.

Masa:Hello you...

Hayden:Are you good?

Masa:You do know you're my best friend?

Hayden frowned before a smile appeared on his lips.

Hayden:Yeah..

Masa:I love you, I love you...I love you.

Hayden:Are you drunk?

Masa:I had 1, 2..uhm is it four glasses? Tily ke four kana five?

Hayden:Oh God!

Masa:I use your shirt as a pillowcase.

Hayden:We share the same bed, you do not.

Masa:We are lovers? Or should we be lovers?

Hayden:You're drunk drunk..

Masa:I'm not..I love you Hayden..byee

She hung up and he laughed. He was the one who called first though.

Later that day

At Hayden's house

The kids walked upstairs to their room and Arielle just walked to the kitchen where she found the nanny with her little brother. The nanny frowned seeing how pale Arielle looked.

Nanny:Are you okay?

Ari:I'm cold..

The nanny boiled water in the kettle and walked out holding Arielle's hand. It was really hot outside and she said she was cold plus her hand was warm, like she was heating up.

Nanny:Okay baby..

She put the baby in his cot and led Arielle to her room where she just told her to get undercover.

Nanny:I'm calling mommy or daddy okay?

Arielle nodded as she weakly pulled the blankets close to her small chest and closed her eyes.

The nanny dialed Masa's number.

Masa:Hello..



Nanny:Arielle isn't feeling well..

Masa soberes up immediately.

Masa:Ari? I'm o-on my way..

The nanny nodded as she hung up.

At Masa's house

Masa:Call Hayden and Cane...

She handed her her phone.

Tily:What's wrong?

Masa:Ari isn't feeling well..

Tily:What if it's a common flu?

Masa:Well it's persistent as hell because we have been giving her fever medicine and she is okay then two days later it's worse then she is

like fine..

Tily:And you didn't tell me, I'm driving your drunk ass anyway..

Masa:Oh..you're a doctor. I forgot.

Tily:Fuck you, let's go..

Masa:Okay..

Masa stood up and held onto the table as the world started spinning.

Masa:Shit! You always make me drunk while you drink a single glass. Satan wena!

Tily:I'm the responsible one dumb head.

Masa:Fuck you again!

Matilda walked to the door and Masa followed trying to be balanced.

They walked to Tily's car and luckily Matilda

opened the door for her. Once she was buckled up she called Hayden.

Hayden:Baby..

Masa:Ari is sick..

Hayden:I'm on my way.

Masa:Thank you..

She hung up and dialed Cane. He had to know, he was the baby daddy.

Masa:Hello?

There was a lot of background noise and crying.

Masa:Hello?

Cane:Hey..

Masa:Arielle is sick..

Cane:Alright..

Masa paused and tried to stop her slur.

Masa:Alright?

Cane:I'm on babysitting duty this side and he just won't stop crying, you'll update me akere le wena o mmaagwe Arielle?

Masa:Mhmm..

Cane:Send her my best wishes and I'll come soon.

Masa:Ok.

She hung up and leaned back as Tily drove to Hayden's house.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

## FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*82\*

At Hayden's house

Masa chewed on some mints as she walked out of the car. First thing she did was head to the kitchen for a cold glass of water so that she can regain her marbles.

After that she slowly made her way upstairs to Ari's room. She found the toddler sleeping with a heavy blanket over her.

Nanny:She said she is cold but she is hot.

Masa:Matilda is downstairs, can you narrate that to her? She's a doctor..

The nanny made her way downstairs as Masa peeled the blankets off her baby and picked her up. She touched her forehead.

Masa:Okay sweetheart, we are taking you to the hospital..

She walked down the stairs holding Arielle and she saw Hayden.

Hayden:Is she okay?

Masa:She is heating up.

Hayden:Shit, let's go.

He got the child from Masa as they walked out. Matilda looked at Arielle and shook her head. It couldn't be. Could it? She shook her head.

Maybe tests will prove otherwise. The nanny had told her about Arielle's symptoms this past month and well she prayed to God it wasn't

what she was thinking of.

Tily:When you get to the hospital, ask them to run tests.

Masa:Do you have any idea what's wrong with her?

Tily:It might be a cold..kids get fevers every now and then.

Masa sensed a but and she could see that Matilda didn't want to talk.

Masa:Okay. Thanks..

Masa got in the backseat with Arielle and placed the child's small head on her lap.

Masa:You'll be okay baby..hmm..mommy loves you. We all love you.

Hayden reversed and sped off. He kept glancing

at the back while he drove.

Hayden:Remain calm angel..

Masa:I can't. Now I feel like a bad mother. She's been having on and off fevers and I didn't read much more into it..

Tears clouded her vision.

Masa:I feel like it's my fault, I should've..

Hayden:Hey..not the blame game now. Our princess will be fine okay? You're a great mother..

Masa:Bu-

Hayden:Don't do that to yourself babe..

He arrived at the private hospital. It brought back more memories but he pushed them down as he quickly got out of the car and went to pick



Arielle.

Masa just looked at Arielle who was now pale. Hayden saw the sadness and guilt in her eyes. There was no way he was going to convince her that it was not her fault.

At Letso's place

She answered her phone. She didn't know when and how she and Katso became friends but surprisingly they were. Good friends at it.

Katso:Hello..

Letso:Hi..

Katso:So well, we've been invited to the wedding and I was wondering if you're going?

Letso:I'd rather not. I did tell you about my history with Masa and although she says we're good, I can't help but feel guilty especially since

she is so good to me too. I mean she helped me with this business idea and you well, you were helping me too..

Katso:Please.

Letso:So you've given up?

Katso:The moment I found out she is seeing my brother's associate and well I didn't want to get on Hayden's bad side..apparently he has a not so nice side and I'm sure my brother would let me get damned by Hayden.

Letso laughed.

Letso:Your brother is not that bad.

Katso:Well you don't know him, his soft spot is Maddy and he loves his siblings in a weird way. He is just a complicated human being.

Letso:Well if you say that...

Katso:Are you coming?

Letso:Huh..

Katso:Huh...shit, urg are you attending the wedding as my date?

Letso:I'll see.

Katso:I'll be bored, at least you can keep me company Letso..

She shrugged as she closed her books. Her online course was going well and maybe, just maybe she might get to study law. As she wished but now she had to take baby steps.

Letso:I'll tell you later okay?

Katso:Can I bribe you with dinner later?

Letso:Okay boy bye..

She hung up and chuckled.

At the hospital

Hayden held a shaking Masa in his arms.

Hayden:Baby, your heart..she is going to be okay. We're probably worrying over nothing..

He rubbed her back.

Masa:They are taking so long..

Hayden:Let the doctors do their job angel..

He placed her head on his chest and rubbed her back gently. Trying to calm her.

Hayden:Baby it's okay, she is going to be fine angel..

She breathed into his chest, sobriety was her current state at the moment. Hayden's warm embrace was comforting in a way.

The pediatrician made her way to them and Masa immediately stood up. Hayden followed and held her in his arms. He needed her calm, he didn't forget that she also has a heart condition that can kill her one of these days if it gets out of control.

Doctor:Well...

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*83\*

At the hospital

Doctor:Well we ran tests and the results will be out on Tuesday since tomorrow it's the weekend and our lab technicians don't work on weekends.

Masa:So what do we do in the meantime?

Doctor:Her fever has subsided and we will keep her overnight.

Hayden:Can we see her?

Doctor:Of course.

Masa sighed nodding and the doctor walked away. Masa looked up at Hayden who held her..

Hayden:We are not getting worried angel.

Masa just nodded and let him lead to the room where Arielle was. They walked inside and Masa quickly went to hold her baby's hand.

Masa:princess hey..

Arielle looked at her with a smile and Masa kept wondering what was wrong with her daughter.

Ari: Mommy will I be here forever? Tomorrow we have to attend the wedding.

Masa looked at Hayden about that. Would it be wise for them to still have a wedding when her baby is unwell?

Ari: You get to look like a princess mommy..

Masa: Soon okay?

Ari: Tomorrow..

She sat upright and looked at Hayden who smiled at her.

Ari: So tomorrow we are going to the wedding..

Masa: Arie-

Ari: please..

Masa just rubbed her small hand.

Masa:okay baby.

She said with a sigh. Hayden smiled walking up to his step daughter.

Hayden: Hey sweetie.

Arielle smiled sweetly at him. Masa had to smile. These two had a really good relationship. Hayden was really perfect and good for her.

Masa:I love you.

Hayden:I love you more angel.

Masa rubbed her hands together as she slipped her phone out of her pocket to call her mom.

Ma Masa:Hello?

Masa:Hey mom. Ari is in the hospital an-



Ma Masa:Is she okay?

Masa:She seems better but we'll only know what's wrong with her on Tuesday

Ma Masa:Oh. Okay.

Masa:I don't know if the wedding will go on..

Ma Masa:Just try to check with the doctor if it's okay for her to be discharged tomorrow and you'll deal with whether the wedding should go on or not from there.

Masa:You're right.

Ma Masa:I'm always right. Bye and tell Arielle that I love her.

Masa chuckled as she hung up.

Hayden rubbed Arielle's cheek as she closed her eyes to sleep again.

Hayden:I don't know what they gave her but she

seems to be fine..

Masa:Besides we are not in any rush for the wedding..

Hayden:You wanted a sunset one..

Masa:Sunsets are beautiful, I would've preferred it on the beach but the venue we have will do..I love you.

Hayden:I love you more, come here..

She walked to him and sat on his lap as he held Ari's small hand.

Masa:She doesn't hate hospitals as much as I do..

Hayden:You didn't want to be here when you gave birth but you had to be here..

Masa:As a child I always ended up here because of my heart problem almost every week. It was torture bur I learnt to control it in

my teenage years and into early adulthood.

Hayden:Till I messed up and you ended up here again.

Masa:We're past that. Don't beat yourself over it.

Hayden:I can't help but feel guilty that I stressed you to the point of losing Hudson's twin. I'm so sorry angel..

Masa:we moved from that.

He sighed.

Hayden:I know but...

Masa:No buts. Babe?

Hayden:Yeah..

Masa:The kids are almost eight now, don't you think it's time you show them their mother's tombstone..

Hayden tensed and Masa felt it. She turned to look at him.

Masa:I know it was hard telling them about Regie, may her soul rest in peace but they have to know. I'm sure in their small inquisitive minds they are wondering but they won't voice it out.

Hayden:They are still young.

Masa:But they can know and them being young is an advantage because they won't dwell too much on it when they are older..H

Hayden:I'll think about it.

Masa:If you want me to talk with them with you..

Hayden:I'll think about it..

Masa:Okay..

Hayden:Does Cane know Arie is in hospital?

Masa:he is busy but he knows.

Hayden:Okay..

He rubbed her thigh and she looked at him.

Masa:O bona wena?

Hayden:Angel a whole week? O utlwana le go ntima kuku akere?

Masa laughed and hit his shoulder.

Masa:We have a honeymoon to prepare for kante?

Hayden:and you don't even know where we are going?

Masa:Tell me, tell me..

Hayden:I'll hit it?

Masa:Tshek..

Hayden shrugged.

Hayden:It's a give and take wifey..

Masa:I want to walk the following day, thank you very much..

Hayden:And you also have to serve your husband Mrs Smith.

Masa:Patience babe..

Hayden:You're my second chance at happiness.  
I thought I lost that forever.

Masa:I'll always be there for you for as long as I  
exist on this earth.

Hayden glanced over at Arielle who was  
peacefully sleeping.

Hayden:There's a few things I haven't told you.

Masa:Oh..

Hayden:It's a lot, I'll tell you when we're not in  
hospital. Sleep.

Masa:I'm not sleepy.

Hayden:You were half drunk earlier on, sleep.

Masa:You aren't sleeping?

Hayden:I will..

Masa just leaned on him, feeling his steady

heart. She closed her eyes.

An hour later she was fast asleep and Hayden picked her up gently placing her on the bed with Arielle. He'll be back in an hour or so...

He kissed their foreheads and walked out. His phone rang and he answered it.

Hayden:Hello?

Tessa:Have you thought about my offer?

.

.

\*

\*

\*

Merry Christmas everybody

## FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*84\*

At the hospital

Hayden chuckled. He didn't see Tessa as the being obsessed and desperate type.

Hayden:Theresa I'm not interested. How many times should I say this?

Tessa kept quiet.

Tessa:Is it Masa who poisoned you against me? I knew she told you, she has been waiting for our relationship to go sour before she sunk her claws into you.

Hayden:Kid, careful how you speak about my wife. Ga go pale sepe gore ke go latele ke go



beletsa Masa.

Tessa:Okay. I'm sorry..

Hayden:Tessa?

Her heart skipped a beat. He said her name softly like he used to say it.

Hayden:I moved on. Who I moved on with is none of your business anymore. I don't have to explain myself as to why I married Masa. Move on too, I'm not the one for you and even though you have the heart of the woman I still love dearly, you are not her and even if you behaved like her, it would hurt like hell because she herself is not here..

Tessa kept quiet.

Hayden:Stop calling me and move on. Do therapy again, don't hurt yourself like this.

You're still young, you should be out there exploring life and not be hung up on a family man like me. I lived and(chuckled)my wife has lived her teenage years and we are now content with each other, don't draw yourself back like this. That second wife nonsense, erase it. Meet college boys, party and live your life to the fullest Tessa.

Tessa:Okay.

Hayden:Eventually the love you feel for me will evaporate and you'll look back and laugh. Have a good life Theresa. Bye.

He hung up and Tessa sighed. She picked her diary and pen. She stared at the blank pages thoughtfully. She will move though. Maybe she should apologise to Masa again. She should just leave it.

Tessa:Get yourself together. Get that degree

whilst enjoying your life.

She paged back and went through her life goals and list of priorities. She exhaled. She should not tie herself to a man with kids because she herself hates kids. Maybe she dodged a bullet there but there was that part of her that's jealous. Jealous of Masa who seemed to glow like no one's business. She knows how good his dick is, it has been in her and done pleasurable things. The way he smiled lazily after a hot session and would still want more. He was insatiable and she was jealous. That Masa got that all to herself, Masa was short and kid like and Tessa herself was taller than her. How she handled that insatiable appetite of his..

She sighed as she put on headsets and laid on the bed playing Labrinth's Jealous.

Tessa:"I wished you the best of, all this world  
could give

And I told you, when you left me there is nothing  
to forgive

But I always thought you'd come back, tell me  
all you found was..

Heartbreak and misery

It's hard for me to say, I'm jealous of the way  
you're happy without me"

A lone tear dropped down her cheek. She will be  
alright. She tried and she had hit brick walls in  
the process. There would be no Hayden and  
Tessa anymore, that scenario will stop living  
rent free in her mind.

At Hayden's house

He unlocked the door and made his way upstairs to the kids' rooms. They were quietly sleeping and he smiled. Being a father is probably one of the best things that has happened to him. When he got to Hudson's room, he walked to the crib and found him awake. He just lifted his hands to his father and he chuckled.

Hayden:Hey little man you should be asleep.

Hudson:pa-pa..

Hayden:Yes buddy..let's go since you're awake..

He walked out of the room carrying him down the stairs to the kitchen.

Hayden:What would you like as a late night snack?

The eleven month old boy looked at his father

and Hayden shook his head. How these boys looked like him was still somehow unbelievable. He touched his soft hair and he smiled revealing his two baby teeth. He had to applaud his wife for raising all his kids, they all turned out good. He went through what was in the fridge and looked at the baby on his hip whose eyes were curiously looking at the contents in the fridge.

Hayden: Mommy doesn't let you see what's in the fridge does she? I understand buddy, she is also denying me nice things too.

He nodded as if he understood.

After Hayden placed Hudson in his chair he picked what they would have as a late night snack.

Hayden: And a movie too? Your mom would kill me saying that you should sleep and I'm

disturbing your sleeping pattern.

Hudson just grinned and Hayden took that as a yes.

Hayden:I hope your siblings don't snitch on us little guy..

He went to place the tray on the table before coming back for Hudson and he laid down on the couch placing him on his chest.

Hayden:Tshwara remote mona, ga ba nke ba go e neela akere..(hold this remote, they never give it to you)

Hudson held the remote in his small hands and just pressed random buttons.

Hayden pressed a particular button again scrolling through the channels.

Hayden was about to change when Hudson looked at him with tears in his eyes.

Hayden:This is okay? Let's watch then buddy..

Hudson cuddled into his father as he sucked on the grape watching tv.

The twins heard sounds downstairs. They yawned and rubbed their eyes each in their rooms. Avery wore her slippers and walked out. She bumped into Smith Jr.

Avery:Morning or whatever.

Smith Jr:I'll take the morning..

Avery:Is dad, mom and Ari home?

Smith Jr shrugged and they both walked downstairs finding their dad on the couch with Hudson.

Hayden looked at them in their pyjamas.

Hayden:Aren't you guys supposed to be in bed?

Smith Jr:Where is mom and Ari?



Hayden: Still at the hospital, they'll be okay.

Avery: You're going back?

Hayden: Yes..

They sat on the carpet and looked at the tv.

Avery: Hud selected the movie?

Hayden nodded.

Smith Jr: That's why we never give a baby the remote..

Hayden: He didn't pick it for you guys.. let him be..

Hudson concentrated on the tv and his siblings just sat there watching it since there was no way they were going to sleep now. Hudson giggled as he chewed on the banana slice now..

His siblings shook their heads with a smile.

An hour later, Hudson was fast asleep on his chest and he breathed in a sigh of relief.

Hayden:Finally..

The twins were still wide awake and Avery walked back to the lounge with a bowl of icecream.

Hayden:If your mom finds ou-

Avery:Who's gonna tell her?

They looked among themselves.

Avery:she's never gonna know..Another movie daddy?

Hayden:Suure..

Smith Jr:Great..

They watched another movie for the next hour and a half before he himself felt sleepy.

Hayden:Okay, I think we should sleep, the we-  
(yawning)

He got up holding Hudson and switched off the

tv.

Hayden:Guys.

Smith Jr:O-okay...

They stood up and Hayden just walked to his room and the kids followed him to the room.

The following morning

Hayden opened his eyes and saw all three kids fast asleep. They were terrible sleepers. All four of the kids were and Masa knew it very well. He moved Hudson's hands from his face and Smith Jr's leg from his neck, kid could've choked him in his sleep. He didn't like the fact that Avery's legs were on his stomach. He swore they wanted to kill him.

He didn't want to wake any of them up but he had to go back to the hospital now. He hoped they will leave his room peacefully. Did he have time to even take a shower?

He just changed the shirt and wore a tee instead.

At the hospital

Masa woke up and looked at Arielle. She placed her hand on her baby face and her temperature seemed normal now.

The door opened and Hayden walked in.

He kissed her cheek and rubbed sleeping Arielle's cheek.

Hayden:I brought a change of clothes.

Masa:Thank you babe..

The doctor walked in and she greeted the couple before she checked Arielle.

Doctor:She is okay, we can discharge her in an hour. The lab results will be out by Tuesday.

Masa:Oh, okay. Thank you.

Doctor:I'll bring the discharge forms.

Masa nodded and the doctor walked out.

Hayden:You can change now..

An hour later the three of them walked out of the hospital and Masa looked at Hayden.

Masa:Later we're doing it?

Hayden:Are you nervous?

Masa:Yes.

Hayden rubbed her hand as Arielle just watched them. She was feeling better plus she didn't want to abandon her flower girl duties.

Masa:You good baby? Do you want to sleep when we get home? What do you want to eat?

Arielle:I'll sleep and eat(softly)

Masa:Okay sweetie. We love you.

Arielle:I love you..

Masa smiled and looked back at Hayden.

Hayden:I love you more..

Masa:Save the vows for later my love..

They arrived at Masa's place and well they found a lot of cars.

Masa:As the preparation process begins. My mom will come pick the kids. Don't call me..

Hayden:I love you too woman.

Masa stepped out of his car and opened the door for Arielle. They waved Hayden off and walked to the house.

Ma Masa:Is she okay?

Masa:For now, we're out of the woods but we'll get the results on Tuesday.

Ma Masa:Okay. You get ready, soak yourself in the bathtub. The makeup artist will be here later. Your dress is in the room. The kids' attire is also in their rooms. Uhm for your changing attire, at the lustrous venue you guys rented, you can change there. The hairdresser will be here in two hours, gatwe your husband hired her..

Masa:You have everything figured out.

Ma Masa smiled as she led Arielle away.

Masa grinned as she walked to her room. She found the water ready and steamy.

She got rid of the clothes and slipped inside.

Masa:Relax baby girl.

After what seemed like an hour she heard Avery's voice. All the kids were here alright. She got out of the water and walked to the wardrobe, her eyes landed on a black lacy piece she has never worn ever. She wore it and smiled looking at her reflection in the mirror. She wore her black heels and snapped a few pictures. She did look sexy in lingerie, maybe she should wear it underneath the wedding dress. Something white and sinful?

She removed the piece and wore her gown. She



sat on the bed and sent Hayden a text before she sent a picture. Thirst trap alright.

Meanwhile Hayden sat on the bed. His phone beeped and he picked it up. A message from Masa.

Baby wife: Even though, I'm wifey you can hit it like a sidechick.

His eyes landed on the picture.

Hayden:Masa fuck you! Don't do this to me

Baby wife:Can you fuck me till morning?

Hayden:I can come right now and take that off you with my teeth..

Baby wife:Okay bye.

Hayden:You see this kind of teasing should be illegal, who's going to take care of my boner?

Baby wife:You're a big boy.

Hayden looked at the tent in his pants and groaned.

Hayden video called her and she answered, she looked too innocent for her own good.

Masa:Hey babe, are you okay? I'm so nervous and the hairstylist isn't he-

Hayden:Can you do me a favour?

Masa raised an eyebrow.

Masa:Okay.

Hayden:Head to the bathroom for me..

Masa looked at him before she laughed.

Masa:Oh my God! See you at the alter babe..

She hung up and burst out laughing some more. Meanwhile a flustered Hayden looked at her sexy picture and groaned. He massaged his dick looking at it.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*85\*

At Hayden's house

Hayden looked in the mirror at the fresh hair cut. He rubbed his chin as he fixed his suit. On this very important day Cane was his best man. He wasn't a man of many friends and so it was easy to know that there won't be a lot of bridesmaids and groomsmen. They both didn't

have a lot of friends and they sure made up for it by being each other's bestfriend.

He smiled as he sprayed his cologne. He was honestly nervous. She was going to walk down the aisle. Towards him. Another blessing. The mother of his kids, his bestfriend. He rubbed his chest. A part of him felt like he didn't deserve such an angel.

The door opened and Cane walked inside. They had talked about Ari and he promised to keep him updated. They understood he also has another child to take care of.

Cane:You're ready?

Hayden:Can one ever be ready for such?

Cane:You two are already legally married.

Hayden:I know, just that...it is surreal. Like a

dream I might wake up from..

Cane held his shoulder as Hayden looked at the mirror again.

Cane:She is not going anywhere...should we go wait for your bride?

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:I think it's time.

At the wedding venue

The guests stopped as they took in the whole design. Everything seemed delicate and soft, shade of lilac and white played around. The sun was setting leaving hues of oranges and pinks making it all seem ethereal.

Letso looked around as Katso held her hand.

Letso:The simplicity in this is beautiful..

Katso:Simple yet not simple again..

They looked around once more and they spotted the band, far from the people and Letso nodded. They decided on a live band instead of a dj and an evening wedding or was it a night wedding? Whichever one might be, it was beautiful..

Katso led them to their designated seats and they sat down waiting as she looked up ahead at the alter. A white carpet instead of a red one. The alter was a tapestry of pink roses and white roses with a touch of beautiful daisies for variety.

The canopy which was deemed the alter

seemed so private and sacred. Like it was just for the two and the priest. The priest stood by the alter in his uniform and he smiled at the guests. Everything was delicately planned to be simple yet speak volumes. It felt like a soft fairytale wedding as white bows adorned the chairs, the guests themselves were dressed to kill and one might even assume they wanted to outshine the bride who hasn't arrived yet. Even the groom was not here yet. Letso sighed wistfully. Maybe one day she might get to experience true love. She was happy for Masa and Letso still felt apologetic for what she did to Masa. Masa has never done her wrong or dirty and maybe God saw her pure heart. White as the roses that adorned the outdoor venue.

Katso glanced at her side.

Katso:Do you need a jacket?

She shook her head as a delicate wind blew past and the scents of the roses got more

stronger. Letso looked at the sunset and she smiled. This was going to be a nice wedding.

At Masa's house

Masa blinked several times trying not to cry after her makeup was done. Her mother bent down to fix her heels.

Ma Masa:You are beautiful. Remember that time when you said you wanted to be a princess when you were six?

Masa nodded.

Ma Masa:You are one..

She carefully picked the golden tiara placing it carefully on Masa's head.

Ma Masa:Beautiful.



She delicately fixed the flower embroidered cape veil and Masa held back tears.

Mass:I'm not dreaming?

Ma Masa:Not at all..

The bodice of the dress accentuated her hips before the dress started to be loose from there, making it the perfect dress. The length was perfect. She wasn't perfect but her wedding day was. Sje wasn't going to wear the veil that covered her eyes because the history behind that wasn't who she was or what her past showed.

Masa turned to look at her reflection once more. She looked so regal and princess like, the tiara made everything perfect.

Ma Masa:We should get going, your husband is probably waiting for you at the alter. Your dad is also waiting. He can't contain his excitement.

Masa:I'm nervous. Is this me? The teenager who at one point was bound to fail at everything in life?

Ma Masa:God has plans for each one of us, don't ruin the makeups sweetness. Your driver and escort are waiting outside. Tilly long left with the kids. No one has seen you in this except me and you are perfect angel.

Masa:mama I'm far from being an angel..

Ma Masa:You are mine. I love you okay?

They shared a hug that lasted for more than a minute. When Masa broke the hug, her mother kissed her cheek softly before walking away.

The bride turned and she touched the mirror looking at her engagement ring.

Masa:Lord thank you!

That was all she said before she walked to the lounge and found the driver and a lady escort waiting for her. The lady escort helped hold her dress and veil as they led her to the car. She thanked them as she got inside and the driver closed the door.

Masa placed her hands in her lap as they became clammy with nervousness kicking in.

The car started moving and she leaned back, already her vows had left her head. She thought that she had memorized the vows she had written down but her mind was already a mess...

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*86\*

At the wedding venue

The soft melody started playing minutes after the important guests sat down. The family was present for this huge milestone in their children's lives. They all knew that the step the two took was not going to be an easy one. The important business associates graced the

wedding with their presence and Hayden smiled as Reba kept a serious face listening to his babbling wife. They were polar opposites but worked like a well oiled machine.

He couldn't wait to write his own love story with the woman who was going to walk down the aisle. Cane walked first before Hayden followed. Some of the ladies kept their eyes glued onto him, he was so simple but somehow he was attractive. Pity he was getting married. Kesa shifted in her seat as she watched him walk down the aisle. How Masa had all of that still baffled her.

The guests kept their eyes on the groom who unbuttoned his suit jacket. Hayden's uncles chuckled. He was not the conventional type and they had already gotten used to that. Hayden

talked with Cane as they waited for the lady of the evening to show up. She was the going to be the centre of attention as soon as she showed up.

Hayden shifted his feet waiting for his bride.

Masa arrived and her father had met her right at the entrance. He smiled.

Ra Masa:You've grown so much..

Masa:Dad...

Ra Masa:You're beautiful.

Masa:Thank you dad...

She held her father's hand and leaned against him.

Masa:Thank you dad..I love you.

Ra Masa just held her.

Meanwhile the band started playing Dan+Shay's Speechless. Hayden stood up right as his baby girl started making her way towards the alter throwing pink rose petals and people aawwed seeing Avery. Avery smiled at her father as she sat in the front.

Arielle followed as she threw white rose petals. She smiled looking at Hayden and her dad and went to sit next to Avery.

Tily as the best lady walked down the aisle and that's when people knew the that the bride was on her way. Hayden cleared his throat as the song stopped. The band started playing a soft melody as they waited for the bride to show up.

Masa nervously held her dad's hand as they walked to the alter.

Masa:Dad my walks are fine?

Ra Masa:You are angel.

Masa could hear the soft melody as they approached the alter. She bowed her crowned head as soon as she could see the white carpet. She didn't know how Hayden was going to react to seeing her. People gasped as Masa gracefully walked down the alter holding her father's hand. She still didn't want to lift her head.

They reached the end of the alter and her father handed her over to Hayden. Hayden wanted her to look at him but at the moment he couldn't



find the perfect words. A queen in his kingdom?  
Definitely.

Masa finally lifted her head and literally knocked the breath out of his lungs. Her eyes glazed with unshed tears as they looked into each other's eyes. It was so silent but they could hear it in the silence that they were in love, words were not needed as the sun was finally going to rest, giving reign to night. The stars that had started to fill the sky.

Hayden held her small hands tightly in his still lookkng into her eyes. When he says he doesn't deserve her, he means exactly this. She was the angel he thought he shouldn't dare taint. Today she was every inch an angel and princess. His heart raced as the words jumbled in his mouth.

Priest: We are gathered here to witness the union of Masa Sunday and Hayden Smith. If anyone objects, please do say it or forever hold your peace.

A bout of silence passed.

Priest: Since there are no objections we can proceed.

As the priest said that, the ring bearer being Smith Jr walked down the aisle holding the rings on a white cushion. Masa smiled as the boy presented them with the rings. What a shame her youngest was still young but she could spot him with her mother.

Masa mouthed a thank you at Smith Jr as she picked the ring and Hayden did the same. They faced each other and Masa couldn't maintain that perfect eye contact as she looked down.

Her heart skipped several beats. Here she was. Holding the hands of the man she loved. She was going to say I Do and be tied down to him for as long as life permits.

Priest:It would be such a boring wedding if they didn't have their own vows that make everyone bawl their eyes out..so over to you Mr Smith.

The crowd chuckled but the chuckles soon died out as Hayden cleared his throat. Too much emotion and he was sure he couldn't remember a single vow he had written down.

Hayden:Look at me(softly)

Masa looked at him and Hayden smiled, the smile reaching his eyes that crinkled at the corners.

Silence now filled the area and their love was palpable in the silence, even with no words exchanged they felt it and if that wasn't a strong connection they didn't know what was.

Hayden squeezed her hand and paused before he spoke with a strange look on his face.

Hayden:You're my best friend..

Masa smiled tearfully still holding onto his large hands, she knew what it was, he is in love.

Hayden:I-I, this little Mrs here is part of the reason why I'm still sane, uhm we met years ago under some really questionable terms..

Masa chuckled looking at the ground.

Hayden:I didn't know she would turn out to be my second shot at love. She selflessly gave more of herself to raise my kids..we became best friends before we were even lovers. I can't exactly put my feelings into words but uttering I love you would never be enough. I'm not the

best person there but she loves me.

Wholeheartedly, purely. She is amazing, an angel. I always tell her that and she never believes me..

He held her chin looking into her eyes. She didn't want to cry.

Hayden:She doesn't know how much she means to me, she is a necessity I can't live without. There is no me without you, I swear on my last breath that I will live trying to show you what love really is, lift you high, support you through each and everything. Allow me to redefine you..You are the Sunshine in my storm, this broken heart started beating for you again so give me the chance to thoroughly love you in the best way I know how.

In the crowd some people shook their heads. Wow. Knowing Hayden's history and the fact

that he found someone whom gave him a shot at love once again was beautiful. It was a beautiful sight to see.

Tears rolled down Masa's eyes as she blinked looking at the stars in the dark sky.

Hayden used his thumb to wipe her tears away.

Hayden:I can't promise you forever and always but I can promise you that I will be right here for you, wherever life takes us, I will come running when you call my name. I will be here for you, at the end of the day I will be your biggest cheerleader as you're already mine. I promise that as long as you wear this ring that symbolizes my love, I will stand by you, will weather every storm with you my pocketful of sunshine. Masa I don-

His words choked him as he looked at Masa

who was silently crying looking at him.

Hayden:I don't know how to tell you that I love you, I love you so damn much that the thought of not having you hurts and leaves a hollow ache in my chest. Take this ring as a promise of my love to you, know that I love you to the moon and Saturn.

He held her hand and slid the ring on her finger with Masa already crying.

He used his hands to wipe her tears.

Masa:uhm..oh God!(crying)

Hayden just looked at the priest before he pulled his crying bride into his embrace.

Hauden:angel breath...

Masa:Uhm..

She cried into his chest as he rubbed circles on her back. The guests dabbed their eyes a bit as they looked at the couple at the alter.

Hayden:You're good sweetheart?

She nodded as he broke the warm embrace and held her hands.

Masa:I've loved you in secret. I didn't know it had been love the first time I saw you but at that time I had not yet matured into the woman I am. In my small mind, I was like I don't deserve him. He deserves a person who hasn't made mistakes because he has been through a lot and I can't give him what he needs. But he proved me wrong, he let me go only to come back to what he felt he needed. As much as you're hurt, if the person you love is happy without you then let them be happy without you even if it kills you inside.

Hayden held he cheek. He was tempted to kiss



her then and there. He gave her a look, meant just for her.

Masa:He taught me how to love him with the love he gives me. For once I let go of the fears and ghosts a single step, not much but it meant a lot.

Hayden kissed her hand.

Masa:I can't put my feelings into the perfect words but I'm really trying. He loves me, he loves me, why the hell does he love when he could have anyone else? That's what always goes through my mind, how can he love me when I can't bring myself to love me for me..But that's when you know that it's love, he showed me how to love myself and I can proudly say the best part of me is you babe. I love you Hayden Smith. And yes, I want your bad days and good days. I will weather the storm with you, I thank the Lord that we did meet though we didn't know that the road will lead us here. I can say

you've enthralled me in your spiral of love and passion. Everyday with you feels like the first time, every night I lay in your arms it feels like a dream because you love me and I've never been loved the way that you love me. Baby you see the sky, this night is sparkling and I don't think I'll ever forget this moment, when we said our i dos under the stars in this beautiful night.

Hayden shuffled his feet. He didn't want to cry. He looked at her glistening eyes, as the moon and the fairy lights illuminated her perfect face, she smiled with tears in her eyes.

Masa:Baby so say yes, I'll give you everything. I will be all yours tonight. I promise to be always be right by your side. I know you're not okay, I promise I'll fix you with my love for as long as you wear the ring I'm about to slip on your finger. I'll be your wife wholeheartedly and I will always be there, run to you when it gets tough,

be your safe space. You'll be safe in my arms love, never will I judge you because I'm your reflection. I'll take your pain along with mine and give it some kind of meaning. For as long as we are married, or till the end of time or till God permits I will be your number 1 fan. I love you and words aren't enough to prove my love to you my love.

She held his hand and slipped the ring on his finger.

Masa:With this ring, I promise to be your wife and the mother of your children. To be your homemaked, give you peace and be your safe space. I promise to love you with every fibre of my being for as long as we are in this marriage together.

She looked up into his eyes.

The priest dabbed his eyes before he cleared his throat.

Priest:After thi-these vows..wow..I pronounce you as husband and wife. You may kiss the bride.

Hayden held the back of her head gently as his tongue slid in smoothly, french kissing her despite the tears. He broke the kiss as their foreheads touched.

Hayden:I love you angel.

Masa:I-I love you too..

Hayden tipped her chin upwards and ravished her lips again in a much slower kiss. Masa closed her eyes as every emotion they have felt the last few hours was shared in that searing kiss. Hayden broke the kiss and bit her lower lip.

Hayden:You're addictive angel.

Masa smiled.

Priest:I now present Mr and Mrs Smith ladies and gentlemen.

The guests stood up and clapped their hands as hard as they can when Hayden caught Masa by surprise and lifted her.

Masa:oh!

This was beautiful. It really was beautiful and they were glad they were here for it.

Hayden carried Masa along the alter as she snuggled into his shoulder.

Hayden:Mrs Hayden?

She blushed and didn't look at him.

Hayden:We have approximately an hour to get

ready for our wedding reception, we can quickly pass time..

Masa blushed. This man though.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*87\*

At the venue

Hayden carried his wife into the bedroom. He closed the door and locked it as he sat down

with her still in his arms.

Hayden:You're beautiful..

Masa:And we had to share a room to change clothes.

Hayden:As it should be..

His sturdy hands removed the cape and crown before he rubbed her bare shoulders.

He turned her as he started to untie the bodice.

Hayden:Traditionally this was for the man to rake his time to ravish his bride, dealing with the many strings on the dress and you made it your mission to have a dress like that..(softly)

He kised her neck sucking on it before he went to undoing the many ties.

Hayden:I'm a very patient man Sunshine.

Masa's breathing slowed down as his voice caressed her.

Hayden:It feels like unwrapping a gift, something precious that you want to savour the moment and not rush the process..

He continued with what he was doing till he was done and the bodice went down. He stood up with her and slowly pulled the dress down taking in her with her white lingerie. He has never really seen her in lingerie in person and it was a sight to behold.

Hayden:Step out of the dress angel.

She did as he said and he rubbed her cheek.

Hayden:A good husband would wait till the night is over and done with but we both know I'm not a good husband right?(smirking)



Hayden held the back of her neck as he french kissed her, tasting her, his blood rushing through his veins and of course his big boy was already ready for action.

Masa kissed him back as she held his cheek. Hayden broke the kiss and breathed into her neck.

Hayden:You smell nice too angel. I think they will have to wait for the bride and groom, we can take all the time we need..(kissing her jawline)

He paused and smiled. Masa started to unbutton his shirt and he laughed.

Hayden:You see why I married you, let's go..

He said as he hugged her from behind walking to the bathroom.

Hayden:I love you woman!

Masa:I love you too but don't render my ability to walk..

Hayden:We'll see baby girl.

Masa turned to look at him and he laughed as he got rid of his clothes. Masa took in him, he was wholesome alright.

Hayden:Like what you see?

Masa shrugged nonchalantly and he just picked her up getting in the shower with her. He opened the water and Masa gasped laughing as it wet her hair and well the lingerie she was wearing.

Masa:oh my God! Hayden! My hair!!

Hayden:I'll help you with it..

He said as he used his teeth to take off the lingerie that clung to her wet body.

Hayden:I never go back on my promises.

Masa shuddered as his teeth scrapped against her skin. Hayden crouched before her as his warm breath hit her thighs. He still used his teeth to take the thong off and he grinned as she stepped out of it.

Still crouching his hands gripped her thighs as he started to lick her inner thighs.

Masa:uh..

Hayden:We don't have to rush..we still have time..

He stood upright and grabbed her neck pulling her in for a kiss and he kept his knee between her legs as he #EXPLICIT

At the reception

The guest looked at their watches. The bride and groom were 30 minutes late already but they were patient.

Meanwhile in the bedroom Hayden sucked on Masa's neck as she tried to style her hair.

Masa:You promised to do my hair..

Hayden:I hair dryed it babe, ga ke tle go tshwengwa nna..

Masa shook her head as he moved from her and she looked at her neck in the mirror. Pink, very very pink with very visible lovebites.

Hayden:Well I'm done and waiting for you.

Masa just brushed the Brazilian weave back, styling the edges only. She wasn't going to style it well under pressure.

She stood up and wore her shoes.

Hayden:Heels?

Masa:Trust me dear husband.

He raised his hands as he slipped his hands in his black dress pants, the shirt collar obviously matched her dress. Funny thing they were wearing traditional clothes with her dungaree knee length dress.

Hayden:Babe?

Masa:Mmh?

Hayden:Leave the heels tlhemma o tlo re golega.

He just opened the box that Masa had been ignoring.

Masa:Matching sneakers?

Hayden:Wear those and I think they match the outfit.

Masa:Okay fine..

She sat down and got rid of the heels wearing the sneakers he got for her. She stood up and twirled for him.

Hayden:Now we can go.

He took her hand as they walked out.

Minutes later they arrived and the guests cheered. They took their time alright.

Mc:Finally. The people we've been waiting for have arrived..

Masa sat next to Tilly who finally gave out a sigh of relief.

Tily:About time.

Masa:I'm here and that's all that matters.

Mc:We can start our celebration for the night and ladies and gentlemen know that the night is still young.

From thereon they started with speeches from Tily, Cane, Masa's parents and of course they gave the kids a chance to say their piece before their bedtime. The people cooed as they looked at their four children. Too cute and just perfect.

Masa kissed Hudson cheek who didn't seem bothered that he hasn't been in his mother's arms for more than half the day.

Hayden:Okay the kids are gone..

Mc:Before the dance floor is open and the cake is cut can we have a speech from our couple?

Masa:Uhm..

Everyone chanted "Speech! Speech! Speech!"  
Till the couple gave in.

Masa:It's going to be brief as possible...

Hayden looked at Masa.

Masa:He is not as shy and quiet as he looks.

Hayden:Yoh! Yoh!(shaking his head)

Masa:Okay thank you guys for attending our wedding, showing up for our reception and we were pretty late, the blame is on him though, I'm innocent on that part.

They chuckled, of course everyone noticed the hickeys on her neck. Hayden rubbed his chin keeping one hand around her waist.

Masa:Tlherra bua sengwe mme..

She faced the crowd as she smiled and went on



talking earning laughs here and there.

She faced her husband who just kept his hand around her waist.

Masa:Babe?

She stood on her tip toes as he bent down for her to whisper in his ear. A sly smile graced his lips, revealing his perfect teeth. He straightened up and faced the crowd.

Hayden:Well thank you guys and this tiny human being has said it all.

His deep voice reverberated in the room with it being amplified by the mic.

They walked away from the stage.

Masa:Tily the dj is ready? Tsa di cake re tla di bona bazakes..groove e botlhokwa..

Matilda just gave her a thumbs up.

The DJ played Shania Twain's From This Moment On. Masa and Hayden held hands as they made their way to the dancefloor and he placed his hands on her waist as she placed her head on his chest. She softly breathed against him as they slow danced to the song that opened the dancefloor. Masa looked at Hayden mouthing the words of the song as they made eye contact.

Masa:"You're the reason I believe in love and you're the answer to my prayers from up above"

She rested her head on his chest as they danced till the song ended. Hayden kissed her lips softly once the song ended.

Hayden:You want to dance?

Masa:With a glass of wine in my hands.

Hayden:Just one glass.

Masa:Just one, dance with me..

Hayden:I'll sit down..

Masa:You are going to dance motho wa Modimo. Ka mme(crossing her fingers)

Hayden laughed as he went to pour wine for her, he handed her the glass before he sat down.

Masa:The floor is open and dj can we switch the language?

The DJ played the Thandolwethu song by Mafikizolo and Loapi looked at Dan.

Loapi:You remember? This song brings back a lot of memoriesNna Mr I'm going to dance.

Dan:I knew it..

Loapi:Must, must..

Meanwhile Maduo looked at Reba.

Reba:Fine Mrs Kgosi. Fine!

She kissed him on the cheek as she stood up.

Maddy:That's why I love you sir..

He shook his head..

Masa got down on the floor dancing holding her wine glass as the rest of the ladies joined her. She was dancing looking at her husband who grinned. As long as she was happy.

When the song finally ended the ladies looked at each other again.

Masa:Okay that was hella nice.

Madou:And I didn't manage to say congratulations. You two are cute together.

Masa pushed her hair back with a smile.

Masa:Thank you so much.

Loapi:Congrats, we are still dancing?

Masa:Yeah..

Matilda and some of the gents joined the dance floor as the dj played Dj Obza's MangDakiwe...

Masa placed her wineglass down..

Tily:Okay, your song!!(hyping her up)

Masa:Ngwanaka!!

Masa did her moves, flexing her flexibility on top. A few minutes into the song, everyone was hyping her up.

She wasn't even aware that the small circle they had made parted and she gasped seeing Hayden.

Masa:Gosh! Okay baby daddy a reye koo Mr..

Hayden:I can't believe I'm doing this..(shaking his head)

Masa:Okay let's go..

They danced in one accord as everyone gasped. Even Cane was surprised. Hayden could dance? Better yet, they danced together.

Ma Masa:I'm shooketh..

Uncle:Same. Same..

Masa:"I'm sure if I did you wrong..."

They danced and when the song ended he held her waist.

Masa:You danced in a public space. Wena Mr CEO!(laughing)

Hayden:Shut up

Masa:Baby the night is still young, as we press play to another song.

She escaped his grasp as she danced to another song. She sat down shortly after that one as some people got down on the dancefloor.

Masa:A short break..As I eat something before we dance more, you are joining me again.

They talked, Masa doing most of the talking as Hayden listened to her rambling about God knows what. After half an hour when she felt like she was full she stood up as the Dj played another song..

Masa:Baby this one please!

Hayden:Wa lapisa...

The song got more than 80% of the people on their feet as they switched to disco lights, some holding their beer bottles and wine glasses. Obviously the night was still young as Hayden stood up and joined Masa, who danced along, slowly..waiting for the beat change so that she can move her hips. The dj increased the volume of Mshayi&Mr Thela's iParty soundtrack..

Masa:I'm enjoying this...

When the beat finally dropped she did that dance move where she moved her hips and she was smiling. Hayden chuckled as his wife did her thing, at this point everyone was doing their own thing..



When it ended people exhaled and Masa leaned into Hayden's chest.

Masa:The last part, I think everyone forgot about the cake e bile.

Hayden:Which is?

Masa:The fireworks babe.

Hayden:You enjoyed your wedding day?

Masa:Our! Yes I enjoyed our wedding day. A whole lot. This is one memory that I will always cherish. Forever and ever.

Hayden kissed her forehead as Mass called the MC over to tell her that they still needed to see and shoot the fireworks.

Hayden:I love you Mrs Smith.

Masa:I love you too Mr Smith.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*88\*

The following morning

At Hayden's house

Hayden woke up first and he looked at his wife who was dead with sleep. He just took a few pictures of her, how did he get lucky with her?

Masa turned and he just wrapped his hands around her bare waist. He kissed her chest and he got undercovers with the intention of

muffing her but he was met with a swollen pink piece of meat and he knew he came inside of her countless of times during the course of the night. Instead he went to kiss her lips and she just murmured in her sleep. A part of him wanted to let her sleep because he didn't even let his poor wife get any sleep after the reception but she was tempting and it was so much sweeter when it was swollen.

He kissed her neck before he slid inside he warm softness and he groaned as she opened her eyes blinking a couple of times. All she felt was his dick filling her up as he went slow.

Hayden:Morning angel..

Instead of uttering the same greeting she moaned his name.

Hayden:I love you too angel..

And he went harder as she grabbed the sheets.

Hayden's semen filled her up shortly after she came under his expert guidance.

He went still inside of her as he watched her come down from her little morning glory climax. Hayden slid out of her and pulled her body towards him, pushing her hair away from her sweaty face.

Hayden:You're fully awake?

She nodded still breathing heavily against his chest. She didn't know how much of his dick she can take now.

Hayden kissed the top of her head as she closed her eyes. She wanted to sleep. No sex, nothing..

Hayden:You're going back to sleep?

She nodded as she fixed her head comfortably on his chest.

He sighed and let her be. It was his fault and she was tired, she was tiny and he had to keep his libido in check.

At University of Botswana

Tessa scrolled down the pictures of their wedding and someone had recorded their vows. They were beautiful and even as it went quiet, she could feel their love too in the silence and through the screen. As much as the two were in love her mind kept asking why Masa? Why her?

Some of the questions she'll never get answers to.

She grabbed her bag and walked inside the hospital for her regular rotations. She hated that

it was always packed, she just wanted a calm environment hence when she was free she always volunteered at her favourite private clinic.

At Masa's parents

The other children played as Arielle slept in. Ma Masa made sure to check her temperature and give her the medication she needed for her fever, her mother had said the results from Arielle's bloodwork would be out on Tuesday and it was only a Saturday.

She smiled as she thought about the wedding. Her daughter was so happy and it madd her happy when she was happy. Who knew that years later, nice things would happen in her daughter's life. She wanted to call Masa but she

probably should not, she should spend time with her husband and she shouldn't interrupt the newlyweds.

At Hayden's house

Masa finally woke up to an empty bed as she stretched her body and yawned. The bedroom door and in walked her husband in shorts and no t-shirt.

Hayden: Good afternoon..

Masa: Afternoon?(yawning)

Hayden: Yes sweetheart.. I cooked.

Masa: Thank you, it's just the two of us right?

Hayden: Yes. I postponed our flight to Wednesday. We have to wait till we get Ari's bloodwork results.

She smiled softly pushing her hair back.

Masa: Thank you love.

Hayden: And you're stuck with me till then..

Masa laughed a bit as she peeled the duvet off and stretched her body again. She raised an eyebrow looking at Hayden.

Masa: Don't think about it. I need a bath and to get clean. Any plans for the day?

Hayden: Well we have somewhere to be..

Masa: Come pick me up.. (lifting her hands towards him)

Hayden: You're such a baby.

Masa: Your baby. Now pick me up...

He just picked her up walking to the bathroom.

Hayden: How long is it going to take you to get ready?

Masa: An hour.



Hayden:Your hour starts now Mrs Smith..

He placed her on the toilet seat and kissed her cheek walking out.

Masa filled the bathtub before she slid inside.

Hayden sat on the couch as he went through his social media. He updated once in a while but he was surprised when he opened a Facebook message from Tessa.

Tessa:Congratulations on the wedding. She was beautiful

Hayden:Thanks.

Tessa>Welcome.

He read it and went offline as he dialed hia

mother in-law's number.

Ma Masa:Hello.

Hayden:Hello uhm how are the kids?

Ma Masa:Arielle just woke up, there has been no sign of the fever.

Hayden:Thank God! Hudson behaving?

Ma Masa:That one is a sweet baby..

Hayden laughed.

Hayden:Maybe to you. Tell all four of them we said hi.

Ma Masa:Will do.

He said his goodbyes and hung up. He had to wait for the Mrs to get ready now.

At Letty's house

She saw picture from Hayden's wedding and a part of her was jealous that he didn't even acknowledge her as his mother. If there was a person who was very serious about cutting people off it was Hayden. She really wanted to be part of his life to fix her wrongs, her past mistakes.

She thought hard about it and figured that the only person to get through to a man was his wife. Maybe she should find his wife's number and try to ask her to talk to Hayden on her behalf. That was a solid plan.

At Hayden's house

Masa made her way to the lounge and Hayden

grinned.

Hayden:Finally. Let me wear a t-shirt and we can go.

When he was done he held her waist leading her out of the house.

Masa:Where are we going?

Hayden:You'll see..

Hayden opened the car door for her before he jogged to his side.

He got inside and started the car. Masa just held her phone before she placed it down and looked at him smiling.

Hayden:I know you're obsessed with me, don't look at me like that.

Masa:Like what?

Hayden:Like you're gonna kill me if I dare hurt you..

Masa:Oh trust me dear husband, I will.

Then she faced the other way with a smile.  
Hayden reversed the car before he drove off  
and the gate closed itself.

On the road

Hayden drove along holding his wife's other hand. He stole glances at her as she held her phone with the other one.

Masa:Mme gone where are we going?

Hayden:You'll see..

He drove till he joined another road that led to a street. Masa looked at the houses in the area and it was pretty fancy. Of course her house was great and all but she wasn't making money that allowed her to live in such a place.

Hayden pressed the remote and the gate of an unfamiliar house slid open. Masa gasped as she kept her eyes glued onto the double storey house. It had a different design from his house and it was better than his house.

Masa:What are we doing here?

Hayden:Wa lapisa wena waitse.(you're annoying, you know that?)

He parked the car outside the closed double door garage and he got out first. Masa didn't wait for him to open the door for her, she just got out immediately and Hayden held her waist

walking to the door. He unlocked it and opened the house. Masa's eyes looked around, noticing the plastic on the furniture. It was new.

Hayden:Mrs Smith welcome to your new house sweetheart.

Masa:It's mine?

Hayden:Yup. When do you want us to move in?

Masa turned to look at him.

Masa:This house is mine?

Hayden:All yours Mrs Smith.(kissing her cheek)

Masa:Uhm...okay. Wow!

Hayden:Let's explore shall we?

He picked her up and jogged up the stairs.

Masa:If you drop me I swe-

He kissed her to shut her up and he broke the short kiss.

Hayden:Lady, if I drop you we are both going to be on wheelchairs after the fall.

He put her down on her feet as soon as he stepped inside the biggest bedroom in the house.

Hayden:Guess whose room is on the top floor?

Masa:Ours?

Hayden:It's the only bedroom on the top floor..

Masa laughed.

Masa:I'm going to miss saying go upstairs to your room and think about what you did..

Hayden:Bathong, our poor kids..

Masa:Spoilt but they have great parents. Us!

Hayden:It has enough space.

Masa:E tona gore. I mean I can fit in a pole there..



Hayden pulled her to him.

Hayden:Stripping for me?

Masa:I don't know, maybe. Depends.

Hayden:I would like that and you wear red thongs and shit along with those red bottoms of yours. I'll throw money on you while you work it on the pole for daddy, shaking that ass and doing the things for me..I'll even look for red lights for your special show..

Masa laughed and pushed him back.

Masa:Ka go itebatsa nako dingwe.(I tend to forget sometimes)

Hayden:It might work...

Masa:Fosek.

Hayden:O raya nna?(you mean me)(laughing)

Masa:Ee akere re two hela..(yes, it's just the two

of us here)

He just pulled her to him and kissed her as she giggled.

Hayden:Tla ga o swaba mme Masa.(You're going to regret it Masa)

Masa:Bathong Hayden.

Hayden:You're lucky I'm letting you rest, we both know gore o ka lla gone jaana. Akere o tshaba dick Mma Smith.(we both know you can start crying right now. You're scared of dick)

Masa:Shut up!

Hayden:Come here kwaa..

He held the back of her head pulling her in for a kiss that quickly took a different turn because she was against the cold surface of the wall in a minute. She breathed heavily against him as lifted her dress and pushed her panties aside, in seconds he slid his dick inside of her and

kissed her as she moaned.

Hayden:Ne o reng babe?(what were you saying babe?)

Masa:H-uh-ahhh

Hayden fucked her against the wall as she screamed his name with her legs wrapped around his torso. He watched her come with her legs shaking before his seed filled her womb and he slid it out. Masa laid her head on his shoulder weakly as she tried to catch her breath.

After a few minutes she looked at his handsome face and chuckled. How the hell does he do that? One minute they are talking and the next they are fucking, like how?

Hayden:You good angel?

She nodded.

Hayden moved his hand and he felt the wetness

on her panties. His semen.

Hayden:I'm sorry about that angel..(chuckling)I love and hate your smart mouth at times.

He moved from the wall and walked to the plastic covered bed and sat on it holding her.

Hayden:Sure you're okay?

Masa:yeah..

Hayden:If I touch you after this please slap me. I need to seriously let you rest my love...

He had fell alright. Hook, line and sinker and the sweet pussy was an extra.

Masa:You're giving me permission? I will sjambok you kana.

Hayden:You're being extra. What do you want us to do tomorrow?

Masa:Stay indoors and Netflix.

Hayden:You're picking the show?

Masa:Obviously...

Hayden:Well I have one more surprise before we go..

He walked out of the bedroom and made his way downstairs with her legs still wrapped around his torso. It's not like she was heavy.

He got to the garage and Masa held back tears.

Masa:Oh my God!

Hayden:It's yours..

Masa:You didn't have to, my car is still new..

Hayden:was your current car bought by your husband?

Masa:N-no.

Hayden:Exactly. Okay this one is yours baby girl.

Masa just hid her head in his chest and he smiled before he frowned.

Hayden:You're crying?

Masa:Thank you..

Hayden:You don't have to thank me. I did this because I love you.

Masa:But you didn't have to, a new house and car?

Hayden:Well you deserve more..

He kissed the top of her head.

Hayden:We'll move in after you give me a date, should we see more of the rooms?

Masa:I think you should put me down..

Hayden:I think not, you're my big baby..

Masa:You still have to drive ans your arms will tire.

Hayden:I'll be okay. I'm not placing you down.

He walked out of the garage as they walked around the house exploring other rooms.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

A FEW DAYS LATER

you guys? Mare why didn't you guys tell me that Bridgerton is this nice and that we all need the Duke of Hastings in our lives?

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*89\*

At the hospital

Masa and Hayden weren't sure if they should bring Arielle along but what if the doctors wanted to run more tests on her? Masa placed the child on her lap as she slept. How her baby was suddenly pale was a mystery to her.

Hayden:I'm sure it's nothing, don't stress about it.

Masa:I'm trying not to..hey baby how are you feeling?

Arielle just moved her head getting comfortable on her mother's lap.

Hayden:Let's wait for the doctor okay?

Masa nodded kissing Arielle's head.



The doctor walked in and gave them a faint smile. Hayden held Masa's hand, he was sure she was worrying over nothing and their child will be okay right? She worried too much.

The doctor took her seat and removed her glasses. Masa carefully took note of the doctor's gestures, was the doctor nervous? She couldn't tell but why did she remove her glasses?

Doctor: Goodmorning.

Hayden: Morning doc..

The doctor paused and she could see the worry etched in Masa's eyes. How was she going to break it down to this wonderful mother that her child was now going to go through multiple procedures in a quest for her to get better.

She looked at the pale child in her mother's

arms and it broke her heart when they got cases such as this one. It usually catches most parents by surprise and she has seen instances where parents can no longer fund the treatment and they swim in debt. Well in these two's case money was not going to be a problem but it was still going to hurt.

Masa:D-doc? Is there anything wrong?

Doctor:I don't know how to break this to you guys..

Hayden was now getting worried. What was it that the doctor wanted to tell them. He squeezed Masa's hand in his own to let her know he was with her.

Doctor:According to the bloodwork from the lab, little Arielle uhm..her blood work revealed that there were too many white blood cells,not enough red blood cells and platelets. Also we noted some blast cells..

She paused and looked at the parents.

Hayden:What does that mean?

Doctor:From the results we've gathered and her current symptoms which are flu-like she has a common child cancer known as acute lymphocytic leukemia or ALL.

Masa's eyes welled with tears looking at the doctor before she looked at Hayden.

Hayden:Can you repeat that doctor?

Doctor:Arielle Smith has leukemia which is a blood and bone cancer most common in children.

Hayden leaned back as Masa let go of his hand with her own shaking as tears streamed down her clear face. There must be a mistake in the tests they've done right? Her baby was fine.

They got the wrong blood samples right?

Masa:D-

Words failed her as her lips quivered. Hayden was stunned and he looked at Arielle who was sleeping in her mother's arms. He swore under his breath. This was already breaking her and they've known about this for like what? Two minutes.

Doctor:Since the bloodwork has established the central course of her fever, that was a common symptom. Most of them a flu-like making it hard to notice and fatigue is one of the signs.

The room was silent as Masa used her hand to the salty water that wouldn't stop flowing down her cheeks no matter how much she tried. Her heart raced at the thought of it all. It was beating at a much faster rate than normal and she had to try and ignore it, the stab in her chest.

Doctor: Since she is here, we have to carry out a bone marrow test. During bone marrow aspiration, a needle is used to remove a sample of bone marrow from the hipbone. The sample is sent to a lab for testing to look for leukemia cells. Doctors in the lab will classify blood cells into specific types based on their size, shape and other features. We also look for certain changes in the cancer cells and determine whether the leukemia cells began from the B lymphocytes or T lymphocytes. This information helps the doctor develop a treatment plan.

They were lost by the jargon but Masa just shook her head.

Masa: A needle on her hip? (shaky voice)

The doctor sadly nodded.

Doctor: It is to determine a proper treatment

plan and during the course of the week we will carry out imaging tests and spinal fluid tests.

Doctor:I know this is new to you all but I assure you, she will be fine.

Masa:How long does t-t-trea-treatment last?

Doctor:Between 2 to 3 years..

Masa:Oh God!(crying)

Hayden:And the test you just talked about when are you planning to do it?

The doctor glanced at her watch.

Doctor:This is all new to you guys and I understand but I was thinking in an hour to carry the bone marrow test but from hereon it won't be handled by me. A hematologist will be dealing with it. A hematologist is a doctor who specializes in treating conditions and diseases of the blood and bone marrow. So she is the

only one we have in the hospital. She will be assisting you and she will be carrying the bone marrow test so that she can send the samples to the lab to establish a clear treatment plan for her.

She kept quiet and silence fell upon the room. She had said too much in a short space of time and they still had to process that their child had cancer. She could slowly see how it was killing the mother that her child was sick and the father had an emotionless façade on.

Doctor:I'll give you guys space..

She stood up and walked out. The door closed without neither of them turning to look. Masa's mind was in a spin. How could she have not known this? Why her child? Who did she wrong to deserve this?

Hayden slipped his hand in hers silently and she looked at him silently.

Hayden:We'll get through this(mouthing it to her)

Masa nodded weakly.

An hour later they were by the waiting benches as they met the new doctor. One who was going to be her child's daughter. She looked like she was in her late thirties.

Her:Hi, I'm Doctor Kera and it's my surname, my name is Jasmine.

Masa nodded leaning against Hayden who was rubbing her back. She has been silently crying for the past hour and just ten minutes ago Arielle had been taken to prepare her for the next test.

Masa:Can we see her?

Jasmine:Are you sure it's a procedure you want



to see?

Masa:I don't want her to be scared in a room full of strangers.

Jasmine:Follow me..

They stood up and followed her to the pediatric care ward where her baby was in a hospital gown.

Arielle's eyes met her mother's and Masa let go of Hayden walking over to her. She kissed her forehead.

Masa:I love you baby okay? You'll be okay.

Arielle:Why are you crying?

Masa:I'll be fine baby..

The nurses walked in and Masa swallowed seeing the huge needle and tears choked her.

Nurse:Mam, she will be okay, it's not a long process..

They separated her from Arielle as they lifted the hospital gown. Hayden held Masa as she watched carefully.

The other nurse held Arielle still as the other lower her panty elastic and applied a sterilising liquid on a cotton ball and lightly wiped her hip where her hipbone was located. A small coloured substance was applied before the doctor held the needle.

Jasmine:Hey sweetheart,this won't be long..

Arielle alarmingly looked at her mother with fear in her small eyes.

Arielle:Mama(small voice)

Masa wanted to move forward but Hayden held

her.

Hayden:They are doing their job love.

Jasmine inserted the needle slowly as Arielle screamed crying.

Masa:She is hurt..they're hurting my baby(crying)

Hayden held her tighter as Arielle's piercing screams filled the room and Masa cried more.

Hayden blinked his tears back as their little girl cried,screaming for them to help her and the nurses constraining her as the doctor collected enough bone marrow to fill the huge needle.

Her small gasps and cries weakened as she looked at her parents, her mother crying fighting Hayden's grip around her.

Masa:they're hurting h-her(crying)

Hayden just held Masa as she cried with him holding back.

Once they were done, the nurses wiped the area and placed a plaster there. Hayden finally let go of his wife as she rushed to her bedside to shush her, holding her in her arms and pushing her hair back.

Masa:It's okay bab-baby(crying)Mommy is here..

The doctor nodded and thanked Hayden.

Jasmine:I'll check up on her later.

They packed their stuff being very careful with the bone marrow sampled they just collected from the little girl. They walked out and Hayden walked to the bed where Masa was a crying mess trying to comfort Arielle.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*90\*

At the hospital

Hayden covered both Masa and Arielle with the blanket. It was too light and Masa was holding Arielle tightly as if she was going to disappear. It was still afternoon but it felt like it had been weeks looking at how long the morning was and the emotional rollercoaster they had experienced.

Jasmine walked in and sighed. He looked like a very supportive husband, his wife was beautiful and so was his daughter. She sighed. She could only wish for such but it was a far fetched dream. She cleared her throat and Hayden turned to look at her as he put his hands in his pockets.

Jasmine:I wanted to run a few things past you guys b-but if it's not the right time then-

Hayden looked back at Masa and his step-daughter then sighed. He hated when things hurt, he didn't want her hurt. She was hurting too much and he knew her, she was going to blame herself and withdraw from everything and everyone. He ran his hand through his faded hair as his shirt sleeves rose up revealing his tattoos and Jasmine secretly watched.

He just kissed Masa's forehead and Arielle's forehead.

Hayden:I'll be back my angels okay? I love you guys(softly)

He straightened up and turned to look at Jasmine. He might as well listen and break it all down for Masa in a less harsh way. He knew doctors were supposed to be direct but then again his wife suffered a heart problem too so it wasn't that easy for her to be calmed down when she was stressed. He wondered how she was going to be sane...

Hayden nodded and followed Jasmine over to her office.

He closed the door after her and he plummeted into the seat and waited for her to talk.

Jasmine:Well I wanted to go through everything from the basics to the treatment. The treatment in general not the personal treatment plan that

will start after we've ran all the tests.

Hayden:Okay. Go on.

Jasmine went to explain everything to him as he asked questions. She noted how he brought his hands together and how nice and strong his hands looked.

Hayden:I hear you doc. So basically my daughter will be in hospital until all the tests are run?

Jasmine:Yes.

Hayden:Amid treatment is it compulsory for her to be cooped up in a hospital?

Jasmine:In most cases unless she has a personal nurse at home and some of the equipment we have here can be provided at home.

Hayden:Okay. I'll talk to someone I know to give



me a list of the equipment needed, draw up a list too so I can compare. I'll find a qualified nurse preferably one registered with the Ministry of Health...

Jasmine:Are you sure sir? The equipment is rather expensive and it would save costs too looking at the fact that you have to pay for treatment.

Hayden:It's nothing..I'll handle it. Is that all?

Jasmine:Yes sir..

Hayden:Thank you and excuse me.

He stood on his feet and walked to the door as Jasmine gazed at his perfect back. She sighed wistfully as the door closed and his cologne scent remained in her office.

Meanwhile as Hayden walked to Arielle's

hospital room he dialed his secretaty's number.

Luna:Afternoon Sir.

Hayden:Luna can you tell HR to sign off an unpaid leave for my wife till further notice and cancel that flight to Paris.(sighing)I'll be working from home and will only be present for meetings that can't be done through Skype.

Luna paused noting down everything that her boss said.

Luna:Is everything okay boss?

Hayden:Hopefully it will be okay. Reschedule my meetings again and see if they can manage Skype and get back to me.

Luna:On it sir.

Hayden:Thank you.

Luna:of course. Have a good day sir.

Hayden really hoped it was a good day but it wasn't. He hung up. Well their plans to build that hospital had taken flight. They were halfway through the large building and he hoped in two more years it would be complete and it will be a state of the art hospital. Hopefully once baby girl was better she would cut out the red ribbon. He had to be hopeful that Ari was going to get better. His wife was breaking down and he had to be the backbone of the family. Keep it all together, for their sakes if not his.

He opened the door and looked at them sleeping peacefully as if what had happened a few hours ago hadn't made them weep. He called the nanny.

Nanny:Hello...

Hayden:Hello, can you pack Arielle's clothes for me? And include her favourite blanket.

Nanny:Of course sir.

Hayden:I'll be there in a few to pick them up.

Nanny:Of course.

Hayden hung up and rubbed Masa's hand. They needed food and he was going to get them a fresh set of clothes. How they were going to tell close family was beyond him. It was difficult to speak about it while it's still a new issue.

He walked out. He had a few hours to finish what was he was doing.

At Cane's place

Cane placed his fork down as he watched Joy feed their little boy.

Cane:Can Ari come over? She hasn't been feeling well and well quality time here won't do her any harm.

Joy:Is she okay?

Cane:Just flu..

Joy:Isn't it better she is with her mother when she is sick, most kids want to be besides their mothers most especially girls.

Cane sighed.

Joy:I'm not refusing just saying besides dealing with two young kids can be tiring.

Cane:She is almost 8..

Joy:Same difference love..say aah(to the young toddler on the high chair)

He clapped his hands as he opened his mouth.

Cane:You do know that Arielle had to know her brother at some point.

Joy:Why o bua ekete ke gana ngwana wa gago a tla kwano kante?(why are you phrasing it in a way that implies I don't want your child visiting)

Cane:Well the past year you have been giving nothing but excuses and the only time Arielle sees her brother is at family events.

Joy:Ijoo. It's fine. I wasn't even fighting. I love Arielle like my own but I just can't handle two children at once..besides she has other siblings it's not as if this baby is her only sibling..

Cane sighed as he pushed the food aside. Joy looked at the plate. He barely touched his food.

Joy:You didn't even eat your food.

Cane:I have to go back to work.

Cane just pinched his son's cheek and Joy gave him her cheek as always and he just walked

away without kissing her cheek. She embarrassingly continued to feed their son.

At the hospital

Masa woke up first and as her eyes landed on Arielle she closed her eyes again hoping it was all a dream. A bad one she would wake up from any second from now but to her disappointment it wasn't and it hurt. The cut still fresh.

Masa: Is there a God in heaven?

She softly asked herself as she held the child in her arms.

She looked around the room and Hayden wasn't there. Maybe he got tired of her crying and

hysterics and decided to take a breather. She sighed. A hollow hole developed in the depths of her heart. She was used to dealing with things alone anyway. It wasn't anything new to her.

At Hayden's house

The kids met Hayden at the door and hugged him. They were still in their uniforms.

Avery:Where is mom and Ari?

Hayden sighed. He didn't know how he was going to break it down to them when they haven't broken it down to Arielle and Masa was still in denial.

Hayden:they are in hospital.

Smith Jr:Is something wrong? Can we go see them?



Hayden:But you were with them yeaterday and this morning..

Avery shrugged.

Avery:We just want to see them dad..we are family remember.

She smiled at him and he smiled.

Hayden:I don't know if your mother will permit me to bring you guys to the hospital.

Smith Jr:We will behave..

Hayden:Let me head to the bedroom, I'll be back and go change clothes guys.

Avery:Yes daddy sir!

She saluted and he laughed.

When he got to the bedroom he packed some of Masa's clothes in an overnight bag and some toiletry too. When he was sure he packed

everything he walked out and placed the bag on the couch. He jogged upstairs to Arielle's room and he found the bag laying on the bed. He picked it up and he just went downstairs where he found the twins waiting all changed.

Hayden:I'm returning you guys in an hour.

Avery:Wait..

She walked up the stair and came back with Arielle's iPad.

Avery:Our favourite dress up game and word game is on hers.

Hayden:Let's go guys. We're going to get food first though.

At the hospital

Masa kissed Arielle's cheek as she got out of bed and headed to the bathroom where she splashed water on her face. She already looked horrible. She pinched herself still hoping it was a dream but it was not. To her dismay.

She heard chattering in the room and she paused, listening in. She finally opened the bathroom door open and she found Hayden with the kids. Avery being a chatter mouth was waking Arielle up.

Masa held her heart. Hayden walked up to her.

Hayden: Just don't push me out love. Please.

Masa nodded.

Masa: I thought you were tired of me an-

Hayden: I'll never be angel, we're in this together..

Arielle was wide awake and Avery handed her

the iPad as she started telling her about what happened at school while she wasn't there. For a few minutes Arielle forgot the pain she was in and Hayden held Masa close.

Masa:They are doing a better job of cheering her up(teary)

Hayden:That's what siblings do, something we both never got growing up but our kids have.

Masa nodded.

Masa:Do they know?

Hayden:No. It's still too early. Let's give it a week.

Masa:Wise..

All three of them shared the chips and Smith Jr interrupted Avery's talking just to declare some pieces of information shared by Avery as false.

Avery:And nobody asked you Smith.

Smith Jr:Girls!

Arielle:boys!

Avery:Two against one..

Smith Jr:Hud will be on my side once he is older.

The girls shook their heads and Arielle tried to sit upright but her back hurt so bad. She looked at her parents and Hayden just let go of Masa to go to her. He gently picked her up.

Hayden:I'm not hurting you are?

She shook her head and he placed her on his lap gently.

Hayden:Comfortable princess?

She nodded and looked at her siblings who handed her the milkshake which she held with both hands.

Hayden:Sweetheart?

Masa:Yes?

Hayden:Her blanket is in her bag..

Masa pushed her hair back and walked to the bags and she opened them to take the blanket. She gave it to Hayden and he covered Arielle with it and she leaned into him.

Hayden:You still have to eat proper food. Including your vegies. Your mother is a monster.

Masa:No I'm not(smiling)

Smith Jr:Mom just wants thing done the right way right mom?

Masa:Thank you my boy. You understand me better than these three. I'll let you drive my car one day.

He punched the air with a huge smile.

Arielle and Avery:Boys!

Masa:Oh God!

Arielle smiled a bit. She still didn't know what was wrong with her since her parents never explained it to her but for now she can smile.

The door opened and Jasmine gasped.

Jasmine:Oh and it's a full house.

Masa regrettably looked at her.

Masa:Well is it allowed?

Jasmine:It's not but it doesn't matter, beautiful kids by the way..(pausing)are they triplets? They look the same age..

Masa:No..the twins are older by four months..

Jasmine:Oh. How is my patient doing?

Hayden:How do you feel princess?

Arielle:It still hurts.

Jasmine:Really sorry about that little one.

Arielle just nodded.

Jasmine:I'll pass by much more later.

She walked out and Masa just stuffed five french fries into her mouth. She should tell Cane maybe tonight, she wasn't sure if this time he will show up or he will be busy babysitting yet again.

Avery:Mom!

Masa:Don't start Ave..

Avery:It's not lady like..

Masa:You watch too much tv.

Hayden:Tell her princess, what she is doing is not what a proper lady should do..

Masa threw a french fry at him and he laughed.

Avery:And you're wasting food mama.



Masa:Bathong Princess Avery of the Smith royal family wa lapisa.(gosh Princess Avery of the Smith Royal family you're annoying)

Avery paused and smiled.

Avery:Princess Avery of the Smith royal family? I like that mom.

They all laughed and Masa continued to lazily stuff her face with the french fries.

Masa:Guys and let Hud watch tv too. Smith?

Smith Jr:Sure mom..

And the room was full of chatter and light heartedness as Masa and Hayden temporarily forgot the silent killer that was in their daughter's blood.

.

.

\*

\*

A MONTH LATER  
FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*91\*

At the Smith's new family house

Hayden sighed as Masa took a few bites before she pushed the plate aside.

Hayden:Baby..

Masa:I'm okay love..

Hayden picked the plate and went to put it at the kitchen before he forced her to sit on his lap. Masa leaned into him inhaling his cologne more even though sometimes it felt like it made her

nauseous.

Hayden:You're losing weight angel..

She just kept quiet.

Hayden:Baby girl I don't want to force feed you like I do sometimes with the kids but I will have to, I know that as a family we're faced with something that's kind of hard to deal with but baby eat don't neglect yourself too.

She nodded.

Hayden:I love you okay?

Masa:I love you a trillion Mr Smith.

Hayden:Smile for me..

She grinned before he tickled her and she laughed.

Masa:oh God! Stop!(laughing)

She slid off his lap onto the floor as he continued tickling her till he fell on top of her

and she blinked a few times. He was just about to kiss her when Arielle walked inside the kitchen holding an empty glass of milk.

Arielle:what's going on?

Masa's cheeks reddened and Hayden cleared his throat.

Hayden:Playing.

Arielle:Oh.

She stood on her tippy toes to place the glass in the sink and she walked out unbothered. Masa burst out laughing hitting Hayden's chest.

Masa:Mphologe, you're heavy.

Hayden:And the way she was so unbothered.

Masa:I'm shooketh..

Hayden:Like someone I know.

Masa:don't start..

He got off her and helped her stand on her feet.

Hayden:You're not getting cold feet?

Masa:The hair cut? No...

Hayden:You're a mother and a half..

Masa:I'm not and we both know it. I can't believe they finally have made the treatment plan and her first session is tomorrow.

Hayden:The first step.

Masa:The side effects and all..

Hayden:We have a private nurse and we are surrounded by family, don't put too much pressure on yourself. Arielle will be fine and someday we will look back and reflect on this. Sipping some coctails in a beach faraway.

Masa:I'm sorry about not being able to go to the honeymoon.

Hayden:Family first my baby..let's go.

Masa and Hayden walked out and Hayden climbed the steps heading to the bedroom to get the cutting machine while Masa walked to Arielle's bedroom. It was a Saturday and to think she hasn't been anywhere other than the hospital ever since Arielle's diagnosis. Did she even shop for pads? She paused. Was it important? She has been so stressed this past month she most probably forgot or she had extra ones? Her mind was just all over the place. She was just in black tights that weren't even tight and a long sleeved oversized sweater. She found Arielle with all four of her siblings and she had to admit that they took it better than her or was it their young naïve minds that allowed them to see beyond the present? She didn't know but all she knew is that they were there for their sister. Hudson slowly tried to

stand up when he saw his mother but he fell on his butt but giggled and the rest turned to look.

Avery:Oh hi mom.

Smith Jr:Why can't you homeschool us too?

Masa rolled her eyes.

Masa:Because you guys are able to go to school and your sister can't. Some days she is sick and can't get out of bed because of the lumps she gets around the neck, it's better she stays home guys.

Avery:We understand mam, she says you're a better teacher.

Masa:I always help you guys with homework. Math homework.

Hayden walked in.

Hayden:As I don't know math, I did calculus too Mrs Smith.

Masa:Battle of the degrees?

Hayden:You can't win..

Masa:Financial engineering..

Hayden:Civil engineering baby girl..

Masa:I deal with money.

Hayden:I developed this house's house plan.

Masa:And you didn't tell me?

Hayden:Why would I? And kids that's why you should study hard.

Masa:Really hard.

They just nodded and shifted their attention back to what they were doing.

Masa:Ari are you ready love?

Arielle:Will it grow back?

Masa:Once you're done with treatment it will. You're a princess baby, you'll be beautiful.



She slowly got out of bed and followed them as the twins followed.

Masa made her sit on the pillow between her legs as Hayden connected the machine.

Masa:Can I cut your hair?

Arielle:It will grow back right?

Masa:I promise..We explained to you what will happen if we don't cut it. It will start falling on it's own and it won't be nice to wake up with chunks of hair on your pillow sweetness.

Arielle nodded and Masa blinked a couple of times as she ran the machine on Arielle's head, the hair falling down her shoulders. She kept cutting till she was bald and she stopped.

Masa:All done baby..

Arielle stood up and walked to the nearby mirror.

Masa:You're still a princess baby love. A brave one and you look beautiful.

Avery:Princesses smile Ari.

Masa looked at Hayden as she sat on the pillow.

Hayden:I can't believe I'm cutting my wife's hair.

Masa:Dira ka bonako before I change my mind..uh.

Hayden moved the machine of Masa's head watching her hair fall off at every stroke. She did this so Arielle doesn't feel indifferent. She wanted her to feel as normal as possible although Masa didn't know how she was going to look with a bald head.

Masa watched her long hair fall down and she sighed. She will cut her hair everytime till Arielle is better. She didn't want her to feel like she

didn't look like the rest.

Hayden:All done..

Masa placed her hand on her now bald head.

Masa:Weird, how do I look?

Hayden:Want my honest opinion?

Masa:Yeah before I go to the mirror.

Hayden:Like an alien.

Masa pushed him back laughing.

Masa:Mxm. I hate you too..

Hayden:You're beautiful and don't let anyone tell you otherwise or they'll deal with me.

Avery:Can I also cut my hair?

Hayden:You want to cut it too?

She nodded.

Avery:It will grow back.(taking a deep breath)Yeah cut it.

Hayden:All of it?

She nodded.

Hayden:Oh! After this you guys need to take photos.

Masa:Ijoo..

Hayden did quick work of Avery's hair and when he was done she walked to the mirror.

Avery:Not bad. Now Ari we are look the same.

They all laughed and she did too.

Hayden:Now you guys can change and I'll take photos.

Masa:Relax H. Relax...let me go change, I want to go buy something.

Hayden:I can go on your behalf and you stay.

Masa:You? You've been pestering me about going outside just for a few. I won't be long just like 30 minutes.

She climbed the stairs to the bedroom and she changed into a dress. That was when she noticed how gauche she looked. How Hayden tolerated seeing her like this was a surprise. She looked nothing like the healthy woman she has been over the years and just a month of Ari's diagnosis now she looks like this. She removed the dress and tried jeans and they seemed bigger than her. She would rather wear a dress then and she didn't look half as bad with bald hair.

She got the car keys and walked down the stairs.

Masa:What should I bring?

Smith Jr:Anything is fine.

Masa:Okay. Wish me luck.

Hayden:You don't need it.

She walked out.

At the mall

Masa stepped out of her car and walked into the shop. People started staring at her and whispers had now started. She picked the basket and continued walking unaware of some of had finally recognized who it was and were taking photos of her.

Masa just picked up the packet of pads and

went along other aisles to take snacks.

She walked to the till and joined the queue where murmurs started upon her arrival. Some stole glances at her and chuckled while some just shook their heads in pity. Masa ignored that as she searched her purse for her card but instead of it was Hayden's card. She sighed and gave it to the cashier. She called him as the cashier gave her the machine.

Masa:Baby what's your pin again?

Hayden:Your birth year.

Masa:Oh okay. Thank you.

Se hung up and punched the digits.

Cashier:Plastic?

Masa:Ee mma.

She was given the card back and along with her two plastics. She walked out of the shop.

At the Smiths

Masa threw herself on the couch next to Hayden who rubbed her hand.

Hayden:How was your first outing?

Masa:Weird. Everyone was looking at me and all.

Hayden:Don't mind them.

Masa:Mhm..

She rubbed her tummy a bit.

Hayden:What's wrong?

Masa:Probably di pp..



Hayden:And you get grumpy that time of the month.

Masa:I do not.

Hayden:I'm always at the receiving end of all your mood swings. Do you need a heater?

Masa:Noo...

At University of Botswana

Tessa went to Facebook and she half laughed when she saw Masa's pictures trending. She looked horrible and that's for stealing one's man. She read the comments with a smile.

Comment 1: marriage already showing her flames?

Comment 2:Bathong o ntse maswe jang, is that how the wife of a prominent businessman should look?

Comment 3:I just think people in the comment section are being unnecessarily rude. She didn't even post the pictures herself so batho should mind their own.

Comment 4:Marriage is not everything ladies Look at Masa here as an example.

Comment 5:She used to be the school whore back in senior school,guess her whoring ways caught up with her and the husband saw that he cannot make out of a whore...

Tessa laughed as she read more comments. They were roasting her and well she wouldn't blame them. Look at how horrible she looked. How Hayden tolereated this was beyond her.

Maybe marriage was indeed showing her flames or she was dying. Hmm...if she died and shit then she would be there for him, comfort him blah blah and they will be together again.

She logged off and logged in with a fake account where she commented on the post.

Tessa: what if she is about to die? How tragic.

There were a few replies on her comment.

Reply 1:Very tragic. Lol

Tessa:I heard she slept with him while had a girlfriend and fell pregnant. Imagine hela. The audacity.

Reply 2:Karma then it is a darn bitch, you can't build on the tears of another and expect to live happily ever after.

Tessa:Exactly She deserves it.

Reply 3:You guys don't know her personally to say all that Disappointing how women break other women. Tlhe le baloi basadi.

Reply 4:Stop being a feelist wena we come to Facebook to joke and we use our own data..mxm

Tessa laughed as she went to read more comments.

At Matilda's house

Tily scrolled through social media and saw the trending topic. She gasped when she noticed that it was Masa. When will she ever catch a break? She shook her head. She hoped and prayed Arielle will pull through, that little girl was her mother's pride and joy.

At the Smiths

Masa went through her socials and tears blinded her eyes as she saw herself trending. They had taken photos of her? She read the comments and she just swallowed tearfully.

Hayden:Babe?

He just got the phone out of her hands and he saw what she was looking at.

Masa:Kante how did I wrong the universe?

Hayden:Don't mind them my love..they are bitter and have nothing to do with their lives.

Masa:I was just there to buy, I didn't offend anyone(teary)

Hayden:angel...

She cried on his chest as he rubbed her back.

Hayden:I'm sorry okay baby?

Masa:Some are calling me a whore, they

brought up my past..

Hayden:Babe..

Masa:I'll never be good enough..

Hayden:You're good enough for me. Ska lela tlhemma...

He rubbed her back.

Hayden:this will pass too and they will forget about it. You're beautiful and perfect for me.

He just held her like a baby.

Hayden:We have each other, a family that loves and adores you. The children love you, I love you and that's all that matters little one okay?

She nodded.

Hayden:Matilda is there, your mom and dad are there my family is there. Don't stress yourself unnecessarily, we have a lot to deal with at the moment.

Masa:I don't think I'll be able to go out after this..

Hayden:That's still okay, I know you hate fighting with people and you would rather retreat and not retaliate. You're an angel okay?

She nodded.

Hayden:And I love you Mrs Smith. Sleep babe, we have a long day ahead of us.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*92\*

The following morning

At the Smiths

Masa was the first one to wake up. She headed to the bathroom where she checked her panty for any blood stain or sign of her period. The cramps had gotten bad during the course of the night and she had failed to sleep. They had never been this bad and she didn't have the energy to wake Hayden. There was none and she sighed. Maybe during the course of the day, it was nothing major. A few months after giving birth to Hudson her period had fallen right back into it's mundane cycle. She was never a day late or early so this was alarming. Just a bit. She can't be pregnant right? Better she get that IUD device as soon as possible so that she should stop worrying about her periods and the



possibility of falling pregnant. She dreaded that with all of her heart.

She walked out minutes later to help the nanny prepare the kids for school. The driver would pick them up in two hours to take them to school and she would finally get Ari ready. Being busy for now will distract her mind from most of what was about to happen later on.

In an hour the twins were done and they said morning to a drowsy Arielle who had barely lifted her head to say the same before they ran upstairs to the room to greet their father. It had been something they had gotten used to every morning. Saying hi and I love you to thr family, not to boast or anything but she guessed they were being raised right.

They ate their breakfast peacefully with light bantering and they both kissed their mother's cheek when their driver arrived. They grabbed their bags and walked out.

Masa:Thank you.

Nanny:They are a delightful bunch. Should I get Arielle ready mam?

Masa:No, I'll do it. Thank you.

This was the time now for all the medical equipment Hayden had shipped here to work now, the private nurse along with a doctor would set it all up for Arielle while they went to the hospital for her first session. They had been warned about the side effects and she knew it wouldn't even be pretty, she just hoped she was going to be strong throughout the whole process. Those drugs being in her system. She sighed.

Hayden woke up fully not feeling his wife at his side. She was probably keeping herself as busy as she could possibly can. Masa's phone rang and he picked it up.

Hayden:Hello..

Cane:Hi, can I talk to Masa?

Hayden:Can I pass a message?

Cane sighed.

Cane:I'll be a little late for Arielle's first chemotherapy session.

Hayden:I can't say I'm surprised..

Cane:What is that supposed to mean?

Hayden:You're spending far less time with Arielle, question would be why you aren't spending time with her?

Cane:I've been busy an-

Hayden:That when you do spend time with her she doesn't call you dad with the excitement she used to have at five? No offense but ga o sa batle ngwana bua Mr..

Cane:Be careful how you talk to me, I'm still your uncle.

Hayden:And you're starting to become a shitty dad to Arielle.

Cane:Kana o tla nyela Hayden.

Hayden chuckled.

Hayden:The truth hurts hmm? Still doesn't make it right on your part.

Cane:Just because you're legally fucking my baby ma-

Hayden:Stop it right there. Family or not, Masa is my wife and she should be respected. I don't care if she is your baby mama or she fucked

you first, she's my wife and you're overstepping boundaries. Tread carefully uncle...tread really carefully.

His voice had him blinking a couple of times.

Hayden:I think this conversation is over. You know what to do.

He hung up and threw Masa's phone on the bed as he headed to the bathroom.

After he was done Masa finally walked inside the room and sat on the edge of the bed.

Hayden:morning angel. Go take a bath, I ran water for you in the bathtub.

Masa:My period is late.

She blurted out. Hayden paused as he placed his lotion down and leaned against the dressing table.

Hayden:And?

Masa incredulously looked at him.

Masa:My period is late Hayden!

Hayden:I don't see where you're heading with this point.

Masa:Wow!

Hayden:You're not being direct Masa and don't raise your voice at me. Don't do that.

She unconsciously tried to tuck her hair behind her ear before she remembered that she was a bald head now and there was no hair to push back.

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Wa re bothata ke eng?(what's the problem)

She willed herself to calm down.

Masa:My period late and it's never late unless of...what I'm basically saying is that it's late an-

She couldn't even fathom the thought of being pregnant.

Hayden:And?

Masa:It's never late, when I was pregnant with Hudson it was still there on time till I started showing an-it's late.

Hayden:And you think pregnancy is a possibility?

Masa:I don't know..

Hayden:Was it hard to get your point across

without raising your voice?

Masa:No.

Hayden:If you have any qualms, take a pregnancy test to eliminate the fear. Simple, yes? We're done right?

Masa:Yes.

Hayden:Your water is going to get cold.

She stood up and headed to the bathroom where she closed the door. Hayden just finished getting dressed before he walked out of the room and walked down the stairs to Arielle's bedroom.

Hayden:Morning.

He bent down to her level with a small smile.

Arielle:Morning...

She looked at him with question.



Arielle:Will it hurt?

Hayden:When they insert the needle it might sting a little. We'll be there to hold your hand through it all okay?

She nodded and slowly got out of bed and hugged him tight.

Arielle:Thank you dad..

Hayden hid the shock on his face with a smile.

Arielle:I prefer dad than uncle..

She said with a little smile still hugging him.

Hayden stood up picking her up.

Hayden:I'm honoured princess.

Arielle:I love you..

Hayden:I love you too princess..did you eat something?

She shook her head.

Hayden:Let's get you something to eat then.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*93\*

At the hospital

Masa and Hayden sat on either side of Arielle as the doctor set the drip. They didn't know how Arielle's body was going to react to the drugs so they were yet to find out.

Jasmine:All done..

Masa:It takes how long?

Jasmine:At least three hours for that drip to be empty.

Masa just nodded.

Masa:So we wait.

Jasmine:Yes mam.

Hayden:Can you keep contact with the private nurse? Is there any way you can go do in house calls? For chemo? We really have everything we need for it..

He said looking at Arielle. As much as they were at the pediatric ward, there was something unsettling about hospitals.

Jasmine noted how they were the lucky ones to have resources at the tip of their fingers They already had everything and how they got the

resources baffled her.

Hayden saw the doubt playing in the doctor's eyes.

Hayden:I can assure you that Dr Romano knew what she was doing when she asked for the right medical supplies to be delivered. We wouldn't intentionally put our daughter in harm's way.

Jasmine's eyes widened.

Jasmine:Dr Romano? Angel Romano?

Hayden:The one and only..

Jasmine:H-how?

Hayden:We have our ways.

The door opened and Cane walked in. Arielle's eyes lit up as she saw her dad. She had a lot of questions but she felt drowsy but she was going to keep her eyes wide open.

Cane:Hello love.

Arielle:Hii..

Hayden stood up and walked to Masa's side.

Hayden:Let's give them space.

Masa:Bu-

Hayden:let's go..

She stood up and smiled at Cane who failed to look at Hayden. Hayden held Masa's waist leading her out of the room.

Masa:What did you do?

Hayden:Pulled my weight around. Where can we find a doctor?

Masa:For?

Hayden: to see if you're indeed "pregnant"

Masa:Okay..

They did find one and she just gave Masa a pregnancy test stick while Hayden waited.

Masa walked out and sat next to Hayden as the doctor walked to the small bathroo..

Masa:Sorry for my outburst in the morning.

Hayden:Don't do that again.

Masa:I won't.

Hayden:Then we're good.

She rubbed her hands together as she prayed in her heart. She begged God to take care of Ari and for her not to be pregnant. She will never have unprotected sex with Hayden ever again if it turns out negative. She should've fasted too.

She can't deal with a pregnancy when her daughter is also sick.

Hayden just looked at her panicking and he chuckled. So much drama over something that is not highly possible. She said she was on the depovera injection right?

Minutes later the doctor walked back inside the office holding the pregnancy stick.

Masa:And?

The doctor turned the pregnancy stick and Masa's heart pounded.

Masa:D-doc?

Doctor:Two lines means it's positive and a negative is shown by one line.

Hayden rubbed his face before he looked at Masa.

Doctor:But the results can be inaccurate.

Masa:So in other words I'm not p-uhm that?

Doctor:We can fully confirm that with a scan or blood tests, a scan being faster..

Hayden:Okay.

He leaned back defeated. Now he understood why Masa was freaking out. Hudson was barely a year old, they had to be there for Ari and a pregnancy? With Masa? So soon? He wasn't about to deal with her moods. On God.

Doctor:I think a scan should be suitable. When was the last time you've seen your period?

Masa:Six weeks ago.

Doctor:You do know you can still get your period while pregnant right?

Masa nodded. She knew that pretty well.



Doctor:I need you to lie down on the bed mam, it can be early days though and if, a big if you're pregnant the heartbeat won't be audible. We can only spot the gestational sac, I recommend we get your bloodwork too.

Masa:Okay.

She just hoped it was a false positive. She wouldn't be able to deal with a pregnancy. On God. But what if it turns out that she's pregnant? She wouldn't kill innocent babies that were made with love. She sighed and hoped the pregnancy test was lying.

The doctor moved the wand over Masa's flat tummy and she was a bit concerned seeing her ribs that visible. If it turns out that she is pregnant she should eat. She couldn't spot anything via the ultrasound. It might still be

early to detect anything.

She looked at the couple.

Doctor: Well I can't see anything, I recommend coming here tomorrow after I collected the bloodwork results.

Masa: Okay.

In Arielle's hospital room

Arielle smiled faintly as her eyelids fluttered shut. Cane realised how much he missed in her life and her likes and dislikes had changed.

His phone rang and he told his secretary to cancel all his appointments for the day.

At Letty's house

She finally got Masa's number. It was a bit hard to get it but maybe she will get through to Hayden.

She walked to the bedroom where she opened the wardrobe and the box she had kept high up came tumbling down. The papers and photos inside fell on the tile and she bent down to pick up the photos. She looked at a particular photo then she paused. She swore she was going to take this secret to the grave but what if it's her one chance for her to get Hayden to talk to her?

.

.

\*

\*

My apologies for a late insert.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*94\*

At the hospital

Hayden and Masa walked inside Arielle's hospital room and she was still out. They were going to keep her here for what the side effects might bring. He rubbed Masa's arms and she sighed.

Masa: Sometimes I feel like I wronged God somehow.

Hayden: Don't say that.

Masa: I can't help it.

Cane walked back inside and Hayden nodded. He sat down as his phone rang. Joy's name flashed on his screen and he ignored it. He wasn't in the mood to deal with her nonsensical behaviour at the moment.

Cane:She is still out?

Hayden nodded pulling Masa closer to his muscled body. He knew she was scared and he was feeling the same. Hayden bent his head to whisper in her ear.

Hayden:Heartbeat okay?

Masa:Yes.

He just placed his warm palm over her breast to feel her heartbeat.

Hayden:Let's go get you a glass of cold water, it's not back to normal angel. A reye.

The two walked out and Cane sat down. He had

pretended not to notice that Masa had cut her hair like Arielle and that alone touched him. She sacrificed her beauty just for their daughter to feel okay. If that isn't a mother and a half he didn't know what was. He rubbed Ari's hand as he watched her sleep. She was too young to be fighting a silent deadly killer like cancer. Way too young and it pained him that he hadn't been spending enough time with her when she was healthy. He didn't want to think about the possibility of her having limited time. He would be hurt and live a life full of what ifs but that woman who just left would be shattered for life.

Cane: You have to beat this sweetie. You're strong love.

Meanwhile outside Arielle's room Hayden asked one of the nurses where the cafeteria was.

Masa: Thank you.

Hayden:Welcome.

When they arrived he got her iced water.

Hayden:Drink.

Masa:Okay.

She drank the water silently.

Masa:Do you think I'm pregnant?

Hayden:Babe let's try to not stress about that my love.

She sighed and nodded.

At Letty's house

She sucked in a deep breath and decided to call Masa. The phone rang unanswered for a while

before she answered.

Masa:Hello...

Letty:Uhm hi.

Meanwhile Hayden still kept his hands around her waist as she talked to the phone.

Masa:Hello...

Caller:Don't hang up. Can we meet?

Masa:Who am I talking to?

The caller sighed.

Caller:Letty, Hayden's mother.

Masa gasped and Hayden paused to look at her.

Letty:Can we meet? I just want to tell you something. He doesn't have to know.

Masa had to stop herself from looking up at



Hayden.

Masa:I'll think about it.

Letty:Please. I won't take too much of your time...please!

Masa:Okay. Have a good day.

Letty:I'll send the details. Thank you. Thank you so much.

Masa hung up and Hayden looked at her expecting her to tell him about her call but she kept quiet and he let her be.

She should've declined that meeting. If Hayden finds out he is going to flip.

At Cane's place

Joy fed the baby as she tried to call Cane again but his phone didn't go through now. Was she wrong to want her son to get all his father's affection like Arielle did growing up? It's not like she hates the little girl, she is a sweet child but it was her son's turn. Was that so hard to see?

She called Masa's phone and it sent her to voicemail. Why? She finally tried Hayden's number and it went through.

Hayden:Hello?

Joy:Hi. I wanted to ask if you've seen Cane.

Hayden:He's with his daughter.

Joy:Oh.

Hayden:You can call him if you don't believe me.

He cut the call and she leaned back. In the morning he left early and she assumed he was

going to work and he is still at the hospital?

At the hospital

Blair finally could get away from Masedi and now she had to come to at least show her support. Motherhood has been quite tricky on her part and she wondered how Masa did it with four children as young as she is.

Blair asked by the reception and she made her way to the pediatric ward. She found Hayden and Masa on the benches with Masa silently lying on his lap.

Blair:Hello.

Hayden:Hi and you didn't have to come over..

Blair:I wanted to.

Masa:Hey..

Blair:Masa it's okay not to be strong.

Masa kept her silence. She has broken down more times than she can count and honestly things were going wrong in her life.

Blair sat down and she just hoped that they pull through. They looked so sad and it was heartbreaking to see them in that state.

.

.

\*

\*

Yesterday's insert. My apologies yet again.

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*95\*

Later that evening

At the hospital

Cane finally walked out of Arielle's room and found Masa sleeping on Hayden's chest. His heart felt heavy all of a sudden. Did he have a lapse in judgement?

Hayden:She is still asleep?

Cane:Yeah. And what you said this morning you were right. My apologies for disrespecting mmaagwe Arielle.

Hayden:Water under the bridge.

Cane:I have to go..

Hayden:Okay. And if you want to visit Arielle she is always home..

Cane: Thank you for (pausing) for loving my daughter even when I failed her.

Hayden: I regard her as my child too.

Cane: Your dad would've been proud.

He nodded rubbing Masa's arm. Cane said goodbye once again and walked out.

Minutes later Masa woke up and looked at Hayden while rubbing her eyes.

Masa: Is baby girl up?

Hayden: Not yet...

Masa: I need the bathroom.

She stood up and left. Hayden headed to Arielle's room and stood by the doorway. He almost lost his family with his recklessness, he only hoped they get through this. Arielle opened her eyes and tried moving but her body felt heavy. Hayden rushed to her bedside as he held

her hand.

Hayden:He-

Before he could complete the sentence she was already vomiting and some of the vomit landed on his shirt, her body shook in small convulsions and he pressed the emergency button. Apparently people reacted differently to chemo and with her being out for so long. The drip was empty and the drugs were now settling in her system.

The doctor and nurse rushed in.

Jasmine:Her body's reaction is not what we expected.

Hayden:What's happening?

Jasmine:The convulsions and her vomiting at once? Not good, she might choke on her vomit and die..

Hayden swallowed as the nurse hurried with a bucket as Arielle vomited.

Masa walked inside the room and looked at them.

Masa:What's wrong?

Hayden:She is awake and the drugs finally kicked in.

The 8 year old vomited for what seemed like an eternity before she stopped and was handed a glass of water.

Jasmine checked her temperature and it was low. Too low to be deemed normal.

Jasmine:Are you hot or cold?

Arielle:h-hot..

This was going to be a long journey till she gets



better. Hayden used the tissue towel the nurse handed him to wipe his shirt as Masa rubbed her arms, worry gnawing at her and she knew that no matter what she said her child was going to be in pain. Tears blinded her as she just watched the doctor and nurses do what they were trained for.

At Cane's house

Cane arrived and he was not surprised when he found Joy waiting for him.

Joy: O tswa kae? (Where were you?)

Cane: From the hospital.

Joy humphed folding her arms.

Joy: And I'm supposed to believe that? You were not answering your phone and you were not at the office.

Cane:Are you monitoring my moves now?

Joy:I'm simply asking the appropriate questions  
Cane and you're not answering me.

Cane:I went to the hospital...

Joy:Hospital visit ya the whole day?

Cane:Yes...

He attempted to proceed to walk to the  
bedroom but Joy stood up. She stood in front  
of him.

Joy:I want the truth Cane.

Cane:And that's the damned truth.

Joy:No it's not. Masa's phone was not on too..

Cane chuckled.

Cane:And how is that my concern?

Joy:And he says nyospital visit for the whole  
day..

Cane:What did you just say?

Joy:I knew it. The child is sick and it's just fucking chemotherapy and you're gone the whole day..

Cane:Joy you're overstepping the lines. Don't push me woman!

Joy:Or what?

Cane:You will regret it. I have a daughter and I have to father her as well...

Joy:Does it give you an excuse to not answer my calls? Jason needs you too as his father in case you're trying to forget you have a son.

Cane:You're being petty and insecure and it doesn't suit you.

Joy:I am not...

Cane shook his head. He didn't even recognize his own wife.

Cane:Masa is a much better mother than you...

A slap landed on his cheek and he looked at her.

Joy:Don't. Don't.

She was about to land another when he tightly held her hand.

Cane:Joy behave or I will teach you how to behave. Don't you dare try to lay your hands on me. I can beat you too if I wanted to.

He held her arm a bit too tight as she whimpered in pain. He let go of her arm and walked to the bedroom where he got his pillow and proceeded to walk out, heading to the guest room. He didn't want to have to deal with her nonsense. Honestly.

Joy sat down on the couch as she cried. She knew it. Her marriage was over, all of a sudden the child has cancer and he disappears the

whole day and says he was at the hospital.  
Really?

At Letty's place

She stewed over her secret. What if Hayden hates her more? Will Masa really show up to the meeting? She was being sincere this time around and she honestly meant no harm. No harm at all.

She closed her eyes letting sleep take over. She will see tomorrow morning.

The following morning

At the hospital

Masa woke up alone on the chair and she yawned looking at Arielle. They slept in the early hours of the morning because she seemed to be getting worse at every given moment. She sighed and rubbed her eyes as Hayden walked in holding two cups of coffee. He had changed his shirt too.

Hayden:Morning angel.

Masa:Morning..

He handed her the other cup and she allowed herself to indulge the rich caffeinated scent of the beverage.

Hayden:We're still going to make it through this.

Masa:I hope so.

Hayden kept quiet as they silently sipped on coffee. The doctor was about to walk in when

she paused at the door, taking in Hayden's magnificent backside. If only he wasn't a married man with a wife and kids. She opened the door much wider and fixed her cheerful voice.

Jasmine:Morning.

Both:Morning.

Jasmine:If I may ask again is the nurse qualified?

Hayden:She is, she is going home?

Jasmine:If she is constantly monitored.

Masa:She will be, I'm always at home and the nurse is also hired full time..

Jasmine:You'll have to sign a few forms and we'll take her there with the ambulance.

Masa:It's okay..just as long as she gets the help she needs.

Even if it kills her inside.

The doctor walked out and Hayden just held her. Masa let him. His love language was touch and it gave him comfort to be always touching her. She leaned against him.

Hayden:While she's still asleep can we go check the results?

Masa's heart stopped for a literal second. She didn't even want to think about it.

Hayden:It's better now than later..

Masa kept quiet.

Hayden:angel?

Masa:Ok(small voice)

He quietly led her out of the room as they



walked to the doctor's office.

The doctor smiled a bit as the couple sat down.

Doctor:Just in time. I was about to call you guys.  
I have the results from the bloodwork with me..

She lifted the unsealed envelope.

Doctor:U haven't opened it as of yet.

She said as she handed Masa the envelope.

Doctor:Open it.

Masa's hands shook slightly as she opened the white envelope. She pulled the paper out and her heart cracked in her chest as the piece of paper fell out of her shaky hands. Hayden quietly picked it up and read the results. 100% positive. She was pregnant. Oh Lord!

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*96\*

At the hospital

The doctor went on about what Masa should do, highlighting her weight especially while Masa's mind was blank. She was pregnant? The injection failed her and this was the worst time to have a baby let alone deal with a pregnancy.

After the doctor was finished she left the room

to go get pills for Masa.

Hayden:Babe?

Masa didn't answer. This was hard and complicated. Really complicated. Hayden sighed when the doctor returned ten minutes later and handed him the pills. They were to come for a scan two months later to monitor the growth of the foetus.

Hayden led Masa out. He understood what this meant. If at all Arielle was okay maybe it would've been convenient and maybe a joyful pregnancy but now...the timing was all wrong.

Hayden:We'll talk about it okay love?

She nodded.

That afternoon

After Arielle was comfortable at home and the nurse was sure she was okay, Masa and Hayden walked out of her room.

Hayden led Masa to their room and they sat down on the couch.

Hayden:Babe?

Masa:Yes..

Hayden:I know you didn't expect this pregnancy and amidst all that we're going through it's going to stress you. A lot can go wrong, you had a traumatic birthing experience less than a year ago, I saw how bad it was and we almost lost you, Arielle is sick and you're stressed.

Masa lifted her head to listen to him. She wanted to know where he was heading with that point.

Hayden:I was suggesting(paused)we get a safe abortion.

Masa slowly let go of his hand.

Masa:What?

Hayden:Babe we can still have more kids in future, with all that's happening it's not the right time and I admit I'm at fault, we should've used protection..

Masa:You want me to a-kill?

Hayden:Babe I hate suggesting this but this is for the best.

Masa shook her head.

Masa:I never expected that from you. Yes I know rhe circumstances we're in but an abortion?

Hayden:Think about it.

Masa moved away from him.

Hayden:Babe...

Masa:I would never Hayden. I can't kill, I'm sorry.

She stood up and walked to the dressing table where she picked her car keys and phone.

Hayden:Masa! We're still talking.

Masa:You're talking and I listened. I need fresh air.

Hayden:Where the hell are you going now?

Masa:A place where no one will ask me to be a murderer. It's going to take a lot for this pregnancy to sink in but I'm not aborting.

Hayden stood up and held her hand as she was about to walk out.

Masa:Let me go, wa mpolaya.

Hayden:You're in no state to drive.

Masa:Are you my father?

Hayden:I'm your husband.

Masa:And my husband would not ask me to do such.

She used her other hand to hit his chest.

Masa:ntlogele wa mpolaya.

Hayden:Masa stop it!!

Masa:Hayden let go of me or else I'm screaming.

He slowly let go of her and she rubbed her wrist which was starting to go pink. He looked at her wrist and he was about to apologise when she just ran down the stairs.

He followed her down stairs but she was already in her car and reversing it out of the garage. He covered his face with his hands.

Meanwhile Masa held back tears as she drove out of the yard. She needed to think even if it's just for an hour or so.

She connected her phone to the car bluetooth system and drove off. Along the way she parked by a tree by the roadside and called Hayden's mother back.

Letty:Hello?

Masa:You wanted us to meet?

Letty:Is my house okay?

Masa:send directions(sighing)

She will hear her out and just try to find a secluded place to process all her emotions.



At Cane's house

Joy sat on the couch stewing. Cane didn't speak to her when he left this morning even when she tried to apologise for last night. He wasn't having it at all.

At Letty's house

Masa realised it was next to Reginah's house. The woman Hayden truly loved. The one he would never suggest an abortion to. She laughed bitterly wiping the tears that fell.

She got out of the car and knocked on the door. Letty opened the door. Although she knew what this woman did, she felt so sorry for her. She was so thin and the clothes she was wearing

made it so worse. It was so sad to see what she has withered to. As much as Hayden didn't want to forgive this woman, she looked like she might die anytime and say her final goodbyes yet she wasn't even close to 50. It was sad to watch. She unconsciously rubbed her tummy as she smiled.

Letty:Nice to finally meet you. Masa right?

Masa:Yes and hi.

Letty:Even bald you're beautiful.

Masa laughed a bit as she stepped inside the house. It was unkempt. From riches to rags? Was this how the story was going to end for her?

Letty:Forgive the mess and I'm sorry I can't offer tea or anything.

Masa:It's okay but thank you for the kindness.

She led her to the couch and Masa moved the

papers on the couch and sat down.

Letty: There is a lot I want to tell you and congratulations on your wedding to Hayden.

Masa: Thank you.

Letty told Masa everything and truthfully. She had nothing to lose at this point.

Masa listened and at some point was appalled by what Letty had done but then money had the power to blind people.

Letty: I was at his office more than a month ago and he kicked me out.

Masa: He is still hurt. You killed the love of his life and you had a hand in his father's death. That's a lot of trauma to deal with.

Letty: The accident was a huge mistake and I paid for that. I was in jail then a mental institution. No one came to visit. It was pain

enough.

Masa sighed.

Letty:But there is something I also wanted to tell you.

She stood up and walked away. Masa waited trying to put Hayden's past together from what she knew, what Hayden told her and from what his mother told her.

Letty walked back holding the photos in her hands.

Letty:I did something terrible.

Masa:Hmm?

Letty:When Hayden was born...

Masa sat upright. Letty handed Masa the

photos and she looked at the black and white pictures of two babies. The babies looked like Hudson when he was still a newborn.

Letty: Hayden had a twin.

Masa blinked before her eyes widened.

Letty: When they were both born this other couple had just lost their child. At that time I wasn't that motherly and I didn't know what I was going to do with two kids because the scans never showed that we were going to have two kids. I have them the other one.

Masa: Did his dad know?

Letty: He wasn't there when I gave birth. He came a day later because he was out of the country on business.

Letty handed Masa more photos.

Letty: The couple sent pictures of the boy up

until he was a year old when I told them to stop and that I will never demand him back.

Masa chocked on her spit.

Masa:You gave away a baby just like that?

Letty nodded. She had sworn to herself that she was going to take this secret to the grave.

Masa turned the phot around and the name of the twin was written at the back.

Masa:No ulterior motives? For money maybe?

Letty:No. They looked sad and I was rather kind that time when I gave him away.

Masa:Wow! Ema pele just like that? Tsa tanki ngwana ke yoo? A whole human being you pushed?

Letty:Yes.

Masa:what a wow!

Letty:I told the nurses not to tell anyone and the couple registered the child as theirs and I left the hospital with only Hayden.

Masa couldn't quite process Letty's logic.

Letty:You can tell him, he'll hate me more but it's okay. I'm used to it..

Masa sighed and looked around.

Letty:I never did right by Reginah. She was the woman he loved and I thought she was after money. I mean..

Masa:Well I'm surprised by the amount of information you just gave me..

Masa looked around the house.

Masa:I'll be back okay?

Letty:You're coming back?

Masa:In an hour. Besides I need something to

do to think.

Letty just nodded as Masa walked out, leaving the pictures on the sofa.

At Sir Seretse Khama International Airport

Tessa walked through the half full airport while talking to the phone.

Tessa:Friend I can't see you, can't believe you came here all the way from Canada.

Her:Believe it girl..

Tessa bumped into someone and her phone fell down. She scrambled to pick it up and she looked up.

Tessa:Hayden?



What was he doing at the airport?

.

.

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*97\*

At Sir Seretse Khama International Airport

The man looked at Tessa. Who was Hayden?

Him:Excuse me, I don't know who you're talking about.

Tessa:Hayden? You also don't remember me?

Tessa?

Him:Woman this must be a case of mistaken identity.

Tessa:What?

Him:My apologies for the phone.

He took out his card and handed it to her.

Him:If you want your phone fixed. Excuse me and have a good day.

Tessa frowned and rubbed her eyes. It was broad daylight and Hayden just acted as if he was seeing her for the first time. He walked away and she wanted to follow him but she remembered she had to pick up her best friend from Canada. She made the effort to come check on her so she has to. She will deal with this later.

At Letty's house

Masa returned with cleaning supplies and some food.

Letty: You didn't have to do that.

Masa: It's nothing.

She got the cleaning supplies first. She should probably start cleaning before she can put the groceries in the pantry.

Letty: I don't want to make you guys fight, you should probably go.

Masa: It's okay. I should get started with the kitchen. Will you be able to do the bedrooms though?

Letty: Yes.

Masa: Alright.

Three hours later Masa lay exhausted on the couch. She took a bite out of the pie she had bought earlier. What time was it anyway? She exhausted herself to the bone and she was sure her mind was cleared. Blank.

Meanwhile in her car her phone rang unanswered for the 20th time as Hayden hung up yet again as her phone directed him to voicemail. He was actually worried that something might've happened to her. He knows she didn't agree with his suggestion but she could at least answer her phone to let him know that she was breathing wherever she was.

For now Ari was still sleeping and he was with the kids in the lounge. He had to cover up for why their mother wasn't around. He just wished

she would answer her damn phone.

Masa fell asleep on Letty's couch and Letty sighed seeing her out on the couch. She was cleaning with such ferocity as if she wanted to erase something from her mind.

Letty just made her way to Hayden's old room. Funny thing was that it was intact. She never touched anything ever since he had stopped staying there from the time he was 19. She walked to his wardrobe and got out the spare blankets that had a whiff of his old cologne. She walked out with the blanket and covered Masa with it. She had her small hands over her stomach and she wondered if she was pregnant or was it something she always did.

She honestly didn't have to do all this cleaning.

She was too good to her, for someone who has hurt people Hayden's wife was too good. Too perfect. Maybe at first that's what irked her about Reginah. She was too good to be true. Too perfect. She sighed in regret. It was of no use. Hayden wouldn't forgive her and she would never see her grandkids. Hell she didn't even exist to Hayden. She looked at his wife once again, maybe it was a blessing that he got good women and not women who were like her.

Masa slept peacefully and Letty just walked to the kitchen. Her fridge had food and her pantry had food. Hell she had offered cash and said that regardless of a person's past sins everyone deserved human decency. Had argued that she wasn't the one to judge and wouldn't throw the first stone.

She literally forced the money in her hand so that she can eat and at least buy clothes that fit her.

At the Smith's

Hayden was getting worried now as he tried calling her for the thousandth time. She still wasn't answering her phone. What if her heart was failing her wherever she was?

He dialed the tracking company.

Hayden:Hello.

Him:Sir..

Hayden:I need you to track the location of my wife's car.

Him:On it sir.

Hayden:Send the location.

Him:Of course.

He hung up and headed to Arielle's room. She looked better than last night. They were certainly going to fight this.

He kissed her cheek and walked to the twins' room before heading to Hudson's room. All his kids, sleeping peacefully. He just needed to find the queen of the castle. They fought but she has never done this before.

His phone beeped and he saw the location that the tracking company just sent. He frowned confused. This location was too familiar. He grabbed his car keys and cellphone as he walked out of the house and locked the door



using his own key.

At Gaborone

Tessa took a cab to school after she had made sure her friend was settled in a guesthouse. She just had a week before schools closed and they had to wait for the next academic year. Her grades looked positively good so far so she was winning in that department.

She paid the driver as he parked in front of her block. She was safe and now she had to unravel the mystery that was Hayden. Why would he act as if he didn't know her?

She quickly made her way to her dorm and fortunately her roommate was still awake so

she didn't have to use her key.

Tessa:hey.

Her:Hii...

She sat down on the bed and looked at the business card. Mr Davis? Interesting.

At Letty's house

Hayden's car parked outside and he looked through the gate. Yep. That was his wife's car. What the hell was she doing here? He reigned in his temper that was bursting at the seams at the fact that his wife. His fucking wife was here knowing very well how he felt. What the hell do you call that?

He pressed the intercom hoping it still worked.

Inside the house Letty frowned as the intercom sounded. It was late and opening the gate at this time would be risky especially since it was only two females present in this house. She wasn't concerned about her own welfare but rather Masa's. If anything happened to her, she wouldn't be able to live with herself and it would add on to the long list of why Hayden would never forgive her.

Hayden pressed the intercom again and he saw the door opening. Great! The person he had completely written off.

Letty walked to the gate and noticed it was Hayden. She immediately retraced her steps and pressed the button to open the gate.

It slid open and Hayden walked in.

Letty:H-

Hayden:I'm here for my wife.

She gave up and opened the door wider as he stepped in. His presence filling the whole room and making it feel smaller than it really was. He found her sleeping on the couch with a small pout. He gently picked her up and unawares Masa snuggled into his chest, as if her body automatically knew who was carrying her.

Hayden looked at Letty once more and around. He noticed Masa's car keys on the table and he tried to pick them up without dropping her or disturbing her peace. When he got the keys he walked out. He will be back for her car first

thing in the morning since it was parked inside the yard.

He walked to his car and opened the door, laid her down gently in the backseat and closed the door. He jogged to the driver's seat and got inside. He looked at his wife one more time. She has a lot of explaining to do.

He drove off.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*98\*

## At the Smiths

Masa woke up and she stretched her body before she was fully aware of where she was. Her weak heart pounded in her chest. How did she get home? Did she drive herself?

She doesn't remember driving herself doing so, the last time she checked she was at Letty's house and Hayden didn't know.

She glanced at Hayden's side of the bed and it was empty. She placed her hand over her heart, silently praying.

The door opened and Hayden stood by the door in only his boxers. He looked at her guilt stricken eyes. Ah. They were not going to sway him, she had a lot of answering to do.

Masa:M-m-morning.

She stuttered when she was nervous about anything and she couldn't quite form the words. He once asked her about it and she said her tongue got heavy so she had to force the words out.

Hayden:Morning indeed.

She was waiting for him to ask questions or anything but he smiled and made his way inside the room, heading to the bathroom. She got out of bed and made her way down the stairs heading straight to the garage. Only her other car and one of his cars was in there. She rubbed

her temples heading to Arielle's room. The nurse was next to her bedside.

Masa:Morning.

Nurse:Morning mam..

It seemed as if whilst the drugs were in Arielle's system she was going to be drowsy. Different side effects for different people. She just kissed Arielle on the forehead before she walked out and made her way to the kitchen. How was she going to approach this matter. How? She couldn't tell if Hayden was angry or happy or just any emotion.

She looked at the food on the table and shook her head. She wasn't in the mood for food not when she had a lot to think about. Or she can eat and think, she stared at her flat tummy.



Masa:I can do it for you since your father wants you dead hmm..

She didn't hear him approaching when she had said that last statement. Guilt washed over him as Masa opened the fridge.

Masa:So I don't know if I'm carrying one or two or even three of you here because your dad has wild genes but you have four siblings. Two brothers and two sisters you see..I don't know why I talk to my stomach when I'm pregnant but it's soothing...

Hayden just listened to her ranting to her flat tummy.

Masa:I'm still hurt you know, your dad if he was with the love of his life ka bo go satwe abortion. But since it's me, your mother ke fok fok hela.(laughing)But I'm not aborting you, I would

rather die than kill you..every child is special. No matter the circumstances. We should light a candle for your sister or go back to church. I'm not much of a church person b-

She turned to find Hayden staring at her. Her tongue became heavy as words failed to leave her mouth. Hayden looked at Masa again, she believed he didn't love her. For sure she wasn't Reginah he knew that but he loved her for her and he never compared the two. He hated how she doubted his love for her and that his own words made her doubt his love for her.

Masa:uh-uhm..

She looked at him before she sucked in a deep breath.

Masa:I'm sorry for going to see your mother without informing you. It was wrong of me

especially since I know how you feel about her.

She finally said as she picked her plate and walked out leaving him standing there. There was too much tension between the two of them and she wasn't spoiling for a fight.

Hayden:Masa can we talk about this?

Masa:(sighing)sure.

He followed her to the couch and she sat on the couch opposite his instead of sitting next to him like they always do when they talk.

Masa:Can I go first? Thank you. Uhm your mother called the day before yesterday wanting to talk and I was like sure. So yesterday after our fight I wanted to breathe so I called her and I wanted to hear what she had to say.

She paused.

Masa:She told me basically the same things you told me and I heard her, she regrets her actions but that's not the point. She told me something that was shocking.(looked at him before twiddling with her fingers)Apparently you have a twin.

Hayden raised a skeptical eyebrow. Masa was gullible alright.

Masa:Believe me or not, I saw the pictures but that's it, you have a twin. All in all my sincere apologies Mr Smith. It will never happen again.

She looked at the plate she was holding. She lost her appetite already.

Masa:And I'm not aborting the child Hayden. I hate the fact you even suggested that to me(chuckling)I have to go lie down.

She walked out and he leaned back. He should probably go get her car.

In the bedroom Masa lied down and rubbed her tummy as she closed her eyes. Hayden walked inside the bedroom and looked at her cradling her stomach.

He walked out as he dialed his mother in-law.

Hayden:Hello..

Ma Masa:Hayden hi..

Hayden:Can you come over?

Ma Masa:Is anything wrong?

Hayden:I have to do something, can you take care of Masa for me? Make sure she eats and takes her pills. She has lost a bit of weight.

Ma Masa:I'll be there, how's Ari?

Hayden:She is still under observation here at home but you can come check on her. Thank you so much.

Ma Masa:It's nothing. Bye.

Hayden said his goodbyes and walked out.

At Letty's house

The taxi stopped in front of the house and he got out. He pressed the intercom and the gate opened. He stepped inside the yard and he

wanted to get the car but what Masa said about him having a twin stopped him. There was no way he had one right? This woman was just bluffing.

He knocked on the door and Letty opened the door.

With no greeting or anything like that he went straight to the point.

Hayden:Do I have a twin?

Letty just picked the photos Masa left and gave them to Hayden. He didn't want to believe it at all.

Letty:I'm sorry. You can hate me more now but I'm the one who asked Masa to meet, don't take out your anger on her rather take it all out on me. She is a good person. Too good and I

guess that's good. I'm sorry for what I did all these years and I know sorry won't fix anything but I really am.

Hayden shook his head. How evil was she? He separated two children at birth. Letty let him think all he wanted. Still won't change a thing.

Letty:His name is at the back of one of the photos.(sighing)

Hayden looked at her one more time before he walked to Masa's car and got inside. He started the car, reversed and drove off.

At Gaborone

Tessa checked the time. This certain Mr Davis was late. Of course she used the excuse that



her phone needed repairing and that she was a student. All that crap.

He sat down next to her and Tessa carefully looked at him. He looked like Hayden but..

She looked at his arms and they were clear. Hayden had tattoos adorning his chest, back and arms making him looked rugged and sexy.

Tessa:Who are you?

The man chuckled.

Him:I'm Christian Davis..

Tessa:Wow!

She pressed her phone and went to Hayden's profile before showing him the phone screen.

Tessa:You look like this man..

Christian frowned. He looked like him though they had differences if you look carefully.

Tessa: Anyhow that's none of my business. Sorry for mistaking you as Hayden. You must be twins or something.

Christian: Maybe.

He had a smooth American accent. Really smooth but her friend was waiting for her. She was about to stand up when Christian stopped her.

Christian: You seem to know this Hayden well if you can call me by his name...

Tessa chuckled.

Tessa: Everyone in this country knows him, most people probably think you are him and

it might create a scandal since he is married and you are here with me...

Christian looked around and for sure everyone was looking at them. It was a rather public space and he didn't know this country that much.

Tessa:But I'm going to Francistown next week with my best friend. You can tag along and meet him there.

Christian:I'll think about it. It seem a bit too sudden but thank you for your kindness.

She smiled.

Tessa:Sure Mr Davis. I have to go.

She walked away and Christian leaned back,lost in thought.

.

.

\*

\*

A WEEK LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*99\*

At the Smiths

Masa sat in front of the tv with the kids as they all debated about the movie they were supposed to watch next.

Masa:I'm choosing the next movie.

Smith Jr:No fair mom. It's supposed to go in order. I chose the first one, then Avery then Ari now Hudson gets to choose.

Masa:What does he know about movies?

Avery:You always say we should let the baby watch tv..

Masa:I don't like you guys.

They all grinned as Hudson laid on top of her force feeding her the grapes.

Masa:Wena ikete..

He just giggled and Masa pinched his cheek.

Hudson:mama aah.

She laughed and opened her mouth as he picked more grapes from the bowl throwing them in her mouth.

Masa smiled chewing them as the twins drank their juice. Arielle ate the orange as she went through the channels.

Hudson:Mama...

Masa:Hmm..

Hudson:Aah..

Masa laughed opening her mouth and before Hudson could feed her the grapes his weight was off of her.

Hayden grabbed him and placed him on his bare shoulders as the child giggled.

Hayden:Buddy that's my wife, I get to feed her grapes not you(laughing)

Masa looked up at Hayden as he smiled and placed Hudson on the carpet.

Hayden:Can I steal your mother for a minute?

Avery:Even if it's an hour, we're cool.

Hayden:Sweet. Thank you.

Hayden gave Masa his hand and she took it as she stood up. He led her out of the lounge and

walked up the stairs holding her hand. He led her to the bedroom where he sat her down on his lap. She wanted to resist by wiggling but he wasn't having it.

Hayden:Look at me..

She did and he sighed.

Hayden:Your pouting is not cute Masa, we need to talk. Like adults now.

Masa:We talked.

Hayden:We didn't. Nna sentle tlhemma.(sit down properly)

She looked down and realised what it was doing to him.

Hayden:Thank you though it's not going to help but thank you.(taking in a deep breath)I'm starting off with an apology.

She just looked at him blankly.

Hayden:I'm not trying to justify myself but I was

looking at our current predicaments. We have a lot on our plates, you had a difficult birth and you almost died Masa. I had to think about that and we also need to shift our attention towards Arielle without making the other kids feel like they aren't being given enough attention. Masa that doesn't mean I love you any less, it was a suggestion that I felt I needed to run by you. You break easily and it would be one less thing to worry about. Then we will have more kids when everything is looking up. It's still okay that you want to keep the pregnancy. I'm totally down with it just as long as you take care of yourself. Eat and try not to stress.

He rubbed her arm as she thought about what he said.

Hayden:Masa I love you okay? You don't need to compare yourself to Regie. She is not here, you are and you are the woman I love.

Masa:I guess I overreacted.



Hayden:Guess?

Masa:I overreacted. I'm sorry. And for the visiting your mother incident..

Hayden:Turns out she was right.

Masa:Huh?

Hayden:There is an article of a similar guy being seen in Gaborone. He looks like me.

Masa:How bizarre.

Hayden:Yeah.

Masa:So what are you going to do now?

Hayden:Right now? I'm focusing on my family.

Masa:I'm sorry once again and I understand your point.

Hayden:Don't compare yourself to Regie. I never do that at all Masa, don't do that to yourself. When did we start comparisons?

She looked down.

Masa:Uh. I'm sorry?

Hayden:Wa lapisa waitse(you're annoying you know that)

He pulled her to him and hugged her.

Hayden:We talk woman, don't pout all week.

Masa:I wasn't pouting..

Hayden:You were though I thought we could put those lips to good use.

She flushed and he laughed close to her ear.

Hayden:Promise me we'll talk things out instead of you walking out blowing things out of proportion.

Masa:I hate fighting with you.

Hayden:Then don't, it's simple as that.

Masa:And you didn't go.

Hayden laughed.

Hayden: You thought I'll leave you after a single fight? Woman it will take a lot for me to walk out on us, you need therapy.

Masa: You too. (sitting up right) Kana babe, hear me out. I know your mother did you wrong on so many occasions but you need to let go for your sanity.

Hayden: It's different. She didn't take anything precious from you. She took my father away, she took my lifeline away an-

He paused as he watched Masa quietly digesting it.

Hayden: Masa I-

Masa: It's okay. I understand. I was just suggesting, forgiving those who did you wrong gives your soul peace at times. Try it and maybe meeting that estranged twin will be somewhat refreshing. I don't know in what sense but it can do you a whole lot of good.

Hayden:Masa..

Masa:I'm not upset. But don't let the anger destroy you, if I get therapy you do the same or else we're going to both explode and leave this marriage in smithereens.

She kissed his cheek and stood up walking out.

At the hospital

Tessa answered her phone just as she was stepping out of the taxi to go the hospital she willingly volunteered at.

Tessa:Chris..

He chuckled. It was strange that she was talking to Hayden's photocopy. Similar but yet

so different.

Christian:I did my research on the guy.

Tessa:And?

Christian:He is rich..

Tessa laughed.

Tessa greeted the receptionist as she walked inside.

Tessa:Everyone knows that.

Christian:And I'm nervous. I'm just a simple guy really..

Tessa:He also had humble roots.

Christian:Don't try to make me feel better about myself..

Tessa:He isn't rude or anything of that sort. He just keeps to himself a lot and has a really intimidating stare. He looks like you Chris.

Christian:Do you have his number?

Tessa:Yep but he blocked me.

Christian:What did you do?

Tessa:I was crossing boundaries. Let's leave it at that. I'll forward you the number or better yet go to his office buildings, I'm sure they will help you. I have to go and bye and goodluck.

Christian:Thank you. Have a nice day.

Tessa:I will.

She hung up and walked to the office of the doctor she humbly asked to shadow. She opened her backpack to take out her light pink scrubs. She might as well learn the ropes and she was passionate about this. Really passionate.

Meanwhile Christian's phone beeped and Tessa had sent the number. He sucked in a deep

breath and dialed the number of his so called twin. The phone rang for a while and he was about to hand up when it was answered.

Voice:Hello?

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*100\*

At the Smiths

Hayden:Hello?

There was silence and he was about to hang up when the caller answered.

Caller:Hello, you're talking to Christian Davis.

Hayden paused as the name rung in his head. When the familiarity of the name set in he cleared his throat. This was faster than he expected.

Christian:Hello?

Hayden:I'm still here..

Christian:I got your number from someone who knows you. My apologies if I cornered you.

Hayden:Okay.

His tongue suddenly felt heavy as his head whirled. He had a lot to say but he was



speechless if he could put it that way.

Christian: Did I call at a bad time?

Hayden: I'll call back.

Christian nodded. It was better than nothing.

Hayden stared at his phone.

Meanwhile Masa leaned against the counter in the kitchen. She couldn't help compare herself to Reginah. Hayden held her in high regard. That she is not here and you are here statement didn't sit well with her. Of course she knew Hayden loved Reginah but no need to show it to her that she is just a substitute when there are many girls he could've married or better yet that one with Reginah's heart. Tears filled her eyes and she used her fists to wipe the tears away, she shouldn't even be crying. They made up

right?

Her lips quivered lightly as more tears ran down her cheeks. Why was she starting to doubt his love more and more these days? It was suddenly hard for her to believe that he loved her now. Was she just a mother to the children and she could've left it at that instead of committing herself to him?

She didn't hear his footsteps, jus felt arms wrap around her.

Hayden:Babe? What's wrong?

Masa:Nothing.

She pushed him back and and wiped her tears.

Masa:Just being hormonal. It's nothing.

He could tell she was lying and most times he wanted the truth instead of being fed lies.

Hayden:Baby I want the truth. Let's start over, why are you crying?

Masa:It's stupid Hayden. I'm okay.

She went on to open the fridge but he pulled her back and picked her up. Placing her on the counter.

Hayden:Masa..

He trailed off.

Masa:We just made up, we shouldn't be fighting.

Hayden:The truth Mrs Smith.

Masa:I feel like a substitute.

Hayden looked at her stunned and he knew what she meant. Where the hell were the insecurities coming from?

Hayden:Why do you feel that way?

Masa sighed and looked up as Hayden kept his eyes on her.

Masa:I-I feel like you married me because I'm here and she is not. Your words not mine. That makes me feel like a substitute, just here for the kids and the sex.

Hayden:Dammit Masa!(low voice)and you're blowing things out of proportion again,making a huge issue out of something so small. Why?

Masa kept quiet.

Hayden:You're your own worst enemy here. You keep finding tiny reasons to downgrade yourself. Do you know how much I hurt when you suddenly ask me out of the blue why you? Why a whore like you when I could have a perfect girl. It hurts me that you see yourself as something not worthy of love and I show you Masa, every goddamn day that I love you. That you are not

your past. You made mistakes and grew from them, you're a great mother, my life partner but you fail to love yourself fully. I'm starting to realise that the words they said about you had a bigger psychological effect on you than I imagined to the point that you now question me? You compare yourself to a ghost? Someone who died years ago Masa, she was grown. Maybe she had a past and grew from it, we'll never know but this needs to stop Masa.

He stopped and breathed in looking at her as she wiped tears. Now she was crying.

Hayden:Ng ng Masa. Sutlha dikeledi tseo(Wipe those tears)

She did as told and looked at him with shaking lips.He had been babying(word does not exist)her for the longest time now and instead

her self image went down.

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Rra?

Hayden:Come here.

She jumped off the countertop and walked to him. He held her in his arms.

Hayden:Monday. Therapy. Deal?

Masa:Okay.

Hayden:Ke serious.

Masa:I'll attend it.

Hayden:Good. As much as you're annoying, I love you okay?

Masa:okay..

At Cane's house

In the space of a week both Cane and Joy were living like strangers in the house. Joy had apologised and Cane merely nodded his head everyday as he went to work. They were not sleeping in the same room on top of that.

It was the weekend and Joy had wanted them to spend time together as a family like they always did but instead he said he was busy and had stuff to do. An hour later he had left the house.

She sighed. It was her fault. Maybe they will still work it all out, in a calmer situation.

At the Smiths

Masa sat between Hayden's legs as Smith Jr and Hayden watched soccer.

Masa:I hate this. Grown men running after a ball. Useless. Utterly useless.

Smith Jr:Mama which team are you supporting?

Masa:Did he hear what I said?

Hayden:Boy she's supporting my team.

Smith Jr:No way...

Avery and Arielle stood up. They hated football. Why their mother tolerated it was beyond their little minds.

Hudson laid on his back as he ate. It was relieving that they made healthy snacks for family time otherwise Hudson would be a really fat baby.

Smith Jr:No! No!



Hayden:Yes!

Masa looked at them both n shook her head.

Masa:Which team isn't playing that you both hate?

Both:Chelsea.

Masa:I support Chelsea ee, tell me when it plays so I annoy you though I know nothing..

She stood up and helped Hudson up on his feet.

Masa:To the kitchen mister..

She walked slowly holding his hand as he walked.

The intercom rang.

Hayden:Smith the gate..

Smith:Papa I'm watching, mom?

Masa:Tswang mo go nna lona(leave me alone)(shouting from the kitchen)

Hayden pointedly looked at Smith Jr who relented and went to press the buttons to open the gate.

Cane drove inside the yard. Arielle had another session tomorrow and he was here to check on her. He knocked on the door and Smith Jr opened.

Smith Jr:Hi.

Cane:Hello buddy, you keep on growing taller.

Smith Jr:thanks..

Cane walked in and found the guys watching football.

Cane:Hey.

Hayden:Hey hey..

Masa walked out in shorts holding Hudson.

Masa:Oh, hello.

Cane:Hello..

They all looked happy and his eyes lingered on Masa longer than necessary.

Masa walked away and he didn't know where she disappeared to.

Cane:Where is Ari?

Hayden:In her room or with Avery.

Cane:Alright.

He stood up and walked to Arielle's room where he found her with Avery.

Cane:Hello..

Arielle smiled.

Arielle:Hi father..

She looked so much better but they knew tomorrow is her second session and it might get worse after that.

Later that evening

He was about to go when Masa offered dinner. She was a great cook. They all sat at the dining table as he observed their family dynamics. Maybe somehow he had a lapse of judgement when it came to Masa.

The light chatter that took place at the dinner

table was refreshing and there was no animosity or sibling rivalry.

Masa:Once everything is settled, you should bring Joy and the baby. Like a family dinner. With Blair present. Family is important.

He drank his juice nodding.

Masa watched Arielle eating before Hayden nudged at her.

Hayden:Eat.

Masa:I wi-

Hayden:What did we talk about?

Masa just rolled her eyes.

Masa:Eish.

Hayden:Eat woman.

She started eating and looked at him. Hayden

laughed as he ate his food. The both of them oblivious to how Cane looked at them.

.

.

\*

\*

\*FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*101\*

At the Smiths

After Cane bid his goodbyes, the couple decided it was bedtime for the kids. Although there were a few objections from the oldest, they all relented and went to sleep. Masa made sure Hudson was asleed before she walked to

the bedroom where she found Hayden sitting on the bed. Lost in his thoughts.

Masa:Penny for your thoughts?

Hayden smiled as he patted to the empty space.

Masa sat down keeping her eyes on him and she held his hand.

Hayden:The supposed twin called.

Masa:When?

Hayden:Today. Earlier on. He wants us to meet and all.

Masa:Let me guess, you said you'll call back because he caught you off guard and you hate being caught off guard.

Hayden:(small smile)am I that obvious?

Masa:I know you. What is the way forward?

Hayden:I have no idea. Honestly speaking.

Masa sighed and rubbed his hand.

Masa:Well I know you can stew over it and decide not to call the guy up but then you will live with the what ifs, what if I met him? What if I lost a brother I decided not to forge a relationship with? Those questions will haunt you. If you guys meet, you honestly have nothing to lose. You don't lose me, the kids, your fortune or anything. It's better knowing he exists and deciding if you want him to be part of your life after you meet him don't you think?

Hayden:I-I guess you're right.

Masa:As I said, it is solely up to you. I'll support whatever decision.

Hayden:Thank you.

Masa>Welcome.

Hayden:Care for a massage?

Masa:I'm good, we have a long day tomorrow.

Hayden:And stress is not good for the baby.



Masa looked at her still flat tummy then back at Hayden.

Masa:I will have to murder you if I'm not carrying one child.

Hayden:Empty threats. Come here.

He pulled her to him and kissed her hard.

Hayden:I have better ideas.

Masa laughed as Hayden got on top of her.

The following morning

At the hospital

Masa and Hayden were at the kids with Ari who kept fidgeting. They were repeating that awful experience once again and she hated feeling

helpless to help her daughter.

Cane arrived moments later and they smiled at him as Hayden held Masa close. The what ifs had been playing on his mind the whole night. She was a great mother and she had so much love to give, the fact that the more he thought about it, the more he realized that Masa had used him as a substitute for Hayden since she couldn't have him at the time.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa grabbed her bag before heading to the kitchen for an apple.

Ma Tessa:Ever since you arrived you haven't been spending time with us at home.

Tessa:Mama I just volunteered at this hospital,

I'm here for like two months so we have time to spend together.

Ma Tessa:It's a Sunday.

Tessa:A doctor's work is never through..

Ma Tessa laughed.

Ma Tessa:And to think that you wanted to be a writer

Tessa paused, her mind suddenly taking her to the ten year old her who was bright and very bubbly.

Tessa:Well things kind of changed and I love what I do.

Ma Tessa:I can see that. Well all the best.

Tessa:Alright.

She hugged her mother, kissing her cheek

lightly.

Tessa:Tia is still asleep. I'll be home by lunchtime though since it's a Sunday.

Ma Tessa:Alright baby. Bye.

Tessa:Love you lots woman.

She walked out of the house to go catch a taxi.

At the hospital

Yet again Masa watched Arielle react differently to the drugs in her system. This time it wasn't the drowsiness but it was a fever that scared her. She didn't know why her baby had to go through all that. Masa closed her eyes as tears trickled down her cheeks. Hayden held her in his arms.

Hayden:She'll be okay..okay?

Masa didn't answer back as Jasmine helped the nurses to regulate Arielle's temperature.

Cane just watched helplessly. His own daughter was going through the worst and the funny thing was that his wife didn't care. She didn't even give a damn and that made him question his decisions. What happened to the Joy who loved Arielle and would even play with the little girl? Meanwhile he was starting to develop feelings that were not there for his baby mama and it wasn't a good sign.

Hayden:I'm taking her out of the room okay?

Cane nodded as Hayden walked out while rubbing Masa's back.

They got to the benches and he just placed her head on his lap.

Hayden:Baby? I'm here. Ari will be okay. Our little girl will be healthy again, this is part of the treatment okay?

He rubbed her back as a way to calm her down if his words didn't do the job for him.

Meanwhile Tessa was on her way to the cafeteria when she paused. That was Hayden and Masa. What were they doing in the pediatric care unit? She stopped a nurse and asked her about them. She was sure they hadn't seen her, hell they weren't focused on her and it seemed as if Masa was sobbing.

Nurse:Oh. That cute couple there? Their little girl is on chemo.

That was when realization dawned on Tessa and she felt the weight of the guilt. She just had to be the one to do the worst.

Hayden just kept rubbing her back, every few seconds whispering in her ear. Maybe as a way to calm her down. She didn't know. As she looked at them, she went back to that Facebook roast about a week ago when everyone was on Masa's case including her. When in actual reality their family was going through something and she didn't fight back. They had the money to sue each and everyone who commented even the owner of the post because that was cyber bullying but they didn't.

She had to ask herself why she always kept bothering herself with Masa. Someone who

didn't give a damn about her and someone who didn't even see it necessary to chase after her.

She quickly passed by the couple, having surety that they didn't spot her. She sighed. A part of her wanted to apologise for her part in bashing Masa online but she knew maybe it was for the best they didn't know. She sighed. She said a small prayer for their child asking God to make her okay. That was the least she could do. It could suffice as an apology though it stung that she had a hand in breaking another woman. She didn't even know this. Tha-that maybe she had cut her hair because her child did and she was being a mother. Something she had no idea about.

.

.

.



\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*102\*

At the hospital

Hayden sighed once Masa had fallen asleep on his chest. He thought about what she said yesterday. He had to admit that he was curious about his twin brother and all. Maybe they can meet tomorrow evening because well his mornings and afternoons were preoccupied. They both promised each other to start therapy tomorrow and he never backed down on his word. Ever.

He kissed Masa's forehead before he dialed that number that had called yesterday.

Hayden:Hello..

Christian:Hello..

Hayden:I thought about what you said and what if we meet tomorrow?

Christian:It's still fine by me.

Hayden:Around 6pm maybe?

Christian:Okay. Give me the name of the place.

Hayden:First thing tomorrow morning.

Christian:Thank you.

Hayden:Alright. Goodbye.

He hung up and sighed. He just wished their little girl was going to be fine.

At Cane's house

Cane arrived late that night after he was sure that Arielle would be fine.

He found Joy waiting the darkness that engulfed the room before he switched on the lights.

Joy:How is Ari?

Cane paused and saw her swollen eyes.

Joy:Is she going to be okay? I did my research on leukemia..

Cane just unbuttoned his shirt as he passed her by the couch heading to the guest room where he has been sleeping these past few days.

Joy stood up defeated and followed Cane into the room.

Joy:I'm sorry. I apologise for what I said that night.

Cane:Okay.

Joy:Just okay? Okay?

Cane whirled to face her and she took a step back. Cautiously.

Cane:What else am I supposed to say?

Joy let out an exasperated sigh as she pushed her hair back.

Joy:I let my insecurities get the better of me. I'm sorry. Juni deserves to know his sister and I've been an obstacle. I'm sorry if it came across to you that I hate Arielle. I don't. I just wanted your attention to be on Juni because Ari had her time. I'm sorry.

Cane listened, throwing the shirt on the bed as he removed his belt. Joy could tell this was a topic that he didn't want to listen to.

Joy:I'm sorry. Sorry that I indirectly accused you of cheating on me with Masa. That was uncalled for and so low.

She took one last look at him and walked out. Cane sighed getting out of his trousers. He closed the door and threw himself on the bed.

Joy closed her teary eyes as she slid down the door of their bedroom. She ruined it. It was over. She looked at the ring on her finger and she removed it placing it on the cold white tile.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa laughed out loud and covered her mouth.

Tessa:Oh God!(laughing)

Christian:It actually happened.

Tessa:uh I do not believe you Mr.

Christian shrugged.

Christian:Are you working tomorrow?

Tessa looked at the newly plastered calendar on her wall. She was free tomorrow.

Tessa:lucky for you I don't have anything.

Christian:Care for brunch?

Tessa grinned. When was the last time she had brunch? More than a year ago at Canada.

Tessa:I would be delighted Mr Davis.

Christian:Thank you kind lady.

Tessa smiled like a fool pushing her hair back. The door opened and she just gave Tia a dead stare. Tia held her slip waist and gave Tessa the same stare.

Tia: Mom said you should join us for a movie.

Tessa placed the phone on her chest.

Tessa: I'm coming. Give me a few minutes.

Tia: Mom said now.

Tessa rolled her eyes.

Tessa: Be gone child.

Tia walked out.

Tia: Mama? She kicked me out. (shouting)

Tessa: Little devil.

She placed her phone back on her ear.

Tessa: Where was I? Sorry for that, the little devil decided to ruin my peace.

Christian laughed.

Christian:What did your sister do?

Tessa laughed.

Tessa:She's annoying gosh. A headache and a half.

Christian:I cannot relate..

Tessa sighed.

Tessa:Did you talk to him?

Christian:Yeah. Thank you for your help. When I came here I wasn't expecting to find out I had a twin.

Tessa:Life has a funny way of showing us signs.

Christian:Huh?

Tessa:huh?

A moment of silence passed before Christian spoke a word.



Christian: Good night Theresa.

Before she could say goodnight he hung up and the way he pronounced her name played in her mind.

Tessa: Night Chris (softly)

She laid on her bed for a while before she got up and walked out. To join her family in the lounge.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*103\*

The following morning

Masa took a silent shower with Hayden that early morning. Each lost in their own thoughts. The silence was somewhat comforting and they allowed each other that reprieve.

Masa got out first and Hayden was the one left to close the water. Yesterday had been a stressful day and today was a different story altogether. A part of him wanted to back out of going for therapy but he knew if he didn't then his wife wouldn't go and he wanted her to get better. Secretly hoping that he will move on from the past fully.

With distinct silence, the two got ready and

Masa tied a headscarf just this once. They would have to make sure that Arielle is okay and that she will be okay for the few hours they wouldn't be present.

Hayden finally broke the silence.

Hayden: How do you feel?

Masa paused and placed the makeup brush down. An exhausted sigh left her pink lips as her shoulders slumped from the proud and strong stance she had portrayed seconds ago.

Masa: Would it be wrong to say I don't know?

Hayden sat on the bed as he pulled the polo t-shirt over his head as his six pack lay hidden below the crisp white t-shirt. He ran his fingers over the subtle stubble that he had been too lazy to shave off this morning and he drew a

sigh too.

Hayden:It's not wrong sweetheart.

Masa nodded meekly as she stared at him for a few seconds before picking up the makeup brush, facing her reflection in the mirror once again. She ran the brush over her pale face, she's been looking oddly pale and she could only blame it on the pregnancy and stress.

Masa:Hayden?

Hayden:Yes?

Masa:Wha-nevermind.

Hayden:You can say it.

Masa:What if the baby doesn't survive?

Hayden:Don't say that okay? Everything will be okay and thank you for not listening to my madness.

Masa:huh?

Hayden:Me wanting you to abort. At some point I would've regretted it and what if it caused fertility issues moving forward?

Masa:True but we got this right?

Hayden:We definitely do, now please do join me for a bite.

Masa smiled as she stood up from the vanity table and took the hand he offered. He squeezed her small hand a bit. He will always be there for her till the very end or till life takes one of them.

He placed his hand on the small of her back, leading his wife down the stairs and to the kitchen where the help had prepared breakfast.

Masa:But not too much food. I might puke..

Hayden:Morning sickness?

Masa shrugged.

Masa:This pregnancy is weird. Like real weird motho wame..I hate vomiting.

Hayden:Maybe in the second trimester you'll be fine.

Masa:I want the baby out already.

Hayden:You talk too much. Eat.

Masa:Fine.

He passed her the oats and some yoghurt.

Masa:Thank you.

Hayden:I have a feeling that Hudson will not be happy once he finds out he isn't the last born.

Masa:boo hoo the child will heal.

Hayden shook his head.

Hayden:No wonder they call you dragon lady sometimes.

Masa placed the spoon down.

Masa:Excuse me?

Hayden cursed silently. Ooh! He let the name slip and now she looked at him expecting an answer.

Hayden:Nothing. Eat your breakfast dear.

Masa:You see all five of you. You and your kids...

Hayden:Calm down. It's the hormones babe. I didn't say anything.

Masa:Mxm..

She threw a grape at him.

Hayden:We're playing with food?

Masa picked another one and threw it at him again and he grinned making her laugh.

Masa:mxm. Wa lapisa(you're exhausting)

Hayden:And you love me for it.

Masa:Surprisingly so.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa wore a denim dress along with some gladiators as she got ready for her brunch with Christian.

Her phone rang and she tore her eyes away from the mirror as she went to pick it up.

Tessa:Hello?

Christian:Hello, I just sent the location details.

Tessa:Alright see you there. Bye.

She hung up and tied her hair into a slick puff before she started edging the edges. She looked cute.

She picked her phone and small bag before she walked out the door applying her lipgloss.



She passed her mother in the lounge.

Tessa:I'll be put for an hour or so.

Ma Tessa:O-okay. You look beautiful by the way.

Tessa flashed a cute smile.

Tessa:thank you mom. Love you and bye

She walked out the yard and made her way to the stop where she hailed a taxi.

Hours later

Tessa sat opposite Christian. It seemed that they had a lot in common.

Tessa:You should play the guitar for me.

Christian:I guess we'll find a date.

Tessa:Wait so like you are good?

He nodded with a cat like grin and she blinked before regaining her bearings.

They had been here for the past three hours. They had ordered their brunch and talked their way through it. She stirred the colourful cocktail with the straw and she sucked on the straw looking at him. Christian caught her stare.

Christian:What?

Tessa:Nothing. Keep talking.

He laughed, the deep rumble escaping his chest and she sucked her straw some more.

Unbeknownst to the two, Hayden and Masa walked inside the same place. Hayden pulled the chair for his wife and she sat down before he just pulled the chair to sit next to her.

Masa:Bathong! We're in a restaurant.

Hayden:Do I care baby girl?

Masa looked around as most people kept their eyes on them.

Masa:Nope.

Hayden:Exactly. What do you want to eat?

Masa:Anything is fine. My throat is dry..

Hayden lifted a sleek eyebrow.

Hayden:Pity for you Mrs Hayden no wines or cocktails for you.

Masa:Mathata a botshelo ga a hele(Life problems never cease)

Hayden rubbed her flat tummy and she pushed his hands awat laughing.

Hayden:As long as you're in there, your mother won't touch alcohol.

Masa:It's your fault..

Hayden:Can I order on your behalf?

She nodded and he signalled for a waiter. The first session was okay, it felt draining for the first hours but it turned okay.

After Hayden was done talking to the waiter he shifted his attention to her and placed his hand on her thigh.

From thereon they ventured into conversation with stolen kisses here and there and Masa reprimanding Hayden. His very touchy hand was threatening her current state of mind. She didn't want to be a puddle of emotions, he had the power to do that to her.

Hayden paid the bill and looked at his wife.

Hayden:We're done right?

Masa:Are we?

Hayden:I think we are.

He helped her stand up and walked to the door holding her from behind. Right at the door, he passed Christian and Tessa and he paused. Masa looked up and frowned. Hayden's breathing changed. Christian stared at Hayden. His identical twin.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*104\*

At the restaurant

The two brothers locked eyes as Masa held Hayden's hand sighing. Christian tore his eyes away from Hayden and Hayden looked at his wife. Masa rubbed his hand while looking back at him.

This was unexpected. They had agreed later today and it wasn't the right time. He hated being caught off guard and Masa could see that.

Masa:Excuse us for a few seconds(softly)

She pulled Hayden away and looked up at him.

Masa:How are we feeling about this?

Hayden:It's too sudden.

Masa:I hear you but look..

He turned and Christian was still there.

Masa: You guys can talk, I'll be in the car waiting for you. Maybe destiny had other plans my love  
hmm..

She stood on her tippy toes to kiss his lips softly and he wrapped his hand around her slim waist.

Hayden: Stay.

Masa: It's not my place. I'll be intruding. I'll be in the car and goodluck.

She kissed his cheek and walked away.

Tessa's eyes followed Masa. The fact that the short woman wasn't bothered by her presence and Hayden wasn't too. He looked like he had fallen for his wife. She had noticed their quiet

exchange before she looked at Christian who was shocked. Not quite believing he had seen his twin.

Tessa smiled tightly.

Tessa:Chris?

He looked at her.

Tessa:You can do this. Fate works in mysterious ways and we have no control of the universe, this is your chance. Take it with both hands okay?

She hugged him before she quickly broke it. She smiled again.

Tessa:I'll be moving around the shops. Ring when you guys are done, he's coming. Bye.

She walked away leaving Christian there to deal with Hayden.

Hayden cleared his throat.



Hayden:We can find a quiet spot to talk.

Christian:Of course but I don't know the area that well..

Hayden noted his distinct American accent. He didn't grow up here, interesting.

They both left the restaurant and Tessa stood a far distance looking at them. She just walked away and ventured into the mall. Meanwhile Masa pressed her phone to distract herself. She hoped and prayed this went well. For Hayden's sake. Her mind wondered to Letty. Was she okay? Did she know that her other son was in town? Was she coping? Did she lose more weight or was she eating the right food?

She stopped herself from calling. Hayden

wouldn't like that. She blamed her treasonous heart for seeing the best in everyone. She leaned back and scratched her head through the headscarf. She got fidgety and she sighed. Maybe she shouldn't wait in the car or else her own company was going to drive her crazy and she didn't want that.

She got out of the car with her handbag and locked it. He will call once he is done.

Meanwhile Chris and Hayde found a quiet place with chair and sat down. Silence enveloped the small area as the two masculine males fought with their own thoughts. Their words dying in the tip of their tongues. More awkward silence passed between the two and Hayden rubbed his head. Why he listened to his wife, he had no idea.

Christian was the first one to breach through the silence.

Christian:I'm Christian Davis.

Hayden chuckled. This was awkward as hell. He hasn't felt this nervous ever since the time Masa slapped the hell out of him and insulted him. She could be a fiery little thing if she wanted to be.

Hayden:Hayden Smith.

Christian:Nice to meet you.

They weirdly shook hands and quickly pulled out of the handshake both shaking their heads.

Hayden:This feels slightly-

Christian:awkward. I know.

Hayden rubbed his head before sighing.

Hayden:So how did you find about me.

Christian:Surprisingly Theresa mistakenly said I was you.

Hayden:Well we do look alike.

Christian chuckled.

Christian:That we do. And I followed it up and I was quite marveled that I had a look alike. Not just a doppelganger but someone who is your exact copy. How did you come to know.

Hayden:My mother finally told my wife then she told me.

Christian did see the gold metal on his ring finger.

Christian:I would like to meet this particular woman who separated us at birth, not that my parents are not good people. Really kind

hearted and good civilians.

Hayden almost smiled sadly. At least one of them had a good childhood. His father was gone and his mother was a whole mental case, someone he wished he could erase from the face of the earth.

Hayden: You would like to meet her?

Christian: I think so. Not now though. It's too early and it's a lot to take in.

Hayden sighed and leaned back. He had a brother, it was a bit hard to believe. No wonder he had twins. Masa had been carrying twins before she lost the other one. He didn't exactly make anything out of it but now it made sense. The only sensible person who had the answers to everything was their birth mother.

The two went silent, giving leeway to their individual thoughts. They shouldn't rush this,

everything was new and they've only known about this for a week. That was hardly enough time for one to wrap their mind around the fact that they have a sibling out there.

## At the mall

Masa found herself picking out clothes off the rails. She was just passing by when a cute dress that looked like it had been solely selected for Avery caught her eye. Now thirty minutes later she had a basket full of clothes for the kids. All four of them. She couldn't buy clothes for the baby in her tummy as of yet. She wasn't sure if it was a girl or a boy or if it was even one child. She'll do the shopping maybe when she is in her second trimester.

She stood by the till as the cashier looked at her.

She recognized Masa but didn't show it. She wondered how she handled that Facebook roast. There had been nothing from her or her husband.

Cashier: Shopping bag?

Masa: Yes mam. Thank you.

The cashier looked at her. She had a soft voice and she looked tired. As if something was weighing her down.

Masa paid and the lady handed her the shopping bag.

Masa: Thank you.

She walked out and walked around the mall. Looking aloof before she headed back to the car.

Tessa ended her short walk around the mall and sat by the outside chairs of the restaurant where they had brunch. She ordered a milkshake while waiting for Chris.

Half an hour later she saw him with Hayden. The two men just said a quick word to each other before Hayden walked away and crossed the road. Christian spotted Tessa and sat opposite her.

Christian: It went better than expected.

Tessa smiled she was glad.

Tessa: I'm happy for you. Uhm you once asked me how I knew Hayden right?

Christian nodded.

Tessa: Here goes but don't judge..



In the car

Hayden closed the door and buckled up.

Hayden:It was okay. We'll talk at home hmm..

She nodded yawning and H started the car.

At Cane's house

Cane finally walked to the bedroom he used to share with his wife and he found her playing with Juni. Joy looked up but didn't say a word.

Cane:We can talk..

Joy:Let me put him to sleep.

Cane nodded and walked out.

## At the Smiths

The couple checked on Arielle after giving the kids their clothes.

Hayden:I can't believe you didn't buy me anything.

Masa:Oh calm down.

Hayden shook his head as they went quiet to check up on a sleeping Arielle.

Hayden:It will all be fine with time.

Masa:I hope so.

Hayden:I know so.

.

.

\*

\*

TWO YEARS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*105\*

At the gym

Hayden punched the boxing bag a couple of times. He needed time out from his family and to allow himself to think. Everything was coming together and they were a month away from opening the new hospital. Something he was grateful for. His investors were happy and well his wife had been part of the team with her skills in finance. All in one that one. That house was full and he couldn't believe it was his kids making it full. She had twins again † ♀

Well he blamed his genes for that. Dealing with two crying babies was annoying as hell. He loved the two boys but they cried. Always crying their small lungs out when they were younger and then Hudson was jealous that he wasn't the only baby in the house. Madam dragon lady didn't care, she said he will get used to it just the way his older siblings got used to him being present. He laughed at that. Masa bathong!

Hayden stopped and removed the boxing gloves, placing them in his gym bag. He wasn't yet done with his exercises but he had an idea.

He wiped the sweat with his wet towel before wrapping it around his neck and walking out holding his bag. The ladies at gym silently watching the Adonis walk out. So far yet so

near they mused.

## At the Smiths

Masa smiled as she looked at her afro. She had let it grow the past few months and she was sure she wasn't going to chemically damage it by using relaxer. A month ago was Arielle's very last session. It was the last step and they were praying that she doesn't relapse. They paid lots of money for her stem cell treatment and it was not in the country. Anything for her to get better.

The past few week Arielle was better and that child like glow was slowly coming back. She smiled. The door opened a bit and her 15 month old twins crawled inside. How the hell did they make it up the stairs?

Masa:Bathong!

They giggled and held the wall for stability walking towards her.

Masa:What do you guys want?

She got up from the bed and walked to them, holding their small hands leading them out of the bedroom.

She slowly walked down the stairs with them and found Smith playing video games on the tv.

Masa:Did you do your homework?

Smith Jr:yes. All three of them.

Masa:You have an hour.

Smith Jr:I just started playing mom.

Masa:It's a school week Smith. You know very

well we don't play video games on a school week.

Smith Jr pressed the controller. It's not like he was failing at school or anything.

Avery made her way to the lounge and picked one of the twins pinching his chubby cheeks.

Avery:Hello you..

The child moved his hands over her face and she grinned.

Avery:mom next time have a girl.

Masa's jaw dropped. Just like that? Was this child being serious? Next time have a girl?

The door opened and Hayden walked inside the house. He fist bumped with Smith Jr.

Hayden:Hey champ. When is your match again?

Smith Jr:Saturday.

Hayden:Your mom let you play?

Smith Jr:more or so..

Hayden kissed his wife who was still looking at Avery. Hayden stared at Avery who was holding her baby brother in her arms while the other one clung to Masa's leg. These small human beings were so clingy. The child let go of Masa's leg and walked to Hayden. He was sweaty and he didn't want to pick the child up.

Hayden:What?

Masa:I-uh. Your children.

Hayden:What did she say?

Masa:gatwe next time I should have a girl.

Avery laughed.



Avery:Mom Hudson is a boy, Azriel is a boy and Antony is a boy ao mama.

Hayden:This does not involve me(pulling Masa to him)join me for a quick shower.

Avery walked out holding Antony giving her parents privacy. Azriel followed letting go of Hayden's leg.

Hayden:Hmm..

He wrapped his arms around her waist, knowing very well he was sweaty and that obviously she will join him.

Masa:Smart. Really smart move Smith.

Masa kissed his lips and he prompted her to open her mouth for him.

Hayden:So about that pole you once talked about..

Masa laughed.

Masa:O sex addict wena waitse.

Hayden:You match my passion Sunshine. So the pole..

Masa:We'll see.

Hayden:Ng ng I want to see you work your stuff on that pole Mrs Smith. My personal stripper.

Masa:Mxm.

They walked out with his arms wrapped around her.

They passed Arielle on their way to the bedroom.

Hayden:Hello Princess.

Arielle:mom, dad...

Hudson was walking behind his sister and he looked at his parents.

Hudson:mama..dad.

Hayden looked at Masa.

Masa:What?

Hayden:Nothing...

They both climbed the stairs and once they were safe inside the room. Hayden locked the door and pinned her behind it. His hungry lips found hers as she slipped her hands underneath his vest, feeling his hard muscles and planes.

His hands slipped under the dress. The fact that she wears more dresses and skirts now, making it easy for a quickie here and there.

Hayden:o njesitse waitse..

Masa laughed.

Masa:Se bogale jang sejeso sa teng.

Hayden kissed her again as he pulled down her panties, feeling her shaved pussy.

Hayden:Ka bo o sa shaver..

Masa:Why?

Hayden:I wanted to do it..

Masa:You're weird.

He laughed as he made her wrap her legs around his torso and walked to the bathroom.

At University of Botswana

Christian parked his car outside Tessa's block. She didn't even know he was coming. He knew her history and that didn't sway him.

Meanwhile Tessa panicked inside her room. She was only 21 for crying out loud an- she choked on her own tears.

Her phone rang and she quickly wiped her tears.

Tessa:Hey..

Christian:Are you okay?

Tessa:Yes. Just stressed about school.

She knew he came here sometimes to visit his brother. He wasn't a permanent resident of the country.

Christian:What are you doing now?

Tessa:Studying..

Christian:Can you come outside. I sent someone to bring something.

Tessa:Okay.

She wiped her tears and patted her cheeks. She wore her flip flops and walked out of the dorm in shorts and a crop top. She talked to Chris as she walked down the stairs.

Once she was outside she paused. There was nothing. She looked around and dropped her phone spotting Christian. He walked towards her and she bent down to pick her phone up. Why didn't he tell her he was here?

At Cane's office

Cane looked at Masa's photos with Arielle and the rest of her children with his nephew. So maybe he once thought she was too young. Maybe he was never was ready and watched

her go.

He looked at the calendar. His divorce date was fast approaching and they tried. They did try to work it out but it didn't work. The marriage was over.

.

.

\*

\*

\*FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*106\*

At University of Botswana

Christian held Tessa in his arms as she sobbed. He had no idea why she was crying.

Christian:What's wrong?

She just shook her head sobbing on his chest.

Christian sighed and rubbed her back till her sobs died down.

Christian:Tess?

Tessa broke from his embrace and wiped her tears. She still had a lot to accomplish and she looked at Christian. He would be shattered. She doesn't want to hurt him. She would never hurt him, she found herself when she was with him and he took her for who and what she was. Oh God! Through him she found out that she didn't actually love Hayden. It was an infatuation that led to an obsession that she deserved him because she had the heart of the woman he once loved.



Now Chris. As weird as it was, she saw him for him. She didn't see Hayden but just him.

Christian Davis.

Christian:Tess talk to me..

He pulled her to him and lifted her chin up, looking into her eyes.

Tessa:I-I..this is hard.

Christian:Tess?

Tessa:I'm pregnant..

Christian blinked several times before looking at Tessa who was now pale.

Christian:Say it again..

Tessa:I'm pregnant.

The news whipped through Christian like a cold

wind. He wasn't expecting that. Not at all.  
Tessa's tears gathered in her eyes, he wasn't happy at all.

She took a step back from his embrace as she used her hands to wipe her tears. Christian pulled her back into his embrace and she succumbed to his touch.

Christian:How do you feel about it?

Tessa looked at him with trembling lips.

Tessa:I don't know. I'm still a student, I have three years left to finish school. I-kids weren't part of my immediate future.

Christian nodded still holding her in his steady arms.

Christian:When did you find out?

Tessa>Last night bu-

Christian:Tess?

Tessa:hmm?

Christian:Why do you fear having kids this much?

Tessa:I don't like kids.

Christian:There is more to it than that cupcake..

Tessa:You know I had a heart problem right?

He nodded.

Tessa:What if my kids inherit it and suffer for something I could've prevented them from. Why would I bring a child in the world for them to suffer the same fate I had. I almost died 9 years ago. I withered into nothing and saw how it silently killed my parents that they had to resort to the illest of crimes to save my life, I don't want to bind a child I birthed to that same fate. Genetics play a vital role and I don't want to pass it onto my child...

Christian nodded, he knew genetics so well but it seemed as this little miss had a tendency of

forgetting his occupation and saw herself as the only doctor

Christian had to agree that she had a good point. A splendid one but would it kill her to be optimistic?

Christian: Would having hope and faith be that bad?

Tessa: Science has a very funny way of making that feel as it doesn't exist.

Christian: But while you were ill you had faith, you believed you'll be better one day. Did you not?

That took her back. She had been so optimistic about life that the now her was a weak comparison to her youngest version. Christian saw that flicker in her eyes.

Christian: A chance. A leap of faith?

Tessa thought for a few seconds before he spoke.

Christian:Just this once(kissing her forehead)and more therapy.

Tessa:I don't want therapy.

Christian:Then talk to me..dare believe me that we'll be fine. I have a decent job, I can pay your tuition in case you fail a module.

Tessa managed to laugh softly.

Tessa:Being a surgeon is a decent job?

Christian:Yet you think you're the only doctor. In fact you're yet to get your medical degree.

Tessa:My private tutor.

Christian laughed kissing her.

Christian:A very private one cupcake.

She laughed into his mouth. Should she dare dream and believe that she found her forever and always?

## At the Smiths

Masa was lazily laying on the couch with her babies climbing the couch to join her in her relaxed state. The older siblings were asleep, they had school tomorrow and she had to put Azriel, Antony and Hudson to sleep. Tomorrow was her first day back to work after two years. She had dedicated herself fully to making sure their daughter's health was what she focused on, being a housewife was also nice sometimes. Knowing that a year ago, Hayden started to go back to the office and waiting for him to come home was also nice. Hearing what happened at the office and also everyone telling her about

what made their days interesting. Home schooling Arielle was nice too, they'll let her go back to school next term. So she was going to be stuck here with her younger siblings and the nanny. Her household was really nice if she had to admit that.

Then there is Christian. He had been the best thing to happen in her husband's life, Hayden was less angry in regards to his mother. She still hoped her personally go to Letty's house and forgive her. Life was really too short for one to hold on to anger no matter how justified it was. Therapy did them a whole lot of good and they were their happiest, not letting Ari's sickness dampen the love in the family, they appreciated each other more and their unity was astounding. Her family was okay.

Tessa? Well she was okay, she didn't hold any grudges against her and if she was happy with Christian then it was okay. Everyone deserved a slice of happiness. Life was all about being happy and living it to your best. Even Letty deserved happiness. She should bring it up with Hayden. Let the old lady meet her grandkids.

Her train of thoughts was disturbed by Hayden who came and kissed her.

Masa:Oh hey..

Hayden:We should put these three to sleep.

Masa:We really have six children? Half a dozen?

Hayden:Best believe it. Want more?

Masa:Uh no. Do I look like I want to be in that room again pushing your children out? No sir.

Hayden laughed shaking his head.



An hour later the house was entirely silent and she leaned against him.

Masa:I love y-you(yawning)

Hayden:So do I. Let's get you to bed.

Masa:You're almost thirty.

Hayden laughed.

Hayden:29 wifey.

Masa:Still old.

Hayden rolled his eyes.

Hayden:So let me show you what this old man can still do to you..

He picked her up and she giggled as he walked upstairs to their bedroom.

At Letty's house

She was grateful for Masa's small help here and there. She sent money just so that she can eat and be okay. She last saw Hayden when he had come to introduce his twin brother. She was hoping that the animosity between her and her son had died down. She hadn't expected Christian to visit her whenever he was in town. It was sweet and she learnt to appreciate everything life gave her.

A small smile graced her lips and she laid down on the bed. Every waking day she was grateful since one can never be sure when they are going to take their last breath.

At Joy's new house

Joy looked at the ring on the dresser. Her insecurities had brought her marriage to its knees but she wasn't going to cry over spilt milk. She was going to do better in her next relationship. She learnt valuable lessons and was okay. She wasn't even contesting his wealth or anything.

At Blair's place

Blair watched Masedi sleep peacefully. She was four now and was her happiness. Even though the father was an ass, she was grateful for this small gift and the support she got from her brother and her nephew meant the world even though each had his own family. The party they had arranged for a family was going to be fun. Obviously because she was the organiser. She was fast approaching her forties, only three

years shy from the big forty. She chuckled. How fast time flew.

At Matilda's place

She grinned sending the sms back. Was this it? Unlike her best friend, she had been lucky when it came to love always being too headstrong or just too much as her exes always put it. The time was slowly ticking and honestly this department of knowing your worth was lonely as hell, sometimes she didn't want to be strong all the time though she knew her friend was there but a male companion was often better company. She sighed and sent another text. A goodnight text before she turned to her side and closed her eyes.

At the guesthouse

Tessa laid in Christian's arms. The prospect of being a mother was daunting but she didn't doubt Christian at all. Her head shot up causing Christian to look at her.

Christian:What's wrong?

Tessa:My parents are going to murder me.

Christian:Shit!

Tessa:How will I tell them? Yoh, yoh.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*107\*

At the office

The following morning

Hayden briefed Luna about his schedule in the next month.

Luna: Well I think I can manage to make the booking and everything.

Hayden: Thank you.

Luna nodded and stood up holding her notebook. He should give her a raise for her hard work.

His eyes moved to his laptop and he typed

away. It had even slipped his mind that his wife was back to work, he had been used to not seeing her face in the office but only at home.

The door opened and Masa stuck her head in with a cute smile.

Masa:I hope I'm not disturbing.

Hayden's eyes ran over her outfit. Okay so he left a bit too early while she was in the shower but she didn't have too look this sexy.

Hayden:Not at all. Come in.

Well he had been expecting her to come with food or something but she walked inside holding a file.

Masa:I went throu-

She looked at him.

Masa:Mr Smith?

Hayden:Mrs Smith.

She took a seat and opened the file. She showed it to him.

Masa:This...

Hayden:What?

She stood up pushing back the glasses and stood next to him.

Her finger ran down the figures as her soft scent invaded his sense. He wasn't even listening. What was she wearing under that tight red skirt? He moved his hand with the hope to touch her ass but she swatted his hand.

Masa:I'm serious here. There is a problem..

Hayden:Can you sort it out?



Masa:Well yes, I wanted to run it past you.

Hayden:Now it's solved. Come here.

He pulled her to him and she landed on his lap.

Hayden grinned and kissed her neck.

Masa:We're in the office.

Hayden:Even better(laughing)

At the guesthouse

Christian finally got up. Who would've thought his impulsive trip to Botswana two years ago would've resulted in this? The gods were surely with him and maybe he will ask his brother about the protocol they follow when you've impregnated someone. At the party that was being taking place this weekend. He might bring Tessa along if she does wish to come.

His phone rang and he answered.

Tessa:Okay big guy I was scolded for a whole hour being told about me being school smart and being an idiot out of school(laughing)long story short, they accepted it.

Christian:They had no choice.

Tessa:Mxm! I'm coming over after my lessons. Plus since you're here, there is this particular module that is giving my problems.

Christian:I'm a no nonsense tutor cupcake.

Tessa:Okay daddy sir. Bye!

She hung up and he shook his head with a small smile on his lips.

As the days passed the day of the big party had

finally arrived. Hayden had met up with his brother a few days ago and he asked about the protocol and all that. He was genuinely happy to help. Destiny was working in mysterious ways, Tessa had never been his but was Christian's. He smiled. If everyone was happy he was happy.

Christian:I think I have to go get ready for the party.

Hayden:Don't be late, you know how Blair gets.

Christian:She's a tyrant.

Hayden:Don't let her hear you say that.

They fist bumped and Christian walked away.

Hayden was deep in thought for like ten minutes or so before he stood up and made his way to the car. He had to be somewhere before he went home. Masa was probably getting all

six kids ready. He laughed. How she managed all of them was somewhat mysterious. He couldn't babysit all six of them without the younger ones breaking stuff in the house and the older siblings fighting over who has to watch which show on tv. He was a bad babysitter but Masa made him babysit alone anyway.

At Reginah's old house

Hayden unlocked the door and a sad smile graced his lips.

He walked inside as the memories silently played in his head. Surprisingly he was at peace with what happened. Maybe fate had other plans. These days Masa had him believing in fate and maybe Reginah wasn't his fate or the Forever and Always he had always thought she

was. He had been happy with her and he was at his happiest with Masa, who had appeared while he was with Reginah but he never took notice.

He sighed.

Hayden: Sugar I love you but I guess the chapter closed ten years ago. Thank you for the twins and they are well taken of, everything is falling into place. Rest in eternal peace sugar and for that nudge in the right direction. I would've lost Masa and myself in the process.(smiling)

He closed the door and locked the house, feeling a light breeze wrap itself around him. Fate.

He glanced at the neighbour and he closed his

eyes. He was doing this.

He walked to his mother's house and knocked on the gate. The gate opened and he stepped inside. He walked to the door and knocked. His mother opened the door. She was stunned for a few seconds before moving away to allow Hayden to pass through.

Hayden:I won't be long.

She nodded and closed the door.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*108\*

At Letty's place

Hayden sat down and looked at his mother. It had been ten years, living with the anger and wasn't it perhaps time to let it all go. All of it so that he can be truly happy.

Letty sat down and looked at Hayden. Waiting to hear what venom he will spit on her. She was used to it already and it was something she was sure he enjoyed doing.

Hayden:I forgive you.

She blinked several times. She had not

expected to hear those words. Not in this lifetime.

Hayden:For my own sake. So I can be at peace with myself. I forgive you.

Letty:Thank you. It means so mu-much coming from you.

Hayden nodded. He preceded to stand up and walk to the door. He held the door knob when he turned.

Hayden:There is a family party. It's up to you to show up or not later today.

Letty nodded. He wasn't telling her all the details of the so called party but the gesture meant a lot.

Letty:Thank you.

Hayden nodded and walked out of the house. His chest suddenly felt much more lighter, like a weight had been lifted. He stared up at the sky,



the sun shining bright as ever.

At the Smiths

Twenty minutes later Hayden opened the door as his oldest sat on the couch. They fist bumped.

Hayden:Everyone is done?

Smith Jr:mama is with the twins and Hudson.

Hayden:Alright.

He made his way upstairs to their bedroom for a quick shower.

By the time he was done Masa was laying on the bed.

Hayden:Exhausted.

Masa:I need a shower.

Hayden:I wish I can join you but(shrugging)

Masa:Help me up.

Hayden:No.

She rolled her eyes as she watched him wear his calvin Klein briefs. She had him for a husband? She was one lucky person. She grinned. Oh! What she wouldn't do for that gorgeous looking man in all his had exterior. She got off the bed and walked to the bathroom. She had a good feeling about the party.

Hayden:Masa?

Masa:Yes babe?

Hayden:I invited my mother to the party.

Masa paused in the bathroom.

Masa:You spoke?

Hayden:Yes.

She got out half naked and hugged him.

Masa:How do you feel?

Hayden:Lighter.

Masa:Forgiveness does that. I'm proud of you...(kissing his lips softly)

Hayden:I know you have her number, you can tell her the venue..

Masa:Maybe I'll pick her up. This is a huge step, you have no idea how proud I am.

She kissed him once again before she let go and ran to the bathroom.

Masa:Let me shower and we'll talk.

At Tessa's parents

Tessa waited for Chris to come pick her up. Her parents gave her weird looks. They still couldn't believe she was pregnant and Tessa was getting used to the fact. She will be happy. She told herself over and over again. When the door knock sounded, it came as a relief and she quickly rushed to go open the door. Christian stood in front of her in all his beauty. All clean and shaven in black trousers and a black silk shirt. He kissed her cheek.

Christian:Hey you.

He had come bearing gifts for her parents. To soften them up? Maybe but she opened the door and he walked inside.

Christian:Mr and Mrs Mogorosi

He had a hard time pronouncing her surname and they understood. He placed the bottle of

wine, the flowers and chocolates down on the table as he shook Tessa's father's hand and gave her mother a chaste kiss on the cheek.

Ra Tessa told him to sit down and they literally chased Tessa out of the room.

Minutes later her father was roaring with laughter. All was well. She smiled alone as she came to interrupt the moment.

Tessa: Mom, dad we have to go.

Ra Tessa: Bring her back home Davis.

Christian: Of course sir.

Tessa: I love you guys. Bye.

Christian: Goodnight.

He took Tessa's hand and they walked out. He

kissed her.

Christian:I love you.

Tessa:I love you more than life itself. We should get going..

Christian:Did I tell you how gorgeous you look?

Tessa:Thank you Mr Davis.

Christian smiled. His soon to be Mrs Davis..that sounded about right.

The Smiths left into cars. Hayden was riding with the boys while Masa was with the girls.

Masa:Well before we head to the party, we have to pick up someone.

Avery:Alright. We won't be long akere?

Masa:Nope.

She drove to Letty's house and pressed the

buttons. The gate opened and she walked to the car and drove inside the yard. The gate closed again.

Masa: You guys remain in the car, I'll be back.

She walked out and knocked on the door. Letty opened the door and was surprised to see Masa.

Masa: Hey hey, I came to pick you up.

She took a good look at her daughter in law who was in a simple white dress which had a slit that would have any hot blooded male seeing red. Her legs were gorgeous too.

Masa: Lady you're not dressed?

Letty laughed as Masa got inside the house.

Letty: I wa-was unsure about it.

Masa:Re sure now. Look for a nice outfit. I'm sure we can wait for like 20 minutes.

Letty:We?

Masa:I'm with the girls. They are in the car.

Letty's heart skipped a beat. She was going to meet her grandchildren. At last. She was eternally grateful. She rushed to her room and went through her old clothes looking for a nice dress among the ones she used to buy when she was swimming in money. She hoped she hadn't sold all of her dresses. She found a long sleeved green one and she tried it on. It seemed fine. She paired it with pumps and she looked around for a matching headscarf. She found one and wrapped it around her head. She was okay.

She walked out and Masa was on her phone.



Letty:Done.

Masa looked at her and a smile graced her pink lips.

Masa:This is actually nice. Green looks good on you old lady.

Letty:O tla swaba Masa(laughing)

Masa:We should get going.

They walked out and Letty locked the door.

Masa told her to take the front seat and she got in the driver's seat.

Masa:my babies?

Both:Yes?

Masa:This is uhm..aunty Letty..

She felt like it was Hayden's place to tell the kids that Letty was their grandmother not her.

Masa:Letty meet Arielle and Avery.

Avery:Hii..

Arielle:Hello..

Letty:Hi. Nice to meet you young ladies.

Avery:mama you hear? We're young ladies.

Masa:O re bolaisitse motho yoh yoh.

Avery:I'm a lady mom.

Masa:okay Lady Avery..

Masa's phone rang and she answered.

Masa:Hello.

Letso:Hey, Masa did you receive my invitation?

Masa:Of course I did. We'll be there and congratulations on your wedding sweetheart.

Letso:Thank you so much. Thank you.

Masa:welcome. You deserve a slice of happiness Letso.

Letso didn't know what to say. She was actually genuinely happy for her.

Masa:I've got to go, I'm driving okay? We'll talk.

Letso said her goodbyes and hung up. Masa started the car.

At the venue

Masa arrived almost an hour later and there was quite a number of cars there. The girls got out first and Masa looked at Letty.

Masa:We should get out now.

They stepped out after Masa fixed her makeup and the cool breeze threatened to lift Masa's

white skirt.

Masa:Bathong! Will you be okay or should I introduce you to the people?

Letty:It's okay. You've done so much. Thank you.

Masa hugged her.

Masa:Don't mind them okay? Hayden invited you. You're family ma.

The DJ was on the decks playing some soft music as Masa sought out after Hayden. This was refreshing. Blair outdid herself. It was stellar. Masa passed her parents and she hugged them both and continued in her quest to look for Hayden. She crossed paths with Tessa.

Tessa:Hi..

Masa:Hey. You look good by the way.

Tessa:Thank you. I like the skirt.

Masa grinned.

Masa:Thanks,I'm in a bit if a rush okay?

Tessa nodded and watched Masa walk away. She was kind. She didn't know what had been her vendetta against Masa. Well all was water under the bridge now so what mattered was the future.

Masa finally found Hayden and she wrapped her arms around him.

He was holding a bottle of beer.

Hayden:Hey sweetheart. All went well?

Masa:Yeah.

He kissed her lips with alcohol tinted lips.

Masa:Okay. The DJ needs to up his game we-

She paused when Blair caught everyone's attention

Blair: Hello..welcome to the family part organised by mwah..it's a party but then before we get started I would like us to acknowledge the ones we lost in the past years, wish their souls well. Just for a minute.

Silence filled the area as they closed their eyes. After a minute elapsed Blair smiled. Ine more thing. We have fireworks in place. After all we are unity. United we stand and divided we fall, let this be where the broken relationships are mended. We are one and family is the most important thing. We have been through a lot the past few years but there is also light at the end of the tunnel.

Many agreed and nodded. The Dj played Unity

by AlanxWalker and Sapphire.

Everyone looked up the sky as the fireworks started. A fresh beginning. Everyone has been through a lot. The lyrics said a lot. They are unity. They were family. Masa held Hayden's hand as Arielle found her way to her mother and held her other hand. They beat cancer and they were here, standing.

Once the song ended, the fireworks stopped and they clapped their hands.

Blair: The party and mingling can begin. There is plenty of food for everyone. Enjoy.

Peopel cheered and Hayden kissed Masa's cheeks before going away. People mingled and Arielle left her side to join her siblings. A glass

of wine won't kill her at all. To them Tily was family but she couldn't make it, she had other commitments. She walked to the table and opened the wine bottle, grabbing the mearest glass and pouring wine inside. She took a sip and closed her eyes as the Dj played Summeryomuthi by Blaq Diamond. She bopped her head back and forth.

Masa:"Angaz'mina ngzoyithin lendaba."(singing along)

Tessa interacted with everyone and they all seemed to be nice. She smiled. The playlist was on and she had been waiting for one person to dare open the dancefloor for their outdoor party.

Masa wanted to dance but no one had opened the dance floor.



She placed her wine glass down and looked around. The Dj should change the song and maybe she will grow some balls to dance. Hayden glanced in Masa's direction. She was itching. He could see that. Let's see how long her resolve lasts. Finally the DJ changed the song and played Dj Kuchi&Han-C's Rejection.

Masa walked to Hayden as she picked her wine glass.

You're so irresistible. You make me nervous  
I pretend that I'm not staring but I'm actually  
staring.

The more I hide my feelings, the more I fall for  
you.

The more I deny it, the more I fall in love with  
you.

But I'm afraid of rejection, I'm afraid of rejection.

Ke tshaba go thula,ke tshaba go thula mabota.

Ke tshaba go thula, ke tshaba go thula  
mabota.

At the same time everyone shouted the lyrics to  
this very famous song.

Everyone: Nkare ka mo re kga! kga!

Tladimothwana! Nkare ka mo re kga! Kga!

Tladimothwana!

They laughed singing along as Masa kissed  
Hayden. She remembered that time she had a  
huge crush on him. It had been so childish back  
then but now they were married.

Masa gave him her wine glass. The songs were

on point, she had to dance. She just had to.

Well luckily she wasn't alone dancing as Jerusalem by Master Kg and Nomcebo played.

Out of the blue they were dancing in one accord. Some relatives took out their cameras to take videos and pictures. Cane watched in the background. Masa was happy with what she had, he shouldn't ruin that regardless of the fact that things went sour on his part.

Masa held the skirt as she turned around laughing. Xola Moya wami followed and she smiled. She felt arms wrap around her and smiled leaning into his hard chest.

Tessa laughed at Christian. Her poor man didn't

understand a word of that song.

Tessa placed her hands on his shirt.

Tessa:Well I got used to my African roots, it will take time love.

Christian:I'm lost.

Tessa:Just dance babe..

She said as she kissed his cheeks softly laughing.

And how could the Dj have a playlist without any of Makhadzi's songs? The Dj played Murahu as some people put their pride aside and danced to the song.

Masa:Oh God!(laughing)

Hayden shook his head.

The songs went on and on while some people sat down to eat including the couples. They had put the kids to bed. The little ones were tired and they needed to rest. Now it was an all adult party.

Pink's Raise Your Glass played and they all raised their glasses. Those throwbacks playing slowly, taking some of them down memory lane. The good ol' days. Masa grinned at Hayden as he brought the fork to her lips. The atmosphere had calmed down and it was late but the night was young.

Hayden:Your favourite song is playing.

Masa:Oh gosh..I'm waiting for the part I know.

Hayden:When I raced for fun you would sing it for me in the car. Like a little cheerleader. My biggest cheerleader. Hoping I win(laughing)

Masa:I still am baby boy.

He kissed her hand and she flushed.

Masa: I'm your biggest fan,I'll follow you until  
you love me papa-paparazzi

Baby there is no other superstar, you know that  
I'll be your papa-paparazzi

Promise I'll be kind but I won't stop until that  
boy is mine

She looked into his eyes while singing that part.

At the other side Tessa and Chris got lost in  
conversation. Christian watched her blabber  
away. He was waiting for the right moment  
before he did the things that needed to be done.

Dj:These two songs are for the couples, to slow

dance or gaze into each other's eyes.

The people laughed as he played Jessie Ware's  
Say You Love Me.

The couples saw it fit to slow dance to the  
songs.

Say you love me, to my face  
I'm needing more, than your embrace  
Just say you want, that's all it takes  
Heart's getting torn from your mistakes

Cause I don't wanna fall in love, if you don't want  
to try it

Tessa placed her head on his shoulder as they slow dance. There were more than five couples dancing including Masa and Hayden. Those two shared intimate kisses and jokes in between while gazing into each other's eyes.

As the song reached it's pinnacle, Chris let go of Tessa who was surprised. He went on one knee as the song continued to play and tears blurred her eyes. She covered her mouth as he opened a black box that contained a white gold diamond ring.

Everyone stopped dancing and their attention shifted to the couple.

Christian:Theresa, I've known you for like two years and honestly my heart is getting impatient. I want to wake up by your side everyday, I want to be the one to calm your fears, to celebrate



your success with you. I'm not good with words but I love you Theresa. With every fibre of my being Theresa. I want to be the father of your kids, your biggest supporter, your partner, your friend.

At this point, the tears fell at their own free will.

Christian:When I'm around you, I'm alive. I'm at your feet asking for your hand in marriage. So that I can spend every waking day showering you with the love you need. Love controls everything so will you do me the honours of being my Dr Davis?

Tessa was pale as she extended her slender hand. It was shaking. She never expected this. He slid the ring onto her finger, the cool metal being foreign and the weight of the ring was unfamiliar too.

People clapped their hands as he got up and hugged the love of his love. His forever and always.

He whispered in her ear.

Christian:Till death does us apart Dr Theresa Davis.

She nodded holding onto him tightly.

The Dj played Christina Perri's A Thousand Years.

The newly engaged couple held onto each other. This was beautiful.

Hayden:In the end love conquers all.

Masa:Yes it does.

He held her from behind while dancing along to the slow romantic song.

A thousand years and beyond. Forever and always.

.

.

\*

\*

\*

TEN YEARS LATER

FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*109\*

At Francistown International Airport

Smith Jr removed his headphones as he answered his phone.

Smith:Hello..

Avery:Where are you?

Smith Jr:Chile. Calm down. Just landed. Is the dragon lady home?

Avery:She is asking me why your flight was delayed and ish.

Smith Jr:Ari o kae?(where is Ari)

Avery:Pretending to sleep so she doesn't answer to dragon lady.

Smith Jr:Where is she?

Avery:Uh o dule.(she is out)she passed by while on her lunch break.

Smith Jr:I'm going to dad's office.

Avery:Okay. Any particular reason why she is in

a mood.

Avery:Between me and you, I think we have a sibling on the way.

Smith Jr shuddered.

Smith Jr:Tshek! Don't make me think of our parents uhm..

Avery laughed..

Avery:whatever dude. Bye!

He shook his head as he put his headphones on.  
His dad's office first.

At Hayden's Office

Hayden looked at all the papers on his desk and he was lazy to finish it all up. Smith Jr just said his flight was delayed but didn't tell them when

he is landing. Knowing his mother she was worried. She still treats him like a baby and he hates that but tolerates it because it's his mother.

His office door opened and in walked his photocopy.

Smith Jr threw himself on the couch and grinned.

Smith Jr:Pops.

Hayden:Finally. How was the US?

Smith Jr:Remind me again why I go to school?

Hayden laughed as he stood up to fist bump with him.

Hayden:To take over all of this one day.

He laughed.

Smith jr:So can I borrow your car?

Hayden threw him the keys.

Hayden:Were you at home?

Smith Jr:I just arrived. I know I didn't tell anyone but the fiery lady will understand akere?

Hayden:Yeah...

Smith Jr:You'll find me at home once you knock off.

Hayden:And my car?

Smith Jr:Relax. It will be at home. You can call mom to pick you up(laughing)

He walked out holding the car keys while Hayden shook his head.

Hayden dialed Masa's number.

Masa:Hello?

Hayden:Babe where are you?

Masa:Shopping akere I'm on a lunch break.

Hayden:We'll go back home in the same car.

Masa:What happened to yours?

Hayden:repairments sweetheart.

Masa thought about it.

Masa:Okay.

Hayden:While shopping buy something sexy.

Masa:Will that something sexy fit after two months?

Hayden:Just buy it..

Masa:Fine you sex starved beast.

Hayden>Your moods.

Masa face palmed.

Masa:What are you gonna do about it?



Hayden: Get your little ass here and you'll see.

Masa flushed and hung up without a word.

She glanced at Tessa who was already by the till.

Of course Avery was on babysitting duty. She was a good cousin and older sister.

Tessa: O heditse? (are you done)

Masa: Almost.

Tessa looked at Masa again before she shrunk her eyes.

Tessa: oh God!

Masa: Ska mphaphela! (don't be too forward)

Tessa: No wonder.

Masa: Tla ga o bowa ka taxi Tessa! (You'll go back with a taxi)

Tessa laughed.

Tessa:Empty threats..

Masa shook her head, as she paid for the clothes.

Tessa looked at Masa again and laughed.

Tessa:I was asking myself questions kana waitse.

Masa gave her a death glare and Tessa laughed.

Tessa:So most probably you're uhm-

The shopping bag almost hit her face and she ducked it and ran forward holding her own shopping bag.

Tessa:O di mood gore(you're so moody)

Masa rolled her eyes as she calmly collected herself and held the two shopping bags and her handbag.

Tessa:If you already want to kill me I feel for the

kids.(laughing)

Masa:Tessa!!

Tessa:I'll drive. Breath woman. Breath.

Masa laughed as her heels clicked on the tile, the two ladies walking out of the shop. Why would they hate each other when their husbands were brothers? The past is past.

Tessa's phone rang and she answered it.

Tessa:Hello..

Avery:Hello aunty Tess, we have a little problem.

Tessa glanced at Masa and she spoke in hushed tones with Avery. She hung up and got the car keys from Masa.

Tessa:And you still want to go back to that room again?

Masa groaned as she opened the door and got inside. She had sweetly asked for permission from her husband to tie her tubes or for him to get a vasectomy but no, he had to be big headed.

Masa: Trust me, I do not wish to be in this situation right now.

Tessa: Those hours of labour nna killed me. Those two kids are enough.

Masa: They have some darn crazy genes.

Tessa: Tell me about it, o utlule mothers a re she was a twin but her twin died at birth?

Masa: No wonder we had twins. I hate their genes.

Tessa: Same..goodluck.

Masa laughed.

Masa: Drive, I have to be at work and are you going to the hospital?

Tessa:No..

Masa:Alright. I'm starving.

Tessa leaned back.

Tessa:And you kept quiet till now?

Masa:You were too busy making fun of my current predicament.

Tessa:You guys might as well make a whole soccer team at this rate.

Masa:Yoh yoh!

Tessa:Let's feed the little one growing in your tummy.

On the road

Smith Jr dialed Esmeralda's number.

Smith Jr:Hey..

Esmeralda:Hello..I'm still busy though.

Smith Jr:I'm in town.

She squealed.

Esmeralda:Why didn't you say so? Oh my God!  
You need to tell me about the USA and stuff,  
update me on your semester and all. Wa itse  
gore UB o ha hela and sh-ish...

Smith Jr:I'll call you, o pasitse mme?

Esmeralda melted. His deep voice was  
everything.

Esmeralda:Uhm my CA looks good but the  
results aren't out.

Smith Jr:That 4.5 plus GPA right?

Esmeralda:Yes. I'll call kgantele okay.

Smith Jr:okay. Bye..

He hung up. He grinned. He was definitely  
waiting for that young lady alright. He was sure

his parents will love her. Yikes his dad works with her uncle. He hit the hooter once he arrived at the house and the gate opened.

Home sweet home. He drove inside and stopped the engine before he stepped out with his bags.

He opened the door and he was met with a lot of chatter. Avery and Arielle being the ones maintaining the peace among the underage kids.

Avery:I understand why mom drinks wine every now and then.

Arielle:Same sis. Same.

Smith Jr:Babysitting duty.

Avery:My gu-oh God! You're finally here.

Arielle turned and they stood up and hugged him.

Avery:Welcome back home.

Arielle:It's about time..

After he hugged them both he smiled.

Smith Jr:Any plans?

Avery:We always have plans.

Arielle:We should fill him in now..

Avery:Here is the thing....

.

.

.

\*

\*

\*



# FOREVER&ALWAYS

\*110\*

At the office

Hayden placed his wife on top of the desk before he sat down and placed his hands on her lap. It's been twelve years since they got married and 20 years since they've known each other. They were still growing strong.

Masa:I'm tired and hungry.

Hayden:For dick?

She rolled her eyes.

Masa:No. I don't need that anymore. It got me pregnant at 37 and I hate you for it.

Hayden:You do not.

Masa:Okay I don't hate you but after ten years of peace we'll be dealing with babies.

Hayden:Ah. Always on the negative.

Masa:Your genes are too strong.

Hayden:The Smith genes baby. Besides(rubbing her flat stomach)you'll always be my number one baby.

Masa teared up.

Masa:That's the cutest thing you've said to me today.

Hayden:I love you Mrs Smith.

Masa:I know you do my love. I love you to the moon and to Saturn.

He stood up to kiss her and laid her down on the desk. He laughed when she didn't stop him.

Hayden:I knew you lowkey wanted dick..

Masa:Let's see how you're going to keep up old man.

Hayden:I'm not that old you big baby..

Masa:Who is reaching their forties first?

Youuuuuuu..

Hayden:O hemile Masa.

Masa:Kiss me..(pouting her lips)

Hayden:You're lucky I love you.

Masa:Kiss me tlherra. Kiss kiss...

At the Smith's

Tessa walked inside the house and it seemed as if Avery and Ari had all the kids under control.

Avery:We roped Smith into our elaborate plan.

Smith Jr:As long as mom isn't here for the whole two weeks I'm good.

Tessa laughed.

Tessa: You all know what's to happen lovie. Operation get your parents out of the country for their 12th year anniversary is underway.

Smith Jr: I'm so proud of myself.

Arielle: Utlwang. You just arrived kwaa..

Smith Jr: Still. I'm part of it.

Avery: Ari dad didn't notice you hacked his phone?

Arielle: I wouldn't be damn good at IT if he did.

Avery: O bona wena? O star ausi.

Arielle flipped her hair.

Arielle: I know my love.

Tessa shook her head with a smile.

Avery: So everything will go as planned. Aunt Tess, thank you.

She hugged her.

Avery:And for distracting mom with shopping too..

Tessa:You think I would pass up the opportunity of a free babysitter? No.

Smith Jr:They should babysit more.

Tessa:I hope they behaved.

Arielle:As long as you feed them they behave. There is always a logic behind.

Avery:Tech guru we understand.

Arielle:Uhm everything is set and Luna had dad pay for their accommodation. We don't have such money rona.

Smith Jr:That's why you were asking for money months back.

Avery:Every one of us had to contribute for their flight ticket and gifts and the dinner and the dress and the suit. Even Az and Antony gave me

their coins. Hudson popped in some of his savings. You'll save again bazakes.

Tessa:Your parents are so lucky to have kids like you guys.

Arielle:Thank you aunt Tess..

They all hugged her before she left with Christopher and Darlington. The rest was in the kid's hands now.

At Letty's house

It has been years and Cane was content with his solidarity. He waited for Letty to come back with her tray of tea and scones.

Cane:Thank you.

Letty>Welcome.

These days he was spending time with his former sister in law and she was not the monster she had been years back. Hayden managed to forgive her and she had both sons who cared for her. She was okay once again.

They had tea and scones talking about this and that. Joy had remarried and she was happier than she had ever been. There had been no bad blood between them and Cane had realised that he never did love Masa, he just wanted what Hayden had and it was very selfish of him to want such.

Letty's phone rang.

Letty:Excuse me.

She answered the phone.

Letty:Hello.

Avery:Grandma..

Letty:What do you want?

Avery:Be the babysitter for the next two weeks.  
I mean Christopher and Darlington.

Chris and Darl were Tessa's kids with Christian  
and she adored all her grandchildren now.

Letty:I would be delighted.

Avery:Grams will get Az, Antony and Hudson.

Letty nodded. Fair for the kids not to make their  
grandmother's tired with a full house. She and  
Masa's mom were doing quite well with this  
doting grandmother role.

Letty:But why?

Avery:The parents need time for themselves.  
Scratch that, we stay with the teenager Hudson.



Y'all get the under ten year olds.

Letty laughed.

Letty:Okay. We'll pop in time and again.

Avery:Cool.

"Say hi to the old lady" in the background.

Avery:Smith a re hi. Le America la lona. Bye Grandma. Virtual hugs and kisses.

She hung up and smiled.

At the Smith's

Avery:Bazakes, uncle Christian is taking his wife away too. Our job is done.

Arielle:You're the man.

Avery:I know sis. Trust me on these things.

Smith Jr:Home alone?

Hudson:Yep.

Smith Jr:At least you're a teenager now. Almost 14.

Avery:His height is making me breath through the wound.

Arielle:And people will be like is he your older brother like wha...wait what? I'm older than him.

Hudson laughed as he sat down next to his older brother.

Hudson:Girls will be girls.

Smith Jr:I long told you guys that we'll be unstoppable once he is a bit older.

Arielle:Whatever guys.

They heard the gate open.

Avery:They are here. Act normal or whatever.

The boys watched tv while Arielle sat on the single couch and pressed her phone.

Minutes later the door opened and Masa was holding her laptop bag and handbag while Hayden held the shopping bags.

Masa:Your ca-Smith?

Smith Jr grinned and went to hug his mother.

Masa:Finally. I was getting worried.

He hugged her and spun her around.

Masa:Ngwana o batla go ntiga bathong(this child wants to drop me)(laughing with tears in her eyes)

He put her down on her feet.

Smith Jr:I know you missed me mom.

Masa:Yes. What matters now is that you're home.

Smith Jr:You look beautiful by the way.

Masa:Don't make me cry tlhe.

Smith Jr chuckled. Masa looked at the boy who was holding her. He was so much like his father, he kissed her cheek and let her go.

Hayden:You're making my wife cry..

He said pulling Masa to him. He knew how much she missed all of the kids together in one place. She loved their little bundles of joy too much.

Avery:We got the reunion out of the way akere?

They all laughed as the twins walked to the lounge.

Masa teared up again. All her kids in one room.  
All six of them.

Hayden:Happy babe?

Masa:Very..

Arielle:Mom!

Masa:I'm okay guys..

Avery:We have a surprise for you guys..

Masa:a su-surprise?

Arielle:That was very blunt Ave.

Avery waved her off.

Avery:Smith over here will be the chauffeur so  
head to the bedroom dear parents.

Hayden and Masa suspiciously looked at the  
kids as they started their trek up the stairs.  
When they got there they found clothes on the  
bed.

Hayden:Lucky for you, we had long pushed that pole in the walk in closet.

Masa laughed.

Masa:Clothes? What are you planning wena and your kids?

Hayden:I swear, I know nothing. A quick shower?

Masa:Sure.

At the Davis' house

Christian kissed Tessa's lips as she got on top of him. Five years ago he made the decision to relocate and he can proudly say he doesn't regret it one bit. Dr Davis here on the other hand was taking the kiss to another level.

He broke the kiss and watched her pout. She was cute. Real cute.

Tessa:Why did we stop?

Christian:You're always horny these days.

Tessa:So? Babe..

Christian:Dr D?

Tessa laughed.

Tessa:Well feed Dr D the D..

Christian:You naughty thing..

She laughed and rubbed herself against him as he held her waist.

Christian:Fuuck! Tess..

Tessa:Mmhmm..

He stood up with her legs wrapped around his torso as he headed to the bathroom. He will tell her about the surprise a little later after their session.

At Matilda's place

Tily jumped up and down as she read the results on the pregnancy stick. She was finally pregnant. Finally.

Her husband smiled confused.

Him:And?

His ocean eyes pierced into her hazel browns and she grinned.

Tily:I'm pregnant.

Him:We're expecting a baby?

She nodded and he hugged her.

Him:Now you should stop stressing.

Tily:It finally happened.



Masa had told her not to worry about having a child. It will happen on it's own, she must not rush the process. Now it did. She will call her later on and tell her the news, when she was on the edge of giving up on love that little lady told her to stop thinking about. What's hers will find her and voila she met her wonderful husband when she was volunteering at Doctors Without Borders programme. She was happy now.

At the Smiths

Hayden walked down the stairs with Masa who wore a simple dinner dress. Hugged all the perfect places and it had a slit that showed off her gorgeous legs. What more could he ask for?

Arielle was holding her camera snapping photos.

Masa:Guys what's up? we're all dressed up and we have no idea what's happening?

Avery:Long story short, take time off my people. Le di star akere la itse?

Masa laughed.

Avery:Smith Jr here will chauffeur you guys to and from the restaurant. We saved up just for you to enjoy this night. From all your six children.

Arielle:A volleyball team if you ask me.

Hudson:Agreed.

Azriel:I'll agree just because Hud agreed.

Avery:Yes. The restaurant and the food. All on us. Tell us you love us.

Smith Jr:Say it!

Masa:Guys you didn't have to, I me-mean...

Avery:We love you guys. A whole lot.

All six of them engulfed their parents in a hug.

Avery:mama ke kopa perfume ya gago..(mom can I have your perfume)

They laughed and broke the hug.

Arielle:Don't ruin your makeup dimamzo. Ao ao..

Masa:This is nice..

Arielle glanced at her watch.

Arielle:Time to go guys. It's time.

Smith Jr searched his pockets for his dad's car keys.

Smith Jr:Let's go guys.

Avery:Ba tlerole one last time hoo..

The camera snapped and Masa and Hayden laughed..

They followed Smith Jr out to the car.

He opened the door for both of them and they sat at the back of the car. He got in the driver's seat and he started the car.

Masa:Any other surprises?

Smith Jr:Ask no questions hear no lies.

Masa leaned on Hayden as he rubbed her arm. He didn't know what was going on in these kids' minds.

At the restaurant

Smith Jr parked the car and got out first. He

opened the door for his parents.

Smith Jr:I'll chauffeur you guys back. Enjoy your evening.

The two walked inside the restaurant. It was empty.

Masa:They booked the whole place for us?

Hayden:Wow!

The waiter led them to their table and they sat down as slow music played in the background.

Masa:It feels surreal. They did this for us?

Hayden:Yes.

He held her hand as they ordered. When he offered to pay, apparently the bill had been covered already. Halfway through their dessert they saw a the projector finally being switched

on and a waiter came back with a note on a tray. Hayden opened the note that was accompanied by plane tickets.

"Enjoy your night. Virtual hugs and kisses guys. Your anniversary is coming up and you need a break from us and everyone in general. Happy anniversary our two lovebirds. Your love is inspiring and celebrate it. Signed by your volleyball team. "

Hayden finished reading it as Masa looked at the tickets.

Hayden:Guess what?

Masa:We're going to the desert.

Hayden smiled.

A video started playing as Natalie Taylor's

Surrender played on the video.

Hayden:What the-

Some were videos that had been on his phone. Masa watched the video with teary eyes. From that time when the twins and Ari where small and they were friends.

Masa:I remember..I was like a good friend.

Hayden:Amd when the kids were six you were like get laid when I wanted to fuck you.

Masa laughed wiping her tears. There were videos of the Hudson's scans, when he was a baby, when he grew up, the twins and the time all three of the ladies cut their hair. They didn't forgey the wedding clips. It was beautiful.

Masa was wiping her tears as she watched the video. All these years, when they spent time

together, those Hayden used to take in the morning when she was asleep and her bored self taking useless videos in the morning.

Hayden smiled tearfully. He knew who hacked his phone but this was too beautiful to even scold her. Masa was a crying mess when the video ended with them kissing on their wedding day.

Masa:Th-thi-this is bea-beautiful..

Hayden:Babe come here.

She stood up and sat on his lap as he indicated. He placed her head on his chest.

Masa:12 whole years..oh God!

Hayden:Babe..

He rubbed her back kissing her lips softly as Perfect by Ed Sheeran played in the background.



He made her stand up to waltz to the song. She rested her head on his chest, listening to his steady heartbeat.

Darling just dive right in and follow my lead  
I found a girl beautiful and sweet.  
I never knew you were the someone waiting for me  
Cause we were just kids when we fell in love  
Not knowing what it was  
I will not give you up this time

Darling just kiss me slow, your heart is all I own  
And in your eyes you're holding mine  
Baby I, I'm dancing in the dark  
With you between my arms

Hayden:You're perfect babe.

He pecked her lips and they silently danced, they knew they were in the deep end of the love and if there was another level then surely they have reached it. Hayden held his forever and always in his arms. The one whom he will love till death does them apart. His very own perfection found in a very imperfect human being who was cut just for him. When the song ended, he held her in his arms as she wrapped her arms around his torso. Their life chapter was done and written. It was time for them to move on to yet another decade and age, together, stronger than ever.

Masa:Remember this moment, in the back of your mind.

Hayden:All our memories are forever remembered.

Masa smiled as she kissed him again, they are starting yet another chapter together.

Masa:I had the time of my life fighting and slaying dragons with you.

Hayden:Promise that you'll stand by me forever.

Masa:Forever till death us apart. We are still going to have the time of our live together. To more happy memories my love.

Hayden:To more happier moments and milestones..

They kissed into the night, as it twinkled brighter outside with the full moon out and the constellations illuminating the city.

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*THE END\*\*\*\*

FOREVER&ALWAYS

EPILOGUE

At Dubai

The yellow Jeep coursed through the sand as  
Micasa's Mamela played in the rented car.

Getaway, getaway

Is all I wanna do

A little getaway with you, oh baby yeah

Aung'mamele , aung'mamele, aung'mamele

Lovey wami, lovey wami

Cel'ung,bab isandla Sami

Sihambe, sihambe

They sang along as Hayden held his wife's hand, he lifted it to his lips and kissed her soft hand.

Hayden:I love you.

Masa:I love you more, this is like a second honeymoon.

Hayden: it is(laughing)

Masa:I do hope the kids are okay and they are behaving.

Hayden:Your mother assured me that they are okay.

Masa smiled. They were in an Arab state and they had to do what the Arabs do, it was fun exploring a culture different from theirs and

seeing an oasis and all that. They were solid.  
Forever and Always.

At Paris

Tessa and Christian locked the padlock that had their initials on the bridge that was said to be for couples. They threw the key into the dam and shared a searing kiss.

Tessa:I love this.

Christian:and I love you amour.

Tessa grinned as he wrapped his hands around her now slim waist. Well he had been right, they were expecting another bundle of joy and to think she was laughing at Masa. She hated how fate worked but well they were happy.

Christian:we should walk back.

Tessa:I love you okay?

Christian:My one and only,my lifeline...

Tessa:And I'll never forget years ago when you said you'll love me till eternity.

Christian:And I'll do just that for as long as I walk on this earth.

At Francistown

Smith Jr parked his dad's car a few houses away from where Esmeralda lived.

Esmeralda:Thank you for the picnic. It was really sweet.

Smith Jr:Glad you enjoyed it.

She shyly tucked her hair behind her ear and bit her lip, a gesture her mother usually did when she was with her dad. Smith Jr looked at the

tiny body that was in front of him. Esmeralda looked up and her cheeks went pink as Smith's deft fingers held her chin.

Smith Jr:You're beautiful Es...

He lowered his head as her soft breath hit his cheek. His whole hand held her cheek as he brought his lips down onto her soft lips. She froze. She's never been kissed before and a hot guy like him was kissing her? She relaxed and parted her lips, he was gentle and all that. It felt surreal for her. He broke it and looked into her eyes, his thumb rubbing her lower lip now.

There was something about the way he looked at her.

Esmeralda:wow!

Smith Jr bit down his words. It was too early but he knew he wasn't going to stop seeing her, not anytime soon.



She shyly kissed his cheek and stepped out of the car. She walked away without glancing back and Smith Jr smiled as he drove away.

At the Smiths

The girls were playing monopoly with Hudson when Smith Jr walked in.

Avery:did she like it?

Smith Jr:yes...

Arielle:we'll say thank you, we helped you get the girl...

Smith Jr:you guys are annoying...

Avery:Le sone se sentlenyane mma...itlhela ke mmona mo di status. I'm sure mom and dad don't see your statuses..

Smith Jr:I don't need a lecture so no...

Arielle:she is cute, how old again? 18?

Smith Jr groaned and the girls laughed. Smith joined in on the game as they laughed.

Thank you guys for the wonderful journey and  
God bless